



# My Paranoid Lover

Gwendolyn/Works

## Chapter 1 Break-Up

Tomorrow is my boyfriend Leo's birthday. I flew all the way to surprise him, but ended up surprising myself instead.

Getting off from the plane, I hopped on to the cab I rented. Unfortunately, the cab got into an accident and I ended up having some minor scratches on my arm. The police helped send me to the hospital to get my injuries cleaned and treated. I was about to call my boyfriend when I saw a man and a pregnant lady walking towards my direction.

The lady was obviously 4 to 5 months pregnant.

However, it wasn't the lady who caught my attention.

The man beside the pregnant lady, who is now looking at her with care and love, is my boyfriend Leo.

Seeing how Leo is taking care of her carefully, I'm pretty sure they are in some sort of close relationship.

I walked towards Leo and calmed myself, asking: "What are you doing?"

Leo looked surprised, he must be thinking why I would be here.

The lady looked at me with a smirk, then I suddenly understood what is happening.

"Leo, answer me." My tone was getting harder.

Leo didn't answer me immediately. Instead, he glanced at the woman beside him and pulled me to a side where there's nobody around. I pulled my hand away and screamed: "What is your relationship with that lady? Is it your child inside her?"

His furrowed his brows, eyes filled with guilt.

I have known him for 18 years, I know what he's thinking with just one look.

"Kinsey, I'm sorry."

Leo said these 3 words. These 3 words were like knives cutting my heart.

He felt as if he hasn't hurt me enough and added: "Kinsey, let's break up."

I stepped back a few steps, I couldn't believe what he just said.

Then, I gave him a hard slap across his face. He didn't dodge and instead accepted the slap.

"You.....you!" I couldn't take it anymore and my tears started rushing out my eyes.

We started officially dating 3 months ago, yet the lady is already 5 months pregnant. This means that he confessed to me 3 months ago at the same time knowing he made another woman pregnant 2 months earlier.

It's my fault, I was the foolish one.

He's someone that I love so much. He treated me the best in the 18

years that we know each other, but yet he lied to me, played with my feelings. I couldn't describe the anger that i'm feeling right at this moment. I raised my hand and slapped him again.

Like just now, he didn't dodge.

Instead, that lady walked towards us and slapped me hard.

"Me and Leo were together before you, who gave you the right to slap him? You're the third wheeler."

Is that woman telling me that I'm the relationship wrecker instead?

I covered my face with my hands, Leo was also shocked that this lady slapped me.

"Lia, what are you doing? This is between me and her, go back first!" Leo shouted at the woman.

Lia noticed Leo getting angry and tried to leave, but I pulled her arms, not letting her go and said: "Nobody leaves until this is settled."

"Alright, I have no problem telling Ms Jennie Gomez who's the third wheel here.

Seems like Lia is not an easy woman too.

"Enough! Shut up, Lia." Leo growled at the lady.

"Jennie, I'm sorry, I'll explain everything to you slowly. Which hotel are you staying at, let me send you back."

Leo looked mentally tired. Tired of the 2 women beside him.

"I want you to explain now."

Right now, I'm on the verge of become mad. I'm furious. I stepped forward to hit him again.

Leo didn't move away but Lia stepped in front of him to protect him.

"Ahh!"

The lady screamed.

"Lia! What's wrong?"

"Leo, my stomach hurts, I might be having a miscarriage! LEO! Our child!"

Leo pushed me away hard and I fell onto the floor.

I looked at him. He was very worried about Lia. He carried her up and rushed towards the emergency room with his hands full of blood.

My knee was scratched, but it doesn't hurt like my heart.

The floor was also full of blood. Then I realized what I have done.

Inside the hospital, Leo lay against the wall, smoking his cigarettes.

He has been studying overseas for few years now, I have flown here to visit him a few times yet I didn't notice him taking up smoking.

After a brief explanation I finally understood his relationship with Lia. He attended a gathering with Lia and they had a one night stand. Lia got pregnant but didn't tell him. She waited until she's 3 months pregnant only she told him.

This means, when Leo confessed his feelings to me, he had no idea

this woman was pregnant.

He didn't lie to me, he didn't play with my feelings too.

"Jennie, go back. I'm sorry."

He finished his cigarettes and looked up at me.

He still wants to break up with me, but I don't agree to this. I love him so much!

I can't live without him.

I could hear my voice trembling when I speak: "You.....you can let her keep the child, you can raise the child with her too, I don't mind, I will help you take care of the child too. I can also sacrifice by not giving birth to any child, as long as you marry me, not her. Okay?" I begged, kneeling in front of him.

I have never been so low before.

He knows me well. He knows I've never begged anyone like this.

Leo raised my head with his hands, looking utterly shocked. He wiped my tears away and said: "Jennie, I'm sorry. I don't deserve you to treat me so well! I'm trash!"

"You deserve it, you know how much I love you. You know it better than anyone else in the world. I waited for you for so many years and you finally confessed. I don't want to just give up like that, please, don't leave me!"

My fierceness disappeared and right now I'm just a weak woman, begging him not to leave me.

He pushed me away softly.

I couldn't stand it, I hugged him from the back and buried my face on his back. I cried: " I really don't mind her and the child!"

Yet, Leo still pulled me away: "Even if Lia wasn't pregnant, we still can't be together! Don't forget that we are blood related siblings!"

## Chapter 2 We Meet Again

I just woke up when my mom called me.

My mom said: "Your second eldest brother is getting married next month, apply some leave and come back to help out with the wedding."

He is getting married, and me, his ex-girlfriend, should go back and help? He told me we were somehow blood related, but the truth is, also we are siblings, we are not blood related.

How ironic.

With one hand holding my phone, I used another hand to hit my own head, replying mom with a hoarse voice: "I'm not coming back, I'm busy."

Mom raised her voice after hearing me reject her request. "How can you not come back? Uncle Mason will be upset, plus, your brother Leo treated you so well, if you don't come back for his wedding, he will be very sad."

Mom said my second brother will be upset if I don't go back, I wanted so badly so shout back at her, to tell her that if I go back, both me and Leo will feel uncomfortable.

At night, after work, my colleagues asked me if I'm free to join them for an activity. Since I'm free, I said yes.

When I reached home and started packing, Uncle Chin called me. He is my stepfather.

Uncle Chin said: "Jennie, your eldest brother is working in California, why not you meet him there and fly back home together?"

My eldest brother, Lance Mason, who is also Leo Mason's brother, is the CEO of the Mason's Company. He's one of the most sought after bachelor in the business world.

The thing is, I really don't like this guys, I even hate him. He always look at me with judgmental eyes. He looks down on me and my mother.

My relationship with my stepfather is also very formal. I respect him, he treats me formally.

Since he called to tell me this on purpose, there's no reason for me to reject anymore. "Alright."

The next day, I was brought to the VIP lounge of the airport by Lance's drivers. There were a few people standing in the lounge, only Lance was sitting.

He wore black suit and had his hair combed back. He was reading a sports magazine on the sofa. Although I hate him, I must admit he is very handsome and is born with a noble aura around him.

I think I'm the most unlucky person in the world right now, being forced by my own mother to attend someone's wedding. Someone that I still have feelings for. Plus, I still have to fly in Lance's private plane. What a joke. He's a jerk.

I always try to not see him, the last time I saw him was during New

Year's Eve. If it was few years ago, to avoid any gossips I would still call him 'brother' or 'Mr Mason', but now, I don't even want to call him or greet him, let alone see him. We truly hate each other.

Since this is a mutual feeling, then there's no need to pretend anymore.

Lance took a glance at me and didn't say anything, his eyes were filled with disgust. Then, he continued reading his magazine.

I looked for a place at the corner and sat down, ignoring his arrogant ass. Just when I was about to turn my body around, Lance's female personal assistant was walking by me. I accidentally knocked her and she spilled the coffee.

The coffee spilled onto Lance's chest area and onto his pants. I screamed internally, asking God why the hell am I so unlucky today.

I forced myself to apologize. "Sorry."

I try looking for a tissue for him but he waved his hand and forced out 3 words coldly: "Don't touch me."

"Don't touch me!" This is the only sentence he said to me in 10 years.

I pulled back my hands. I noticed the assistant and him giving each other looks. Hm, something must be going on between them.

The plane landed at the International Airport of Denmark.

The two people who came to pick us up made me really uncomfortable.

Leo, who is the person that I love, and also my second stepbrother, holding on to Lia, who is probably 9 months pregnant now.

I felt a pang of heartache and my tears rolled down my cheeks and onto my phone screen. I quickly wiped away my tears, afraid to let anyone see my weak side.

"Ms Gomez is here too! What a coincidence!" Lia said, raising her voice.

I didn't look up, I kept looking at my phone. I won't allow anyone to see my red eyes.

Lance was obviously angry that I did not greet his sister-in-law politely.

He opened his mouth to speak to me, for the second time in 10 years: "Go sit at the back and stop making problems."

My head remained low staring at my phone. Tears kept rolling down.

I hate myself for being so weak.

I don't even have the courage to take a glance at Leo, I'm afraid to let anyone see my weakness.

Lance saw his only brother in a good mood, smiled and said: "Not bad, little one! Getting married and having a child so much earlier than your older brother! I'm really happy for you, truly."

Leo didn't look very excited. "Brother, make it a simple wedding, I don't like too much problem.

"How can my only brother have a simple wedding? Even if our family agrees, will Lia Sanderson agree? Will her family agree? Plus, you two are a very matching couple. We are all very happy that the person you like is from a good and powerful family too."

Lance's voice was not very loud, but I know he made sure I can hear him.

Everyone in the Mason's family know about me and Leo, i'm pretty sure Lance knew too. Perhaps i'm just being too sensitive.

His words, in fact, did wake me up.

Leo was right, even if Lia was not pregnant with their child, there's no way me and Leo could have continue down the path as a couple. I'm born into a low status yet Leo is the second master of the family, my mother is his father's second wife. Stating my mother as second wife is already a compliment, Uncle Mason didn't even give my mother a name or status. Not even an engagement certificate.

That time, Grandma Mason agreed to let my mother be in the family but on one condition, which is my stepfather can never marry my mother legally. This also means me and my mother has nothing to do with them except for being under their care.

In the Mason's household, the servants call Leo and Lance master and young master, yet they don't call me mistress, they call me Lady Gomez. This makes a huge difference between me and them.

Ever since the beginning, I shouldn't have let myself develop any feelings for Leo, now I have to take all the judgements from them.

I took a piece of tissue from my bag and wiped my tears away. What's the point of crying? Will Leo come back to me?

Of course not.

I was still in my own thought when Lia Sanderson called out my name.

I did not reply her, she called out again: "Jennie, come sit here and let us all talk a little, don't just sit there all by yourself! No fun!"

I looked up at her and rejected: "No it's fine, i'm a little tired, I need some rest alone."

I noticed Lance's eyes staring at me, filled with irony and sarcasm, while Leo still wouldn't look at me.

Then, I heard Lance said: "Lia, there's a difference between masters and servants in the Mason's family, everyone should know where their seats are, to let them know their own status and position."

Lia pretended to be innocent and unaware: "Isn't Jennie considered as a daughter of the Mason's family? She is your sister too right? And also Leo's sister. Why is she a servant?"

Lance glanced at me with the back of his eyes and said: "Since when did the Mason's family adopted a daughter? Lia you must have misunderstood." He said.

"Really" Lia asked.

## Chapter 2 We Meet Again

"That's enough, shut up." Leo said, his tone rising.



## Chapter 3 Fight

I heard their conversation, but I chose to close my eyes and pretend to sleep.

Once we reach the Mason's Mansion, Uncle Mason and his mother, which is Grandma Mason were already standing at the door, welcoming the future daughter in law to the family.

I try to act invisible and wanted to go to my room, this is not my place to be.

My mom pulled my arms and forced me to greet my stepfather and my step-grandma.

"Uncle Mason, Mrs Mason, I'm home."

I can't call her grandma like how Leo and Lance greet her because she doesn't allow me to.

Well, I don't want to call her grandma too.

Uncle Mason smiled at me nicely and said: "You had a long trip, go rest with your mom then!"

Then, I followed my mom into my small room.

Mom held my face in her hands and said: "What have you been doing to yourself? Why are you so thin? And why are your eyes so red, did you cry?"

I pulled her hands away and simply made up an excuse. "Who said I cried? I had too much work the past few days and stayed up late a lot. It'll get better after some rest. Why not you let me have some rest alone?"

Mom patted my head, seeing that I have already laid on my bed: "Sleep then, I'll wake you for meal later."

"Mom, don't wake me for meal, just say I have motion sickness from the plane. I don't feel like eating."

I really don't want to face the Mason's family.

"How can this be? Uncle Mason will be upset."

Mom walked out after saying this, she only cares about Uncle Mason's feelings and never asked about my feelings.

I went for dinner anyways.

Uncle Mason seems happy. Well, his second son is going to marry a lady from a nice family, and she's pregnant, of course he is happy.

He spoke to Lance: "Your younger brother is ahead of you, you need to catch up too, you're already 31."

Lance chuckled softly and said: "It's not easy to find a girl from a nice family background and have mutual feelings."

I scoffed internally, filling up my mouth with rice.

"Leo, take some dishes for Lia, don't just sit there!"

Lance's voice echoed through the spacious dining room.

"Dear, I want some soup, can you please get it for me?" Lia said

softly.

Her words cut deep into my heart.

"Karen, Jennie is not young anymore, right?"

Uncle Mason asked my mom.

My instincts tell me he's going to arrange marriage for me.

"Jennie is already 23 this year, she sure is not a kid anymore. I was thinking if you or Mrs Mason can help find her a suitable partner?"

My mom replied softly.

"The son of the vegetable seller is almost the same age as your Jennie, plus they are born in the same status, very matching. I agree it's time to marry her off. There are two grown men in the house, a grown woman staying together with them is inappropriate."my step-grandma said.

Both she and Lance are the same, they look down on me and my mom.

My mom's face turned ugly. She wanted to let Uncle Mason arrange someone nice for me and yet his mother wants me to marry a vegetable seller's son.

"Grandma, Karen, Jennie is still young. Plus, it's the 21st century now, who likes blind dates? Don't worry too much about her."

Leo took a glimpse at me, helping me.

But I don't need his help.

How depressing, he can marry a rich family's daughter, yet I can only marry someone of low status.

After dinner, everyone of the family sat in the living room, chit-chatting about Lia and Leo's child.

Me and my mom will always be an outsider here, no matter how long we've been in this household.

I went back to my room in the third floor. There's a pure black smartphone at the stairs. I picked it up, wondering whose this is. I was about to had it to one of the servants when one of the older maid shouted at me: "Why is master's phone in your hands?"

I never expected this pure black phone to be Lance's. Seems like it must be custom made to be this dark.

"I found it near the stairs, I didn't know it was his. Here, give it to him then. Bye."

The maid took the phone. Lance appeared and demanded coldly: "Throw the sim card away and crush the phone."

Once again, I laughed sarcastically to myself, does he have to do this? I barely touched the phone.

Haha.....

I must be very filthy to him for him to act like this.

I recalled when he asked his assistant to change my seat at the plane further away from his.

When we had dinner just now, I never ate anything that his spoon touched.

I turned around to go upstairs.

Suddenly, he spoke to me again, the third time: "Have you forgotten which stairs you are supposed to use?"

Their mansion is gigantic, there are 2 sides of stairs.

The right side is for the Mason's family while the left side is for servants.

He's being way too obvious that he hates me. He should tattoo on his face 'I hate Jennie Gomez'.

I stayed at my school's hostel when I was in middle and high school. I tried not to come back home to avoid seeing him. After a long time, I finally realized that I should not see myself as one of the family here.

Today, he reminds me once again that i'm even lower than a servant.

I walked towards him, looking at him straight in the eye for the first time in 10 years and said: "Oops sorry, master, I forgot."

This was my first sentence to him in 10 years.

"Now you know. Hmph!" He scoffed and walked away.

I go down the stairs and use another side.

Leo and Lia's wedding will be held at the mansion, my mom is currently being scolded like a dog by step-grandma.

I hate her, but I can't do anything.

I hide into my own room but the butler came and told me Mrs Mason wanted to see me.

I went out of the house. She saw me and glared at me: "We don't take in useless people. Stop standing around and get up the ladder to decorate!"

There are so many male servants here but she wanted me to climb up.

I don't want to do it but before I could reject, my mom said: "Jennie, you have a petite body, why not you go up and do some stuff, as a little reward for your brother's marriage."

I didn't have breakfast, so I got a little dizzy high up there.

I accidentally stepped into the air and fell down, I was so in shock that I forgot to even scream.

There are marbles and stones beneath me, if I fall down, I might die, but it's not a bad thing. My blood will help decorate Leo's wedding venue.

I didn't fell onto the ground, but yet onto a man's body.

A man screamed.

"LEO! Are you alright?" Lance asked with concern.

Leo saved my life during, he will always be the only one helping me in the family.

Lance grabbed me from Leo and pushed me to the floor.

Mrs Mason noticed her grandson getting injured and slapped me hard across the face. "Useless!"

I held my face in my hands, I can't even cry out.

I was embarrassed like this, yet my mom still apologized to them. Am I wrong? No. I didn't force Leo to help me.

Lance helped bring Leo to his room.

Lia followed behind, worried.

I am also worried about him, I plan to go see him once everyone leaves.

I haven't even reached Leo's room when I felt myself being pulled into another room.

The person who pulled me is Lance Mason. I wonder if he doesn't think that my hands are dirty anymore?

"Jennie Gomez, you better know your own place. If you still have any intentions for Leo, I will not forgive you."

Lance pointed at my forehead and warned.

I looked at him with surprise. How does he know?

"Jennie Gomez, look yourself in the mirror and remember what kind of person suits you."

His words were really harsh and ugly. Although we haven't talked in ten years, I still know how harsh his words can be.

He is very gentleman towards others, just not me.

I was 5 years old when I enter this family. He said my mother is a slut, and i'm a bastard child.

When I was 12 and he was 20, during his birthday, my mom made him a cake to make him happy. Instead of eating it, he threw the cake onto the floor and said: "You successfully made my father like you, now you're trying to make me like you? You're just a free nanny to this family, don't even think about being the lady of the house."

He embarrassed my mom in front of everybody, twelve year old me couldn't take it and picked up a pair of scissors beside me. I rushed towards him wanting to kill him. The adults pulled me away and I only managed to scratch his mid-eyebrows. Until now his scar is still there.

That scar is by me. Of course, I paid the price by getting thrown into jail for half a month. My mom begged and begged Uncle Mason until he let me out.

I nearly blinded him, so there's a reason why he hates me so much.

"Finish speaking?" I asked coldly.

Perhaps my over-calmed posture made him uncomfortable. "Get out!" He shouted.

I turn around to leave.

"Wait!" He suddenly called out.

I ignore him and continue walking.

He rushed towards me angrily and grabbed my shirt. He pulled hard and my shirt tore from the collar down to my waist. My breasts were revealed.

I got really angry, I have been trying to tell myself to bear with it for years, not days, years!

I raised my hand preparing to slap him. This son of a b\*tch, i've been wanting to hit him for so long. I regret not killing him when I had the chance to.

Lance learned martial arts since he was a kid, so he easily defended himself and pushed me onto the floor.

I wanted to fight back but my ripped shirt was hanging lose on my body.

Lance's eyes stared at my breasts.

I shouted: "Shame on you!"

Then, I covered my breasts with my hands.

Lance suddenly kneeled down and pulled my hands that were covering my breasts away. He even ripped my shirt further and stared at my breasts longer.

It was as if he hasn't had enough, he dare touched my red birthmark on my breasts with his thumb.

He used his thumb to massage my birthmark.

I got so angry that I started swearing: "You're a f\*cking pervert Lance Mason! Let go of me!"

I rarely swear, people even think that i'm a polite girl, but he forced me to swear.

Lance hesitated a little and let me go. He looks a little surprised and he took a few steps back.

I redo my bra and used what's left of my shirt to cover up.

The man that I love is getting married and the bride isn't me, this is already more than upset to me.

Yet Lance still embarrassed me like this. This increased my hatred for him.

I entered the Mason's family at 5 and stayed in this house with Lance until 12. 7 years together. He never ceased to torture or verbally abuse me. He put laxative into my drinks, put snakes on my bed.....

After that time when I nearly killed him, I started to live in fear, afraid that he might get his revenge. Thankfully he was flying overseas to study. But nobody expected him to find a gang of gangsters to try to rape me right before he fly off, if not for Leo, I could have been raped.

I got up from the floor and glared a him with daggers in my eyes:"Lance, didn't you say that i'm just a piece os trash? You touched this piece of trash, now you're way lower than me!"

## Chapter 4 Bully

I had a nightmare during the night, in my nightmare there's man, but I couldn't make out his face clearly. He's above me, like an animal trying to rip my shirt off. I'm terrified and kept screaming out for Leo to help me.

The man was heavy, I couldn't even breath properly, my lips were bitten by him and he wouldn't leave my lips alone. The dream is too real, I can really feel the sensation on my lips, and the man's palm is massaging me.

When the man's hand insert went under my night-gown, I realized this is too real to be a dream and woke up in the middle of the night. The moonlight shine through the window and I can see the man's face. He looks a bit like Leo, maybe I just woke up so my thought aren't clear enough, for a split second I thought it was Lance. I hugged the man's neck and kissed him back, my lips mumbling: "Leo, is that you? I know it's you, you can't leave me, right? Leo I love you."

Just when I was kissing him back passionately, second brother stopped kissing and pushed me away. My head banged against the bed and I heard the bedroom door bang shut.

I shouted for him, but Leo never came back in.

He kissed me just like that, out of nowhere and confused me even further.

The next day, mom woke me up for breakfast but I didn't want to face Leo and Lance so I told her that i'm sick and that I need more sleep.

Mom said the same thing again, your uncle Mason will be upset.

To be honest, I really look down on women like my mom. For love, they can put down their pride and ego. But, am I different from my mom in front of Leo?

Tomorrow is Leo's wedding, Lance and Uncle Mason started to discuss about the wedding at the dining table. The Mason's family is a rich and powerful family, of course they have to make sure the wedding goes accordingly and perfectly.

Lia laid on Leo's shoulder, looking cute and innocent. She hurts my eyes.

"Jennie, did you not have a good night sleep last night? Why are your eyes swollen?" Lia asked, pretending to care.

I forced myself to smile and answer her: "I was drawing last night, I slept late."

I was actually crying, I'm hurt that Leo gave up on me.

Mom knew my work is hard, I'm an interior designer, a lot of things are done by me, physically. Even during holiday I still need to draft out designs and designs.

"America is a good country and place to work in, I don't understand why you would fly so far away to work and can't even have proper 3

meals a day. Why not you stay in America to work? What do you think about this, Robert?" My mom asked Uncle Mason.

I immediately understood my mom's intention. Lance is managing the biggest property company in America, and he also owns a famous interior designing company. Mom wanted me to work under the Mason's family so that I might have a chance to get upper-class people and marry someone powerful. She's doing this for me, but her kind of love, is wrong.

Uncle Mason looked at Lance and said: "Lance, Jennie is one of the top achievers in this designing area, I think it's a good idea to let her work in Elegance Interior Designing Enterprise."

Lance hated me, he wouldn't be willing to let me work in his own company, Uncle Mason knew this, but he talked to Lance about it out of formality.

I remained silent, because I knew Lance will confirm reject me and might even try to embarrass me.

"Alright, since Elegance is also hiring new interior designers now, after holiday she can go for interview."

I looked up at Lance, who was sitting opposite of me, with surprise. Since when did he become so kind?

Lance's eyes met mine, his eyes were dark and cold.

"Jennie, thank your brother!"

Mom cried out happily, pulling my arm.

I hesitated for a brief moment and said: "Thanks brother, but I'm fine in my current company, I still don't have plans to change company."

"Jennie, what are you doing?! Your brother's company is globally famous, isn't that way better than your current little company?"

Mom heard what I said and got angry.

"If Jennie doesn't want to go, then don't force her. I know she's been working hard, of course she wouldn't want people to think that she entered a company using relations, don't force her, Karen." Uncle Mason said softly.

I scoffed to myself, seems like not only Lance hates me, Robert Mason doesn't really like my existence too.

I go to other places to work which means he doesn't get to see me a lot, he just doesn't like the fact that my mother gave birth to another man's child.

"Mom, Uncle Mason is right, you should stop worrying about me too much, I'm an adult now....."

I haven't even got the chance to finish my sentence when Lance got up from his seat and left, saying: "Ungrateful woman!"

What?

Tomorrow is Leo Mason's wedding, according to their family tradition, Lia was sent to stay in a luxurious 5-star hotel a night before the wedding.

Tomorrow, the Mason's Family will welcome her to the family from the hotel.

The person that I love most is getting married and I haven't gotten him a gift. Looking at my own reflection in the mirror, millions of insane thoughts crossed my mind. The man I love is marrying someone else, and i'm still a virgin, i'm not willing to lose my virginity to another person.

I think I must be crazy to even imagine giving my virginity to my second brother as a wedding gift.

I sent him a message and asked him to meet me at the spot where he celebrated my birthday with mein secret. I asked him to meet me at Romance Hotel, room 520.

In the same hotel, same room that time when I was 17, we were still innocent step-siblings. Leo treated me well behind his family's back and even saved up his allowance to buy me nice dresses and shoes.

When I was 17, Lance was already 25, he already nearly took over the whole household ad business. He cut off my school fees and my allowances. Uncle Mason chose to close an eye and ignore this.

I'm also a stubborn person. Since he didn't want to pay for me, then so be it. I worked hard to earn my fees and my allowances during my free time. Lance noticed Leo giving me some money and cut part of his allowance too. That time, Leo has already been studying overseas, so needed a lot of money but he still managed to transfer me some.

Why do I love him so much? I guess it's because he's the only one who makes me feel loved and cared for.

I wore a long red dress and sat on the bed in the hotel, waiting for him.

My mom is a very gorgeous woman, but my biological father looks average. I got both of their genes. I can't say that I'm a gorgeous lady but I do think that I am beautiful. After putting on som make-up, I successfully enhanced my features even more.

I looked at my reflection in the mirror and smiled bitterly, such a waste that a young lady like me will never love again.

Reward

400

Comments

50

04:03 

My Paranoid Lover

1.6%



## Chapter 5 Animal

After waiting for a long time, just when I was about to tell myself that Leo isn't coming, someone knocked on the door.

I was so happy that I didn't even look at the person in front of the door and straight away hugged the guy, crying out: "Brother, I knew you would come."

I hugged his fit body tightly.

The man's body was rigid, and I could smell some alcohol.

Wait a minute, this is not how Leo smells like.

I looked up and got the shock of my life: "Lance, why the hell are you here!"

I immediately let go of my hands and pushed him. He held onto my waist, not letting go. He shouted: "Jennie Gomez, what did I warn you? Have you forgotten?"

He just warned me yesterday that I should not seduce Leo Mason.

"Let go, this is non of your business."

I struggled in his arms.

"Hm.....non of my business? I only have one brother, I will not allow anyone to ruin his life!"

So me being with Leo will destroy his life?

"That woman will ruin him, not me! He doesn't love her, he loves me! Me! We should be together!" I screamed at him.

"You ad Leo? Jennie Gomez, I told you to be aware of your own place and status didn't I?"

Lance finished speaking and pulled me into the hotel room with him. Then, he kicked the door shut.

"What do you want? Lance Mason!" His eyes were filled with evilness.

He looked at me like an insane person and said: "Dressed in such a sexy outfit means you want to sleep with a man right? I don't mind satisfying your wishes."

Then, he pushed me onto the bed and came above me.

I was wearing a low-cut red long dress, after struggling, my full breasts threatened to reveal themselves from the tight dress.

Lance tried to pull my dress, seems like he was being serious.

I was really terrified.

"Lance Mason, didn't you say i'm low? Aren't you afraid of making your hands dirty after touching me?"

Lance grabbed my chin and smirked: "Dirty? I can wash my hands. How dare you try to seduce my brother a night before his own wedding? Did your mother teach you how to be a slut? Or are you trying to follow your mother's steps?"

"Don't speak about my mom like that!" I shouted back back,

struggling even more underneath him.

"Why? Am I wrong? Your mother brought you to my family right after my mother died. Now you're here to seduce my only brother. I'm going to teach you a lesson today!"

Lance once again tried to rip my dress apart aggressively.

He's someone who knows martial arts, he can easily control my movements. I can't beat him.

My face turned pale. I have never felt such shame and hurt in my life. The embarrassment was too much.

Lance treated me violently like I'm his enemy. Oh right, we are enemies.

After that night, I experienced the meaning of wanting to die yet being forced to live.

After he had his way with me, I laid on the bed like a ruined puppet doll, the bed was stained with my blood. This proved that I lost my virginity and became a woman. But the men who made me into a woman wasn't Leo, it was Lance! How can I not hate?

"Lance Mason, this is rape!"

My screamed, my voice hoarse and shaking.

Tears were already dried by that time.

Lance was buckling his belt and he froze for a moment and said: "I'm drunk, just take it as I accidentally slept with you after getting drunk, tell me how much money you want!"

Lance explained that he was drunk, this got me speechless. Although I don't know much about men, but I do know that men can't get hard after getting drunk.

"Get out!" I cried out.

Lance put on his shirt and walked out. Then he walked back in and put a cheque on the table. "One million dollars, leave my brother alone."

"Get the hell out!" I said once again, scrunching up the cheque and throwing it on his face.

Lance didn't move. He walked right back to me and grabbed my chin: "Don't try to act like you don't want money, wasn't it your intention to get money from him?"

I must admit, Leo did give me a lot of money, but my intention was just to be with him. It had nothing to do with money. I really love him.

"Hm? Why aren't you saying anything? Woman like you should know your place."

Lance's voice was like a devil. I had goosebumps when I heard him speaking like that.

"Get out! Leave me alone, you filthy animal! I ask myself everyday why didn't I kill you years ago when I could!"

I started to act like an insane woman and picked up the lamp beside the bed. I threw it at Lance but he dodged it.

"I'm going to sue you for raping, I won't let it slide!" I shouted angrily, knowing very well that I really won't have the power to sue him. This is an unfair world. The rich will always be powerful while the lower class ones will never have a chance for fairness.

"Alright, sure! Go ahead! Sue me! Bring my semen samples to the cops and report it to them. I'll see which lawyer firm would be willing to take your case. Oh and remember to ask your mom for advice, see if she supports you to sue me!" Of course Lance wouldn't be scared.

"Lance Mason.....you..... you're bullying! You're a jerk, a bastard!" I'm not someone who likes to swear a lot but he made me so angry that I called him ugly names.

I must have done something so horrible for God to send me here, so I know this man.

Lance leaned forward and grabbed my chin again, glared at me coldly and said: "Yea I'm a jerk, I can bully you, what can you do?"

## Chapter 6 Eat your Meds

Lance finished speaking and looked at me from above, as if he's the king.

.....

The next day, I forced myself to attend Leo's wedding.

He has been avoiding me on purpose these past few days.

Mrs Mason commanded me to do this and that, as if I'm really her servant.

Uncle Mason came over to me and asked me to be Lia's bridesmaid as Lia was short of one.

I immediately rejected him. The love of my life is marrying someone that wasn't me, and yet they still wanted me to be one of the bridesmaid, could they be any worse?

"Uncle Mason, can you ask other ladies? I'm afraid that my status doesn't suit Lia well." I rejected. Uncle Mason didn't seem too happy to hear me rejecting him.

Right at this time, Lance walked over to us and looked at my pale face. He scoffed and said: "Leo treated you the best, now you don't even wanna be his bridesmaid?"

I glared at Lance, I wanted to kill him so badly.

He pretended to be drunk and raped me, I hate him to the moon and back.

"Of course she is willing to be the bridesmaid!" My mom came over too, and helped me agree to this.

"Alright then, I'll let the driver send you to the hotel." Uncle Mason said.

"Great, I'm heading towards the hotel to check up on the guests too, follow my car then!" Lance spoke up.

Everybody knew Lance hated me, even Uncle Mason looked at Lance with confusion after he spoke.

Lance grabbed my hand and pulled me along.

We reached his car and I shrugged his hands way, hard.

"Get in the car!" Lance opened the passenger seat's door for me.

What the hell is happening?

I sat down, knowing very well that I can't do anything right now, I tried to bear with it. Once Leo's wedding is over, I'll fly back to my work place. If possible, I never want to come back here.

Lance entered the car and started the engine. This was my first time sitting in such a luxurious car. The production of this model has been stopped long time ago but Lance paid a huge amount of money to have it customized just for him.

I looked out of the window.

"I didn't use any condoms yesterday, did you take the pills?" Lance

asked out of nowhere.

I recalled everything that happened. It was a total nightmare last night. My mom kept calling me this morning and I lied to her saying that I stayed overnight at a friend's place. I totally forgot to take the pills.

Thankfully Lance's question reminded me about it. Luckily, the critical period wasn't over, I can still take the pill.

I decided to go buy the pills if I come across any pharmacies.

"You didn't, right? If you see any pharmacies later, go get it. You have to eat it."

Lance said casually. He noticed my silenced and continued: "Even if you get pregnant, you have to abort it. My child will not be given birth by a woman like you."

His words were really irritating me, I wanted to talk back but then I gave up. I've been bullied by him for so many years, what's the difference of one more day of bully? Since I'm living tomorrow, I don't care anymore. I'll leave and even if I die out there, it's non of their freaking business.

Perhaps my silenced affected his proud ego, he said to me coldly: "Don't tell me your planning to give birth to my child in secret and try to come back for money."


He wants to bullshit? Sure, let him be. I'm still going to ignore him.

Reward

400

Comments

685

04:03 

My Paranoid Lover

2.5%

## Chapter 7 Jerk

"Do you know why your mother never got pregnant after all these years with my father?" He asked.

Of course I know why. It was because they wouldn't allow a woman like my mom, a woman of low status, to have a child of their 'noble' blood.

"Your mother had a surgery to prevent further pregnancy when she entered the family. You were still young that time, you must not have known then." Lance continued.

I finally had some expressions on my face. I turned around to look at him, he also turned around at the same time. Our eyes met. His eyes were filled with sarcasm and judgments, while my eyes were cold.

He smirked and asked: "What? Can't pretend anymore when I bring your mother up?"

I wanted to say something, but I realized that it would be a waste of saliva. So, I turned my head to the other side and looked at the scenery outside of the car.

Lance suddenly punched the wheel in the middle and the car shook. He's going mad again.

The atmosphere in the car turned ice cold.

"Stop the car!" I said.

"What?" Lance seemed annoyed.

"Pharmacy." I answered shortly. Lance followed my gaze and sure enough, there was a 24-hour pharmacy beside the road.

He stopped the car and I got down. October's morning seemed to be a little too cold. I pulled my jacket tighter around my body and entered the store. Lance seemed worried and followed behind me. Was he worried that I might not get the pills and try to scam him by getting a random vitamin pill?

Well, fool. I would rather be a stone than to be his child's mother.

I spoke to the staff in a low voice: "Can you get me the best morning-after pills?"

I blushed while saying this.

The staff seemed to have met a lot of customers like this and acted really casually. The staff said to me in a soft voice: "Do you want the after or before pills? And also, do you want the 24 hours or 72 hours pill?"

I've never bought pills like this, of course I wouldn't know stuff like this.

I wanted to say 24 hours, but Lance got ahead of me and answered for me: "Take the 24 hours emergency pills."

"Alright, sir."

Perhaps because of Lance's good looking face, the staff treated him way better than they treated me.

The staff handed me the pills and I rushed out of the store. I popped the pills into my mouth and gulped it down together with my saliva.

The pills got stuck in my throat and it was damn bitter. I tried to cough it out but it was stuck, tears started to form in my eyes. Wow, I couldn't believe that I still have tears.

Lance came to me and handed me a bottle of mineral water: "Drink some."

I snatched over the bottle with red eyes and thought, if it wasn't him, would I be here taking this kind of pills?

After I got into the car I got so dizzy that I felt like vomiting. I tried to calm myself until I reached the hotel. I puked a lot out. Since I didn't have breakfast, my puke tasted horribly sour and bitter.

Leo finally spoke to me after a few days of avoiding me: "Jennie, are you okay? Did you eat something dirty?"

He handed me a piece of tissue paper. He's just standing there, being extremely handsome, looking at me puking my head off.

He must be enjoying this scene.

"Leo, Lia's family is here, go greet and welcome them, don't let them think that we are rude." Lance said.

"But Jennie is....."

"Just go, she must have eaten something wrong, no worries." Lance assured him.

Sat on the floor, hands on the toilet bowl and said: "I'm afraid I can't be your bridesmaid anymore."

Leo looked at my sorry eyes and comforted me: "Jennie, don't be like that.....even if I got married, I'm still the second brother that loves you and treats you the best."

## Chapter 8 Go Away

I laughed bitterly.

I heard Leo telling Lance: "Bro, I know you don't like Jennie, we were young but you are a few years older than us, so you knew what happened last time, but I think the issue among our parents' generation should not affect any of us and influence our relationship like that. Brother, I never ask you for anything, but today, I'm getting married and I have a wish from you. I want you to treat Jennie better, can you do that?"

This wasn't the first time Leo told Lance about treating me better, but for the first time, Lance did not scold him back.

"Go meet your bride-to-be. Don't make Lia wait."

Leo left after that, leaving me and Lance in the room. I still felt like puking and didn't care about my image anymore. I kneeled in front of the toilet bowl and puked everything out.

"Are you allergic to the meds?" Lance asked, his voice filled with suspicion.

I didn't want to be in the same room as him, so I said: "I can't be the bridesmaid anymore, you can leave. I'll leave by myself once I'm done."

I started puking again. I guess I really am allergic towards this type of pills.

Out of a sudden, Lance patted my back and said: "Why is this so serious? Do you need to go to the hospital?"

I slapped his hands away and yelled: "Go away and don't touch me!"

I never thought that I would have a chance to speak to Lance like that.

As expected, his face turned ugly and he scoffed: "Ungrateful b\*tch!"

I smirked and laughed coldly: "Ungrateful? You raped me, do I have to thank you for that? You don't know how much I want to kill you right now, Lance Mason!"

My words successfully provoked Lance, he put his hands around my neck and started to choke me. "Rape? You were the one who seduced me to the hotel, you still say I raped you? You are just like your mother, Jennie, a slut."

I vomited to much just now and yet I'm getting choked at the next moment, my tears started forming in my eyes, rolling down my cheeks as I can't breath.

I couldn't scream. Lance is a martial artist, his strength was always enormous, it was obvious he was trying to physically punish and torture me.

I could see my blood shot eyes and pale face from Lance's dark pupils.

I started to lose my energy and consciousness. Perhaps my heart was dead, that's why I stopped struggling and accepted death.



I closed my eyes and thought about my second brother, Leo. My step-brother. I wonder if he would cry for me when I die.

I thought about my father, his smile..... I saw mom, telling me I shouldn't make the Mason's family angry.

Just when I could really feel my life leaving me, Lance suddenly let go of me.

I opened my eyes. I'm alive, yet I wasn't happy. I hugged my head in my arms and knees and started to sob. Lance pulled my hair and lifted my head up from my knee. He smirked evilly and said: "Jennie Gomez, afraid of dying? Then obey me, if not I'll kill you one day. Try me."

Lance left the toilet after that.

I laughed and cried. He thought I'm afraid to die? What he didn't know was how much I wanted to die.

The bride was welcomed home yet I wasn't home yet. My mom kept calling me. She yelled through the phone: "Where the hell are you? The wedding started! You are the bridesmaid! Uncle Mason is not happy, get back here now and apologize."

My mom didn't know what her daughter had been through and wanted me to apologize. Why? Just because I didn't attend as bridesmaid? His eldest son raped me and nearly choked me to death, then who should apologize to me?

The world is unfair.

I looked at the phone and paused, then I said: "Mom, he doesn't love you, leave him, will you?"

There was a long pause from the phone. Mom must have been shocked to hear me say that.

Then, mom spoke up: "Stupid child, what are you saying? Your Uncle Mason loves me, if not he wouldn't bring us to the city. I won't leave the family ever!"

I didn't want to listen any further and said: "Mom, take care of yourself. I will take care of myself too. I will not go back to the family ever again. If you still treat me as your daughter, then don't force me back to that place anymore. Goodbye." I hung up.

I sent a message to Leo: Thank you for your love and care, I will forever be grateful. Happy Wedding.

I deleted and re-typed many times and finally sent it out, tears blurring my vision.

I left the hotel and booked an immediate flight back to my city.

I focused on my work when I reached and never look back.

The only thing that made me happy was when the customers are satisfied with my designs.

"Jennie, there's a VIP guest, you are our top designer. Follow me to the meeting to fight for the project!" My manager, Brian, patted my shoulder and said.

## Chapter 9 On Purpose

I've never seen Brian so happy when we signed some previous huge contact, seems like this was really a huge and expensive project.

In the car, Brian told me that the partner wanted a design for a very big factory office, and it will be a little different from our usual projects. However, this is a very expensive project, we should take it very seriously.

I got nervous a little. "Mr Brian, I'm afraid of messing this up, I've never done any design of this sort. I don't know what to say later."

Brian patted my shoulder and said: "Don't worry, we won't be the one deciding the main theme, they already have a rough idea and the rough sketch, we just need to participate in this project together and we will be rich." He laughed. Brian is a middle-aged man. He is my manager and he treats me really well.

We arrived at our soon to be partner's company. Looking at the huge and luxurious office building, I knew immediately that it wasn't a small company.

The design of the office building seemed oddly familiar.

Brian spoke up: "Of course America's best property company, the Mason's Company, would have such a nice building." He must have seen the look on my face when I saw the building.

Wait a minute, America's best property company? Mason's? God knows I didn't want to have any relations with that family anymore.

I immediately spoke out my feelings to Brian: "Manager, for this factory office project, I don't think I will be able to carry it out perfectly, why not you get some other designers to do this?"

Brian looked at me confusingly: "Jennie, why didn't you tell me when we were at our office? We are here now, we can't back up anymore. Furthermore, no designers of your age is as good as you!"

I wanted to say something to reject Brian but he didn't give me the chance to. The assistant from the Mason's Company saw us and rushed towards us. "Hi, nice to meet you, both are you are from Creative Design right?"

Brian nodded. "Yes, we are from Creative Designs, I'm the manager Brian Simone."

Brian then pointed at me and introduced me. "This is our youngest and best designer, Jennie Gomez. She has a lot of experience and have completed many projects perfectly."

Then, Brian pulled me along with him to the meeting room at 11th floor.

What made me relaxed was that the person I hated most wasn't there. There were a lot of people in the room, some of whom I know, they are all famous designers too.

I'm from Denmark, came to this place, France to work. I wanted to

go to California in America, but too bad Lance is stationed there, his main company is opened in California. Therefore I chose France. Who knew Lance even has a branch in France.....

The Mason's Company sent some of their main designers to us to sign an agreement. They want a local designing company.

Although they already had their main theme figured out and that I won't be able to design much of it, but the Mason's Company is the leading one in this area in US and Europe. Their commission were always enormous.

Therefore, when they announced that they wanted to find a local company for cooperation, every single one of interior designing company went nuts. All of the companies were fighting like mad for this opportunity.

I sat on my seat properly, listening at their discussion. Brian kept doing notes and preparing the points to be discussed later on. He asked me to prepare too, but I didn't know what to say. So my paper was blank.

Brian shoved my shoulder and whispered: "Jen, what are you doing?! Write down your ideas! We are speaking next!"

I looked at him with tired eyes and said: "I told you I've never done anything of this sort, how would I have any ideas now?"

## Chapter 10 Resign

My attitude obviously upset Brian. "Your negative attitude will lead to reduction in salary!"

I nodded my head and said: "Just reduce, I don't have the heart for this project."

I expressed my thought and feelings clearly to Brian already so he couldn't do anything also. I recalled doing a lot of projects previously and my company promised to reward me with a long holiday. I'll just apply for it and go off for a while then!

Brian was sharing his ideas when the door of the meeting room opened. Everyone looked at the door and there he was, Lance Mason, standing at the door in pure black suit, looking devilishly handsome.

Everyone in the meeting room shot him admiring looks.

My fingers pressed into my palm. What a joke. I looked down, trying to avoid him, hoping that he wouldn't notice me too.

From the side of my eyes, I saw him taking his seat, asking for everyone's attention to Brian's discussion.

The meeting ended and Lance was the first to leave. He didn't even look at me once during the entire meeting, which I was happy.

I thought that even if I met him again, we would not talk or have any interactions.

But after a few days, Brian informed me that the Mason's requested for me to join in designing. Plus, they requested for me to be the second person in charge for this. I knew immediately this was Lance's orders.

Was he trying to interact with me? Didn't he hate me a lot? What's he doing now?

I know Lance well enough to predict how cruel he would treat me, of course I know being the second person in charge would allow him more opportunities to torture me.

Brian looked at me excitedly, waiting for my reply, but I let him down by saying: "Sorry, I can't do this project, can you please inform them and let them hire another designer?"

Brian's face immediately turned ugly and threw the whole stack of sketch on the tables, some flying away. "Are you being arrogant that we only have you as top designer in our company?"

I stared at him, my face calm. "Manager, I have not been feeling well these days, this is huge project and. First of all, I don't want to do it, second of all, my body doesn't really give me much choice, it will affect my performance!"

Brian laughed coldly and said: "You are just being arrogant. You have 2 choices. Resign or take this project."

I started my career in this company and even planned to buy a house here in this city just to be able to work here long term. The company also never really treated me badly so it was a good company.

If I resign, then I have to start all over again as a newbie in a new place.

But I really didn't want to participate in this project. Yet I couldn't explain the reason to him.

"Sorry, manager, I can only resign if these are the only options."

I told Brian I knew it was cold of me to behave like that, but I have my own personal reasons that I couldn't tell anyone. Thankfully my contract was a 2 year contract, now I can leave without leaving anything behind.

I thought I wouldn't have any more interactions with Lance Mason because I even resigned due to his project.

Who knew my former office called me and said that the contract I signed wasn't of two years, it was ten years. If I insist resigning, then I have to pay one million dollars for breaching the contract. Problem was I didn't have so much money.

I didn't believe them and went to have a look at the contract. It was clear, black and white, with my fingerprint and signature. But I remembered very clearly that it was 2 years.

## Chapter 11 One Million Dollars

I glared at Brian and asked: "What is going on?"

Brian didn't dare look at me and avoided his gaze. "Jennie, I'm also just a staff, I'm not sure about what happened. The boss told us you have to take this project. If you accept this, our company will earn five-hundred thousand dollars and give you 50 thousand dollars alone as commission. If you leave after that, then we will let you go."

It was supposed to be a 2 year project, now it had become 10 years. I knew immediately who ordered this.

The next day, Brian sent me to the Mason Company branch's office to work. I had to go, I didn't have a million dollars to pay.

Reaching at the Mason's, the assistant brought me up to the 22th floor. She knocked the door and I heard a familiar voice saying: "Enter."

I forced myself to calm my hatred.

The assistant opened the door and I went in.

Sitting in front of the desk was Lance, staring at his computer. He looked up and looked at me up and down. "You still came." He smirked.

I scoffed and said: "You forced me here, of course I'm here."

Lance smiled evilly and said: "Sit."

I sat down. Lance tossed a file in front of me. "Have a look, Creative Designs have already transferred your contract to under Mason's, so if you breach the contract it will be ten times the amount of Creative Designs."

I wasn't surprised. I already predicted this.

"Why aren't you having a look? Don't believe me?"

"Haha....." Lance laughed suddenly. "Jennie, there's nothing impossible here, I can make your life a living hell if I want to."

I gave him a cold glare. "Of course I believe you, you're the all powerful Lance Mason, but....."

I purposely stopped for a brief moment. Lance asked excitedly: "But what?"

I stared right into his eyes and said: "Why don't you just kill me, makes you more comfortable this way."

Lance laughed at my words. His mood suddenly became really good. He stood up and pressed his palms on the table. Then, he bent down towards my face to speak to me with an evil grin. I could smell the expensive red wine from his breath. "What's the fun in killing you so quickly? I should take my sweet time to torture you slowly."

I knew it! He wanted me to be the designer not because he believed in my talent, he wanted to make my life hard.

I wanted a peaceful life, but he just wouldn't let it happen! Since he wanted it, then I will challenge him.

Good thing was, I'm not someone who's afraid to die, so why not try

to make his life harder before I go?

Lance noticed my 'don't give a damn' expression and looked disappointed. "Jennie Gomez, why aren't you terrified?"

What a stupid question.

"Terrified? Of course I am, but even if I am, will you let me go?" I asked.

Lance answered shortly. "No."

I waved my hand casually and said: "What's the point then?"

The following few days were oddly peaceful for me. Lance didn't try to make me suffer whenever he could. He just let his assistant move my office table to next to him in his office.

Between us was a thin piece of glass. I could see him, he could see me too. I noticed him catching a glance of me a few times.

Why the hell was he trying to glimpse at me? I didn't know, but he still wasn't doing anything to me yet.

I focused on my designs and sketch.

Although factory office might look very complicated, but after a few days of trying to get everything clear, I oddly became interested in this project.

Work finishes at 5pm. I stood up to leave, Lance was still there. I left the office building and saw a black car waiting in front of the entrance.

The window rolled down and I could see Lance's face smirking from his seat: "Get in the car!"

I rolled my eyes and asked: "What?"

"Going to the cite."

I knew if I didn't enter the car, he would have millions ways to force me in.

I didn't say anything and went to the back seat. "Sit in the passenger seat." I could sense some annoyance in Lance's voice.

I closed the door and went to the front sit.

I obeyed him, and he said: "Strangely obedient today."

## Chapter 12 Suffer

I buckled my seatbelt and replied to his remarks. "Isn't obedience good? Whoever knows when to obey will be a great man."

Perhaps what I said upset Lance, he looked annoyed. He stepped onto the pedal hard and the car sped up. I was shocked and pressed my hand against my heart, calming myself.

I didn't know if it was because of me overworking these few days, I puked a lot more than usual. I am a person who could get sick and vomit easily, it seemed to be getting worse.

Lance noticed me feeling uncomfortable, instead of slowing down, he sped up even faster. I got even sick and I felt like puking any minute now. "Lance Mason can you slow down, I'm not feeling well."

He looked at me with the side of his eyes, smiling evilly and said: "And what does that have to do with me?"

True, it was none of his business. Lance would be the first one to make sure I suffer.

I tried to make myself forget about the discomfort and promised myself to get a suitable meds tonight.

We reached the cite. Lance got down the car first and I followed behind. There were a few people waiting for our arrival. Wait, not us, Lance.

Lance walked towards them and introduced me to those people. "This is our company's new designer, Jennie Gomez. She will be in charge of the interior design."

A warm and cute looking guy walked up to me and shook my hand. "Hi, nice to meet you Ms Gomez, I'm Lawrence Gray, the main designer in charge here."

Lawrence Gray is a locally famous architecture, I've admire him since I was still in university, I even made him my role model.

I shook his hand and flashed him a warm smile: "Hi Mr Gray, I'm Jennie Gomez, really nice to meet you!"

Lance stared at me and Lawrence's hands and said irritatingly: "Alright, alright, everyone go inside now and explain the next process to me."

We let go of each other's hand and followed Lance into the cite. Lawrence started reporting their next step and their progress to Lance.

Lawrence is really a very professional architecture, I suddenly felt very lucky that I could work with him, I must be able to learn a lot from him, but unfortunately this meant that I would have to see Lance a lot.

We then went to a hotel, I was arranged to sit beside Lance. Although we had many meals together at the same table, I've never sat beside him. This made me uncomfortable.

The designers from his company finally got the chance to dine with their boss, of course they would act very warm and welcoming.



Everybody fought for the chance to pour Lance a glass of wine. Lance took a few sips and pointed at me. "Why are you guys only cheering for me, cheers to the gorgeous lady here, our Ms Gomez." Every designer here was male, they all stood up after hearing Lance spoke and shouted: "Cheers!"

When I started working, I drank a lot to entertain big bosses too, so my alcohol tolerance is considered high enough. However, since I had been feeling sick these days, I rejected and smiled. "Sorry, I have been feeling under the weather these few days, I'll just drink a glass for all of you guys. Thank you!"

I took the glass in front of me and brought it near to my lips. Just before I started drinking, Lance spoke up: "Since you are only drinking a glass, then you should have white wine, not red wine, to entertain us all."

"Yea, right!" the people around me agreed.

"White wine is bad for women's body, I think she shouldn't drink it, Mr Mason." Lawrence helped me say something.

Although Lance's face was still smiling, his eyes were as cold as the tundra. He scoffed and said: "Aye, is our designer Mr Gray interested in our pretty designer?"

## Chapter 13 Kind People

Lawrence blushed and immediately answered back. "No, not at all, I....."

I am not the type of person who likes to owe other people. Lawrence is a very professional and talented architecture, and he was working under Lance, I didn't want him to upset his boss.

"White wine? No problem." I raised the bottle of white wine in front of me and poured it into a new glass. I looked at Lance, as if challenging him and asked: "It this enough?"

Lance grinned and nodded: "Of course, what a strong lady."

I finished the wine in one gulp, it burned my throat down to my stomach I could even felt y tears forming in my eyes. I've never been brave enough to drink white wine last time, I only drank red wine or beer when I need to entertain my clients.

I immediately felt discomfort in my stomach. I turned the glass upside down and asked Lance: "Can I go now?"

My body was shaking.

One of Lance's hand was on the back of my chair, he looked up at me, who was standing. He looked the cocky I wanted to smack him. "Don't you know you have to drink 3 glasses? It's a tradition."

I knew Lance wouldn't just let me go easily.

"Yea, you have to cheers three glasses, or else it means you are looking down on us." The rest of them started to kiss Lance's ass.

I stared at Lance and said: "3 glasses, fine."

I drank the white wine and when I was about to finish the last glass, Lawrence stood up and spoke up: "Mr Mason, why not allow me to drink the last glass for Ms Gomez?"

Lance glanced at me and smirked: "Help her drink? What is your relationship with her?"

Lawrence blushed, looking at me he said: "No, I just felt that this is a little unfair to a lady, Mr Mason."

"Unfair?" Lance raised an eyebrow. "Jennie, am I being unfair to you?"

There's always a few kind people out there. I'm really grateful that Lawrence decided to help me, but I couldn't say that Lance was being unfair to me, or else everyone around was going to suspect my relationship with Lance.

I hated to be involved with Lance.

I stepped away shakily. Lance suddenly tried to grab my hands but I was quicker and dodged him. He was only able to touch my cold fingertips.

I noticed the disappointed look in his face.

I didn't look at him anymore and walked outside shakily. When I entered the rented cab to go home, I saw Lance rushing out of the hotel

in a hurry and asked his assistant: "Where's Jennie?"

He pointed to the car and said: "Ms Gomez is in the cab."

I touched my hurting stomach and told the driver to head to the number one hospital in city.

The first glass of wine already hurt my stomach a lot, the next glass nearly killed me.

I wondered if the white wine burned my stomach too much. My forehead was sweaty and I laid on the seat weakly.

I suddenly felt a little wet down there, must be my menstrual cycle. I asked the driver to stop beside the convenient store so I could get some pads.

But I didn't even had enough strength. Then, there was no then.

When I woke up, I saw a man sitting beside the bed I was on. "You're finally awake, lady."

I realized I was dressed in patient's outfit and immediately knew I was in the hospital.

"You are?"

"I'm the driver, you fainted in my car. I wanted to call your family but your phone was locked." He said.

I knew there were kind people out there but I didn't know I would be so lucky to meet 2 in one day.

"Thank you so much, sir." I thanked him.

The man smiled and said: "Lady, just call me Bear. You are so pretty, thankfully you met me, if you have met other male drivers, I figured they might not have sent you here....."

I smiled and nodded. "Yes, you're right, thanks so much!"

## Chapter 14 Pregnant?!

After a while, the doctor arrived in my room and asked the man named Bear to kindly leave the room for a bit. The female doctor spoke to me in a very cold attitude: "Are you out of your mind? Why did you drink such strong wine when you are already 3 months pregnant?"

I heard the doctor said 3 months pregnant..... wait what? My mind almost exploded. "What?!"

This was impossible, I still had my period nearly 2 months ago, how could I be pregnant for 3 months?

"I say, you are 3 months pregnant, this wine must have more or less affected the fetus inside a little. Please do make an appointment for check up soon!" the doctor said once again.

I was devastated. How could I get pregnant? How? I only had intercourse once and it was me being raped by that bastard Lance. But I took the pills!

"Not married, right? Ladies nowadays never plan carefully and don't love themselves!" the doctor judged me. "I injected you with a serum to make sure the baby is safe. The baby is already 3 months old, think properly if you want to keep it leave it."

God was really kidding me.

The doctor left and the driver came in. He saw my tears and handed me some tissues. "I don't know you, but fate let us meet. When I sent you to the hospital, the doctor told me you nearly lost the child."

I took the tissue from him and said: "Thank you, I have some cash in my purse, take it."

Bear shook his head. "No, it's fine, I don't want cash, I want to tell you something."

"Yes?"

Bear said: "My wife died of illness and left me alone with my son, he's only 2 years old this year. Although we are not rich, but at least I'm happy. My child is very cute, please do consider keeping this child. Babies are really cute."

I smiled and answered: "Thanks for your advice, I will consider."

I touched my still flat stomach. There was a baby forming inside of me. I considered what the driver said but I couldn't keep this child because it was Lance's.

I recalled Lance's words. 'Jennie, you better don't get pregnant and even if you do, you have to abort it.'

No matter what, I couldn't keep this child.

The next day, I made an appointment with the doctor for operation.

Lance's assistant called me the next day, asking me why I took a leave. I said I wasn't feeling well. Then the assistant informed me that Lance allowed me to take a few more days leave to rest because he needed to fly back to America.

## Chapter 14 Pregnant?!

I didn't care about his schedule, but his assistant always acted strangely. Lance's assistant always reported to me about his whereabouts.

## Chapter 15 Abortion

I lied on the surgery bed, legs wide opened while the ice-cold steel tools and machines worked their ways in my body, I could feel myself hearing a baby's cry.

The doctor said, a 3 month old baby already has human form.

When she told me it was done, a single tear rolled down my cheeks.

"You are not any different from just giving birth, remember to take warm bathes instead of cold. Rest for a month, if not you develop a weak body." The doctor informed.

"Thanks, doc." I said.

I rested at home for a few days. Lance's assistant called me and said that he was back and needed me to go back to work. I need to at least rest for 7 day, but yet I had to go back work just after a few days.

And the person who forced me to go back to work is my aborted child's biological father, how ironic.

But I didn't know, could I still stand his bully after this?

Before I went out, I put on some makeup to cover up my pale face.

When I reached the office, Lance's female assistant Wendy pulled my wrist and said in a panic: "Jennie, why are so slow? Boss and the rest of the designers are all waiting for you in the meeting room! Boss is kind of mad right now."

I followed Wendy. When she opened the door, Lance glared at me.

He said to Wendy: "Inform the finance department to deduct Jennie Gomez's salary for this month completely."

All of the designers looked at me with pity in their faces. As designers, we survive on project and monthly salaries, without it, we can't survive.

I stared at Lance and said coldly: "I was sick, I applied leave from your assistant."

After that, I sat down at a place furthest away from Lance and didn't look at him anymore.

"Not happy? Do you think this is your company? Do you think you can come and not come whenever you want and even make all of us wait for you?" Lance was obviously not happy with my attitude and smashed the pen in his hands on the table. The pen bounced back and knocked on my forehead. Ouch.

I massaged my forehead and looked up at him without emotions. I picked up the pen and handed it to him: "I won't be late again, I apologize."

I didn't want everyone in the meeting room to see me as a joke and resorted to apologize to get this over with.

Lance acknowledged my surrender and didn't bully me any further.

The meeting started and Lance reported that the Mason's company was currently slowly transferring to different type of business, therefore

he was prioritized this project very much.

Lawrence was the main designer for this project while I assisted him. This really wasn't my area of profession yet Lance forced me into it. My instincts told me this must be Lance's plan to punish me. He would wait until I do something wrong and throw me into jail. This was how evil he was to me.

The meeting ended after around 45 minutes and everyone left the room. Since Lance's and I were working in the same office, we walked together but I walked behind him, keeping a huge distant between us. I guessed there were a lot of people confused about my relationship with Lance. Why would a small designer like me work in the same office as the boss?

Reaching Lance's office, I continued straight into my place. Lance suddenly stopped me.

I turned around. "Yes, boss?"

Lance nodded and said in a low voice: "Come to side of the office."

I followed him in and I saw Wendy sitting on the table outside, smiling at me. The smile was a little odd.....

Lance sat at the corner of his desk. Without his permission, I dared not sit too. So I stood in front of him.

Lance's eyes travelled up and down my body, making me really uncomfortable.

"My assistant said you were very sick? How serious was it?" Lance asked, while taking out an expensive looking cigar from his drawer.

I nodded and answered his question. "Yes, I was really sick so I rested for a few days."

Lance put the cigar in his lips and gestured me to come over. I went over to him. He pointed at the lighter on the desk and commanded: "Light it up for me."

I picked up the lighter and bent down a little, lighting his cigar for him.

He sucked in a big breath and released the smoke all over on my face. I immediately coughed my life out.

I am born with mild chronic bronchitis, this smoke made me really uncomfortable and sick.

## Chapter 16 Fainted

Lance looked at me coughing like mad, tears forming. He grinned and threw his cigar in the ash tray.

He grabbed my chin and raised my head. "Sick right? You are really pale, what's your sickness?"

I pushed his hands way, holding myself up on the desk and continue coughing. The smell of the smoke really wanted my life.

"I think you just miss someone very badly." Lance sat on his leather chair and put both his legs on the desk, saying.

I ignored him, trying to stand up. Then, I caught a glimpse of the Lay Water Park project file.

Lay Water Park was the biggest project ever in California. The government was preparing for the project, the budget was one hundred million. I estimated that the total share market would be worth one billion dollars.

I didn't dare stare at the project for too long as I was afraid that Lance would notice. I stood up and looked at him. "I was bitten by a dog and went to the hospital to get myself cleaned up and get rid of the virus."

Lance didn't get what I meant and asked with confusion: "You really got bitten by a dog?"

"Yes."

In the afternoon, Lawrence brought me along to the site to have a look. We improved the sketch again and again, since this was a huge project, it needed to be improved many times for it to be perfect.

Lawrence drove his car, but he noticed my pale face and slowed down.

I leaned against the seat, closing my eyes to rest.

"Jennie, can I ask you something?" Lawrence spoke up out of a sudden.

I opened my eyes and smiled at him. "Yes?"

Lawrence hesitated for a brief moment and finally asked: "What's your relationship with boss? Why is he always trying to make your life hard?"

I laughed. "It's not like he does it on purpose, I guess he's just used to it."

Lawrence didn't understand and asked: "What do you mean by he is used to it?"

I sighed. "Are you curious that why a small designer like me would suddenly come to the Mason's and even forced to take part in such a huge project? Plus, my office is just beside Lance Mason's."

Lawrence blushed and nodded. "Yeah, I find it strange, it felt like you and boss knew each other for many years already."

I scoffed. "Wow, you can see that, let's just say we are enemies. It's



hard to explain but just so we are clear, Lance and I are not in any kind of relationship that you are suspicious of."

I didn't want to explain further, so Lawrence didn't ask anymore.

We reached the factory and tried to change the sketch here and there again. We discussed the important things, as first it was Lawrence doing the talking. I didn't want to say much as I wasn't good in this area.

Lawrence encouraged me and I said a little.

After improving a few office rooms of the cite on the sketch, Lawrence complimented me. "Jennie, you are one of the most talented female interior designers I have ever met. Your pick-up skills is genius level! You are smart!"

"Thank you but I'm still not as good as you said." I smiled awkwardly.

We still had some improving to do but I couldn't take it anymore. My vision became black suddenly.

I heard Lawrence's concerned voice calling out for me: "Jennie, Jennie! Are you okay?"

Then I heard Lance's voice yelling at Lawrence: "What happened to her?"

Lawrence said he didn't know.

After that, I couldn't hear anything anymore and went unconscious.

When I woke up, I smelled the disinfectant and medicine. I was in the hospital.

Strange, Lance Mason was sitting beside my bed, his eyes were bloody red, like he was trying to calm his anger. He glared at me angrily as if he wanted to punch me hard on the face.

"Do you know why you fainted?" he asked.

Of course I knew why I fainted. I just underwent an abortion surgery.

"Lance Mason, what are you trying to say?" I didn't even bother to play dumb anymore.

"The child was mine?" he asked straight away.

## Chapter 17 Fallen for you?

"So what? I have already aborted it, so you don't have to worry that I'll use the child to blackmail or threaten you. Aren't I a smart woman, Lance?" I asked.

"Hmph!" he scoffed angrily and punched the side of my pillow. I could feel the impact of his punch.

What he said next cut through my heart deeply. "Smart? Jennie, do you know a three months old baby already has human form? How could you abort it?"

I looked at his angry face and accidentally laughed a little. "Lance Mason, can you please enlighten me as to why you are so mad? I don't understand your point of anger."

I really didn't understand why he was so mad.

He should be happy that I obeyed his instructions and really gave up the child when I got pregnant.

My words seemed to make him speechless. He glared at me for a long time, his fists tight beside his body.

But I was curious.

"Lance Mason, answer me."

Lance glared at me coldly and I could even feel the ice-cold atmosphere freezing my body slowly, mentally. He suddenly laughed and said: "Did you really believe that the child was mine? Who knew if you had sex with some random bastard man?"

He looked down on my face and laughed. "I forgot for a moment that you had such a mother, so I'm pretty sure you didn't know who the real father was too, right?"

Once again, Lance insulted my mom. Even I if I got very mad but I still tried to act calm. I forced myself to smile at him and said: "You're right, boss. I don't even know I did dirty stuff with a human or a dog and got pregnant with what type of creature."

If I die, I would be sent to hell. I killed my child and still insulted him/her like that.

Lance was bad, but I wasn't any better.

My words successfully triggered him, he glared at me with daggers in his eyes, the veins in his forehead threatening to pop out.

He suddenly choked my neck, as if he was trying to destroy me. "A slut will always be a slut!"

I didn't struggle, he didn't put all his strength into choking me so I could still speak. He stare into each other's eyes and I smirked sarcastically. "Lance Mason, are you falling for me? If not I really cannot think of a valid reason why you are acting to strange."

My words made Lance froze for a moment.

Of course I didn't think that he would fall for me, I was pretty sure he would fall for a guy and not me as he hated me since day one.

## Chapter 17 Fallen for you?

Twenty years, not a short time.

It's not possible to make 20 years worth of hate disappear into thin air.

He must have lost his thought for a while due to how funny my words were.

He let go of his hands and scoffed. "Fallen for you? Hahaha..... why don't you look yourself in the mirror? Pathetic."

## Chapter 18 Me? Pathetic?

He said I should see myself in the mirror. Pathetic.

Ever since I stepped into the Mason's family at age 5, Lance has always reminded me to know my place. After so many years, he was still doing the same thing. I was sick of it.

I remembered when I just met them, Lance was 13 and Leo was 8. I listened to my mom and tried to make them like me. Although I was only 5, I knew my mom wanted a better life there so we needed to make all of them like us.

And I only managed to make Leo Mason like me and treat me well.

I thought about why Lance and Leo treated me so differently, and I finally realized why. They are both very different people. Leo is warm and kind and don't act like he's above everyone and look down on the others. On the other hand, Lance and Uncle Mason are the same type of people. They always think that they are above everyone else.

Lance finished insulting me and stood right beside my bed, no intentions of leaving. I didn't get why he didn't leave, he wanted to insult me he did it. He wanted to scold me, yea he did it.

I didn't talk back, was he planning to smack me?

I couldn't stand him being beside me and tried to insult him: "Since you don't like me, why are you not letting live my own goddamn life? I don't understand you. People always say scolding and hitting a person means you care and love them. Am I wrong?"

Lance laughed like ha heard a very funny joke. Except his laughter sounded like the devil lord's laughter.

"Jennie Gomez, who gave you this much confidence? You think such a low person like you would even enter my eyes?"

I stared at his ice cold face and replied him calmly: "Since I can't enter your eyes, then why are you staying here?"

"You....." he didn't know what to say back.

"You think I want to see you? Seeing you makes my eyes dirty!" he scoffed.

"Then leave, don't dirty your eyes." I sighed.

He turned around and walked out the room. He banged the door shut loudly.

I held my stomach and closed my eyes, trying to sleep.

When I was asleep, I could feel someone touching and massaging my stomach but it must be a dream.

I stayed in the hospital for 2 days and went back to work. During lunch time, I could hear some ladies gossiping about Lance.

I didn't have the mood to listen but when they mentioned Lay Water Park project, I instinctively opened up my ears. I heard them saying Lance planned to move to California soon because he wanted to take this project into his hands.

I already knew Lance had been aiming this project when I went back to Denmark to attend Leo's wedding.

But I didn't think about it much as it was none of my business.

Later then, I try to get some news regarding the project when Lance started to bully me again. It's time to do something back.

How many successful businessmen out there are clean and innocent? In order to get huge project, many would try to get on the good side of government's people. Lance was able to make Mason's Company so huge and successful in 7 to 8 years, he must have gotten his hands dirty.

I didn't know what to do exactly, but I just knew I have to wait for the perfect timing.

I was lost in my own thoughts when I heard someone greeted Lance.

I looked up and saw him holding a tray of food in the canteen. Strange, Lance Mason was eating in the staff's canteen.

I ignored him and continued eating my food. He sat down opposite of me. Between us was another table.

In no time, Wendy sat down in front of him. She blocked him from my vision. Good.

I heard Lance said: "Wendy, get me a bowl of soup."

Wendy replied in a sweet voice. "Alright, boss!"

Wendy left again and I saw him again.

I didn't want to see him but it would be awkward for me to change a place, I decided to stop eating, since I didn't have an appetite too.

I picked up my tray and stood up. Lance looked up suddenly and spoke up suddenly. He sounded like he was trying to sound soft and low. "Why? Can't eat when you see me?"

I scoffed and said: "I'm just afraid that I might dirty your eyes, didn't you remind me to look myself in the mirror?"

He rolled his eyes and didn't say anything more.

I walked out the canteen. I heard footsteps following behind me. I turned around and saw Lance, has he finished his meal so quickly?

I walked in front of him, but he was the boss. So I stood beside until he walked pass and into my front. He glanced at me. His eyes were empty.

I waited until he was very far in front of me only started walking.

## Chapter 19 Missing Him

Due to not really eating this afternoon, I got really hungry at around 3pm and even had gastric. I kept touching my stomach. I gave up and rested my head on my desk.

I recalled the time when I accidentally broke Mrs Mason's vase and she made me kneel one whole day on pebbles and stones. I was 15.

I could still remember the pain. My mom didn't dare to do anything and hid in her room, pretending that her daughter wasn't being punished. Leo was the one who saved me. He knew I didn't eat anything that day and cooked a meal for me. Although it wasn't really delicious, but it was the best thing I have ever had.

Thinking about him made me cry. The only person that love me in this world didn't love me anymore. How ironic. How pathetic.

I started to sketch a man cooking in the kitchen on the paper on my desk. My tears wet the paper, perhaps I missed him too much, I should have forgotten about him.

Suddenly, a big hand snatched away my drawing and I yelled: "Give it back!"

Lance's eyes were oddly cold this time. He looked at the drawing and asked: "Are you trying to miss him by looking at this?"

I didn't have the mood to argue with him and tried to snatch the paper out from his hand.

He then tore the paper into pieces. He shot me a glance from the side of his eyes and said: "Know your place, stop daydreaming."

I suddenly felt to tired. Sick of all these. Sick of him constantly reminding me about my status.

I knelt down and collected all the torn paper. "You don't understand, and you will never understand."

"What don't I understand? Enlighten me please." He chuckled casually.

I put all the torn pieces into my bag and stood up, facing him. "You will regret one day, for what you have done."

My words made him laughed hard. "Jennie, what can I possibly regret?"

He stood up from my desk. He's very tall so he looked at me with his head down. "Jennie Gomez, do you know what you are in my hands?"

I stared right back very calmly. "I don't know, but what I do know is that karma is a b\*tch, and you're the devil, you will get it one day."

My insults and curse provoked him. With a wave, he smashed everything from my desk onto the floor and pushed me onto the desk. Then, he came above me. His put his hands under my skirt. "I'm the devil aren't I? then let's make me the real devil, shall we?"

I panicked: "What are you doing? Are you insane we are in office!"

Lance didn't care. "So what? I forgot to tell you that we have a HD

CCTV installed in this office, why not live stream it? You have such a sexy body, what a waste not to record it."

His hands were already halfway into my skirt.

I struggled in a panic and yelled: "Lance Mason! You're not human!"

"Since I'm not human, then I should do something inhuman, right? My dear sister."

This was the first time he called me his sister. Although we are not blood related at all, but I still couldn't stand the sound of it.

I just did an abortion surgery not even a month ago, if he do me now, I would most probably die.

I stared at his behavior with wide eyes.

"If I die now, will you go to jail?" I asked suddenly, he stopped touching me.

He smirked. "Are you threatening me? Do you think I'll be afraid?"

I laughed bitterly and replied. "Of course not, you have money."

Then I closed my eyes and added: "Do it then."

## Chapter 20 Again

He didn't continue, he patted my face and said: "I know you just underwent surgery. I don't want a bloody mess in the middle of it. I was just trying to scare you, you coward."

He let go of me and even helped me tidied up my attire.

He carried me off from the desk and put me on the chair. I internally sighed in relief. I was really scared for a moment there.

Lance sat on my desk and stared at me for a long time. Out of nowhere, he caressed my face gently. Wait, why did I think he was gentle?

I must be crazy.

"Jennie, do you hate me?" he asked.

I looked up at him. "You're asking me stupid question."

He nodded his head. "True, stupid question indeed. But what am I supposed to do? I felt like you are a very interesting toy for me, very interesting. Do you know what scares people like me the most?"

Wow, was he trying to chat with me?

But it didn't mean I was in the mood to chat with him. "People like you are most scared of going to hell."

His happy face turned into a scowl. He growled: "A cruel woman like you who could kill a 3 months old baby should go to hell, not me."

"Maybe." I answered.

He stared at my pale face and didn't say anything for a while. Then he asked: "Do you regret not using the baby to ask money from me?"

I laughed out loud and answered him. "Sorry, no. I don't do this kind of stuff. Plus, the child would be an illegitimate child with no love and care, just like me. So no, I don't regret my choices."

"You didn't even give birth to the child, how would you know it would be a tragedy? If the child is mine, even if illegitimate, you would not think twice to keep this child!" he yelled. He must have been waiting to explode on me.

What the hell?

I thought for a moment and asked: "Regarding my abortion, you seem to be over-reacting a little, aren't you?"

"That was my..... you think too much, my child doesn't deserve to be given birth by woman like you." He threw these words onto me harshly.

"I know, that's why I aborted it." Compared to his anger, I was pretty calm.

Perhaps I really didn't care about that child.

He asked: "Why did you wait until 3 months? What did you plan to do?"

"I had no intentions. That day, I drank the white wine and my



stomach got really pain. A driver was kind enough to send me to the hospital when I fainted in his car. It was at that time that I know that I was 3 months pregnant. I made an appointment next day and didn't hesitate to abort the child because it was yours and the child can only die."

I stared at Lance's face turning uglier and uglier. I guess my assumptions must be at least correct a little.

## Chapter 21 Mutual Enemy

Lance's face turned really ugly, he must have not expected me to be that harsh.

I stared at me hard and left me alone in the office. I sighed in relief.

My stomach was growling in hunger. I didn't have mood to work anymore and went to the KFC store opposite of the office. I bought a burger and sat there eating alone.

I swiped my Instagram while eating, I don't really use Facebook much. I use it to contact my friends only. As for work, I use WhatsApp to contact my clients.

Facebook sent me a notification telling me that it was my birthday. Oh right, my birthday, the 17th.

Leo used to wish me birthday or even fly back in secret and celebrate it with me. Now he's already someone else's husband. Nobody would call me and say: "Happy Birthday, Jennie Gomez." Anymore.

There's no point celebrating birthday alone, plus I was never an extrovert so I didn't have many friends. The naïve little me used to think that having Leo was enough.

Now Leo didn't want me anymore. I realized how lonely it was.

Finishing the burger off, I went back to office. After the incident in the office just now, I didn't have the mood to continue working anymore. I cleaned my desk and informed Wendy that I was feeling sick so I needed to go home.

Wendy looked at me with sorry eyes and said: "Jennie, I can't decide for you, you need to talk to boss."

It was actually only 30 minutes to the end of office hours, but perhaps I just remembered that it was my birthday and decided to go home earlier. I planned to buy a small cake by the road side and celebrate it myself. Since no one love me, I should love myself right?

I knocked on Lance's office door. "Come in."

I pushed the door open and he looked at me from his desk. "Yes?"

"Boss, I'm not feeling well, can I leave early?"

He didn't answer me immediately, he looked at his watch and said: "Only 30 minutes left, what's the rush?"

"Boss, I'm not feeling well." I said once again.

Lance stood up and wore his coat. "Follow me."

"I really am sick." I said, again.

Perhaps I repeated twice, he seemed annoyed. "I'm not deaf you know. Who's the boss now?"

He walked to me and said: "Let's go!"

We left the office and I entered his car.

"This is the route to the cite." I said.

"Did I say we are going there?" he asked back.

"Then where are you bringing me?" I asked.

"You'll see." Lance answered.

Since he didn't want to tell me, then I stopped asking. He asked me in the afternoon, what he is most afraid of. Of course I know. People like him are most afraid of getting bored and have nothing to do. He said I was his most interesting toy.

He treated me like his personal toy.

"You're calm, are you not afraid that I'm going to sell you?" he took a glance at me.

I smiled. "Impossible. I'm not worth a lot."

"Well, you seem to know yourself a lot." He smirked.

I sighed and said: "Yea, I know my status and my place." I sounded sad.

Lance didn't say anything after that.

He stopped his car at a luxurious clothing store. "What?" I asked in confusion.

## Chapter 22 Niklaus Sands

He parked his car properly and got down the car. He walked to my side and looked at me. "There is ball tonight at a hotel. I need to get you some nice outfits, your current outfit will embarrass me."

We entered the store and Lance waved for the staff there. "Dress her up."

The 2 female staffs pulled me away and chose a black evening gown for me. The back of the gown was very revealing and it was a very sexy dress. My body has always been in good shape so this gown would fit me perfectly, I guess. They picked a pair of heels for me too.

Then, a male makeup artist approached me and started putting makeup of my face. I was a little flustered and awkward. I wasn't used to people touching my face.

Lance sat on the sofa beside, staring at me, not saying a word. What's there to see?

"Your store doesn't have a female makeup artist?" he asked suddenly.

The male makeup artist was shocked, he must have thought that Lance was judging his skills. The staffs smiled awkwardly and said: "He's our best artist here."

Lance furrowed his brows and said: "Change to a female."

I waved my hands and said: "It's fine, I'll do my own makeup."

I'm a lady who likes to stay pretty, of course I would know how to put on my own makeup.

"Why didn't you say anything just now, since you know makeup and still allowed a man to touch you? Don't you know how revealing your gown is? He could literally see anything from the back!"

Lance mumbled out of nowhere. I stared at him in shock. A thought crossed my mind but I told myself to stop, it was a stupid thought.

I put on sheer makeup and tied my hair into an elegant bun, with a little bit of side hair falling beside my face, making me look very elegant.

In the gown and makeup, I look stunning. I turned around and asked Lance: "How do I look?"

He seemed to be lost in his own thoughts, staring at me he said: "Not bad."

When Lance swiped his credit card, I caught a glimpse of the price. My jaw nearly dropped, it was almost twenty thousand dollars, but I should have known, the brand was Versace.

Getting in his car, I noticed Lance throwing me glances every now and then. Although I was leaning towards the window, pretending to look outside, I still noticed but I didn't confront him.

Seems like Lance wasn't as different as any other men.

Arriving at the ball, everyone came up to Lance when they noticed him. They were all trying to welcome him and greet him.

"Mr Mason came all the way to attend to ball, I apologize if this doesn't meet your standard!" the one who said this was a man in a maroon coloured suit. he was tall, and had a very nice body structure. Although he was a man, he was very pretty.

Although he looked feminine, he didn't give off the feminine vibe.

"After so many years, Mr Sands looked even more beautiful! My heart nearly skipped a beat." Lance shook the man's hand and joked. The people around laughed at his joke.

The guy named Mr Sands stared at me up and down and said: "Not as beautiful as this young lady here, introduce her, Lance."

Lance let go of his hands and pointed at me: "Just a partner."

"Oh? Partner?" Mr Sands emphasized 'partner' long enough.

Everyone around us immediately thought I was 'that kind' of partner. Lance put me in an ugly spot.

I heard Mr Sands said: "Lucky you to have such a gorgeous partner."

"Just a woman, no such thing as lucky or not lucky." Lance said casually.

The people who attended this ball were all upper class people. People who were rich and powerful, even nobles.

From the guests' conversations, I heard that this ball was the biggest ball of the year, organized to welcome Mr Sands back from the States. He finished his PhD studies and was only 26 this year. His family owns the one of the biggest property company in this place.

The Sand's Family is the Mason's biggest rival in the project for the Lay Water Park. I thought it's time for me to get to know Mr Sands.

## Chapter 23 Winter's Night

I walked over to him with a glass of cocktail in my hands. I touched his elbow slightly and said: "Evening, Mr Sands. I'm Jennie Gomez, you can call me Jennie."

Mr Sands glanced at Leo, who was in the middle of the crowd and said: "You have string taste, Ms Gomez."

Of course I knew what he meant. Since I have decided on this pat, I should be able to take insults and embarrassments, no matter physically or verbally.

"Mr Sands, if you don't mind, can I know your name? I'm interested in being a friend." I flashed him a very nice smile.

"Niklaus, Niklaus Sands." He said.

"Nice name." I complimented.

I put out my hands: "Hope we can be friends one day."

Niklaus didn't shake my hands and instead he pretended to be confused and asked: "You are Lance's, do you think we can be friends?"

I smirked and said: "I think we can, because we have mutual enemy." I took his hands and shook it. He immediately got what I meant. I added: "I, for one, would love to be an acquaintance of yours, Niklaus Sands, but I'm not sure if you're kind enough to allow me on to your boat?"

Niklaus nodded and said: "I'm just like Ms Gomez, I like to get to know new friends."

We let go of each other's hand and I saw Lance getting out of the crowd. He approached me with an annoyed face and said: "What did you say to Niklaus?"

I shrugged my shoulder and chuckled: "Nothing much, he was just complimenting how pretty I look in the gown. He said you are a lucky man, and I explained to him that I'm not your woman, just your worker, but he didn't believe me. Too bad."

Lance heard my explanation and his face turned into a scowl. "why did you have to talk to him? Saw a rich guy and became active again?"

I didn't want to explain myself and said: "Yea, I lost a rich guy once, now I'm trying to get a new one. I need to get married one day too, right?"

"Married? With your status you wanna marry into a rich family? Are you dreaming?" he said harshly.

"for once, can you not look down on me, what if one day I end up marrying a rich guy?" I said.

He scoffed and said nothing else.

On our way home, Lance seemed to be getting angrier and angrier. He chased me out of the car in the middle of the road and told me to go home myself. It was near 12pm in the winter night, how dare he asked a lady to get out of the car in the middle of nowhere!

"It's late, dangerous for a woman like me." I tried to explain.

"Do you think I care? Do you want me to throw you out?" he yelled.

"Do you think I'll be able to call a cab at this hour?" I argued.

"Since you were trying to seduce young man back there, go! Ask them to drop you home." He yelled back.

I didn't want to argue further and I got down the car. He drove off and left me alone. I didn't know who to call so I dialled Lawrence's number. He was asleep, I shyly asked him to come pick me up. He asked me to stay right there and don't move until he arrives.

When he arrived, I got into the car. I figured he must have noticed my evening gown and asked: "Jennie where did you go?"

"I attended a ball with Lance. I didn't know what I did or said to make him so angry and threw me out of the car."

Lawrence heard my story and looked mad. He punched the wheel and asked: "How could boss act this way? Doesn't he know how dangerous this is?"

I smiled bitterly. "he must have wanted me to be in danger."

My words shocked Lawrence. "Jennie, what is your relationship with him? He was never so cruel to any of the workers! He is a gentleman at work."

I didn't know how to explain our 20 year history to him. "nothing, I guess we are born to be like this."

Lawrence sent me home, I wanted to invite him up to my place to celebrate my last few minutes of birthday but then I didn't invite him. I didn't want to put him in danger, Lance's danger.

Before he left, he patted on my shoulder and said: "Jennie, if you ever need anything, I'm just a call away, alright?"

I was touched, I nodded and smiled.

I entered my condo and my phone rang. It was mom. I was so happy that she finally remembered my birthday.

I cried out happily: "Mom!"

Mom cried on the other side of the phone: "Jennie, Uncle Mason dumped me, he has a new woman out there!"

## Chapter 24 Stranger's Message

I thought my mom called to wish me birthday, but no she didn't. I was a little disappointed. But I not too upset, she had been infatuated with Uncle Mason since 20 years ago.

My mom used to be a very gorgeous woman when she was young, but even now, near 50 years old, she still looked stunning, but she's getting older. For a man like Uncle Mason, rich and not even 60 yet, I knew one day like this would come. He must have gotten sick of my mom and wanted a new younger lady.

I didn't know what to say to mom.

Mom got a little annoyed at my silence and asked: "Jennie, did you hear me? What should I do?"

I sighed and answered: "Yes, but what are you going to do?"

Mom started crying like a child. I was speechless. "Mom, since he wants another woman, leave him!"

She cried even harder at my words. "I can't leave him like that!"

"Mom, you said it yourself, he has a new woman out there? What's the point of staying? You want to wait until they chase you out?" I tried to reason with her.

She continued sobbing. "Your Uncle Mason, he..... he chased me out already, he wants to marry that little b\*tch!"

I told mom to leave the Mason's and come stay with me, but she cried and said no, she couldn't live without him.

"Then tell me how I can help. Stop crying and stop being so naïve. You are going to be 50 soon, you should stop all your naïve thoughts." I sighed. I really didn't know what to do. My mom was acting like a child.

I didn't want to burst my mom's bubble but she needed to be clear about the situation.

Perhaps my attitude angered her, she suddenly yelled like a mad woman: "Jennie, is this how you speak to your mother? If not for me, do you think you could live a life as luxurious as you have? You were treated like a young mistress!"

Young mistress? I nearly scoffed out loud.

If she wasn't my mom, I would have hung her up.

"Mom, I was clear enough. I can't do anything for you. You can only come stay with me and I'll take care of you." I sighed once again, hoping that mom would understand.

Mom got even more triggered and screamed: "If you don't help me stay in the family and get rid of that woman, I'll go and die!"

I couldn't believe my own ears, why is my mom so.....

"Mom, who do you think I am? Do you think I can stop Uncle Mason from marrying any woman?" I argued.

Mom didn't care about what I said at all and continued crying: "Jennie, mom knows you have your own ways, Leo treated you so well I



know you like him too. I also knew you two liked each other. Please, help mom."

I couldn't believe mom knew about me and Leo, and yet she forced me to attend his wedding?!

Haha.....

This is my mom.

"impossible." I was tired.

"Then I'll die!" she threatened.

I didn't want to talk any further and hung up, then I switched my phone off.

Maybe I knew deep down that mom wouldn't kill herself for a man.

I didn't even shower and went straight to bed with my makeup on.

In the middle of the night, someone kept ringing my door bell. I got out of the bed and go to the door. I was Wendy.

'Hey, what's up, it's late!" I opened the door and asked.

"Hi, sorry for waking you but here's a sketch from boss. He wants you to improve part B and hand it to him tomorrow. He's been in a bad mood lately, let's all be careful so that he doesn't explode, okay?" Wendy explained.

I smiled at her and thanked her. "Thanks for coming all the way, appreciate it."

"No problem, let's do our best, okay? Sorry again to wake you, go sleep, bye!" she said cheerfully.

"Goodbye, be careful on your way home!" I closed to door and go back to bed.

The next day, I woke up and improved the sketch a little. Then I headed to the office.

On my way in the LRT, I switched on my phone and saw a message from a stranger wishing me happy birthday.

'Happy Birthday'

I try to think who would wish me birthday, my friends have already wished me, who could this be?

I checked the number's address. Not from Denmark. Yea, he already has a wife now, why would he remember my birthday?

## Chapter 25 Committed Suicide?

I reached the company and started the meeting.

Lance was on his seat looking annoyed while Lawrence reported. He kept yawning.

"Why are you so sleepy? I thought you always sleep early?" Lance scolded.

Lawrence was woken up by me last night to pick me up, that must be why he was so tired. I felt guilty.

Lawrence put down the sketch in his hands and stared at Lance. He then said word by word: "I went to save a lady last night. She was abandoned by a male friend in the middle of the road in the night, do you agree that this is call saving someone else's life?"

I was shocked that Lawrence would speak to Lance this way, he was Lance's worker!

Wasn't he afraid that Lance would fire him for defending me?

Lance fiddled with the pen in his hands and smirked. He didn't got mad. He looked at me and looked back at Lawrence. "Oh? This lady must be very gorgeous for you to get out of bed to save her!" he said.

"Yea, Lawrence, share the details! Is she pretty?" the other colleagues started asking.

Lawrence's gaze fell on me and smiled: "Nah, just a friend, she isn't interested in me don't simple guess."

"Seems like it's one sided then!" another colleague said.

Why are these people such busy bodies?

"Don't joke, please. Let's get on with the meeting!" Lawrence glanced at me again and said.

He must be embarrassed that instead of scolding him, Lance and the others started questioning him about his love life or crush.

Lance's eyes jumped from me to Lawrence and back to me again. He didn't look too happy, but who the hell cares about him? He must already know Lawrence was the one who saved me yesterday. So what? Lance was the one who abandoned me.

There's no law stating that a man can't help a defenseless lady in the middle of the night.

Want me to die? Not so easy.

After the meeting, on our way back to our offices, Lance suddenly spoke to me. "I really admire your seductions, only just a short amount of time and Lawrence is already doing anything for you."

The public thinks Lance is a gentleman, I wonder if they would change their minds if they heard how he just spoke to me?

"We are just friends." I didn't want to explain anymore.

But he didn't let me off. "What kind of friends would pick you up in the middle of the night and sacrifice his sleep?"

"Anyone who's human enough wouldn't throw a girl out there alone in a winter's night." I stopped and added: "Do you really hate me that much that you wanted me do die?"

I was sick of this. I was angry, upset, annoyed and full of hatred for this man.

This man, Lance Mason.

I seemed to have surprised him by my words. He froze and answered: "What are you saying? Hating someone needs efforts, you're just a toy to me."

And with that he went into his office. I stood there staring at his back, my hands turning into a fist. What he didn't know was how much I wanted to kill him right there.

I entered my office. My phone rang, it was a stranger's number. "Hello, is this Ms Gomez?"

I raised an eyebrow. "Yes, you are?"

"I'm from Hospital of Denmark, is Karen your mother?"

Hospital.....

I got a bad feeling.

"Yes, she is my mom, what happened?" I asked nervously.

"Your mom tried to commit suicide, she's now in the ER. Someone left this number for us to dial. Please come over as soon as you can."

My phone dropped from my hands and onto the floor.

My mom really tried to kill herself, she wasn't joking.....

## Chapter 26 Whatever It Takes

Even though I was disappointed in mom for so many years, but she is still my mom, how could i let her die?

Packed my things hurriedly and rushed out of my office. I bang into Wendy and my stuff fell out of my hands. Wendy helped me pick up my stuff.

"Jennie are you rushing to somewhere? You should inform boss, or else he will get angry again."

I picked up my stuff and wanted to leave, but Wendy wouldn't let go of my hands.

I said: "Can you help me inform him that there's an emergency at my home and I needed to go back to Denmark."

Lance was leaving his office right at this time and saw me running pass him.

I heard Wendy reporting to him: "Jennie needs to go back to Denmark due to an emergency at home."

Lance followed behind me and I noticed him giving his family a call, asking them what happened. He said: "Hm, alright, tell father I will go back home and we'll talk about it."

He increased his footsteps and pulled my arms: "Follow me to the airport, we will go back by my private plane."

I shrugged his hands away and he scowled at me. "Stop being so stubborn, I'm the only one who can send you to your mother quick enough."

I looked at him with suspicion, since when did he decided to treat me well?

He even offered to send me back to Denmark in his private plane.

Lance seemed to know what I was thinking and chuckled: "Don't think too much, something happened at home I just want to go and have a look, see what kind of games your mother wants to play....."

I knew it, I knew Lance wouldn't be so nice. I glared at him.

In his place, we sat face to face. He read his sports magazine while I stared at him. I wanted to say something, but I didn't know what to say.

"Why are you staring at me?" Lance put down his magazine and looked up at my face.

I lowered my head awkwardly when he caught me staring at him. He said something about my mom again, but I chose to just glare at him and say nothing.

I didn't say anything because I wasn't sure about my mom's history with Uncle Mason. But what I heard from gossips was, my mom got together with Uncle Mason when Lance and Leo's mom was still alive. She was sick at that time.

"A clap wouldn't sound without 2 hands, your father ain't anyone good either." I mumbled. He heard me.

He face turned cold and he smirked: "Weren't you used to be nice to my father? Now that he dumped your mother, you're starting to scold him behind his back?"

I knew Lance always thought me and mom wanted their money and power, perhaps my mom did, but I can swear to god that I never wanted any of those.

I closed my eyes and pretended to sleep, we could never have a decent conversation.

I rushed straight to the hospital the moment we landed. Mom had already woken up and was in the ward. Because she lost a lot of blood, she looked very pale.

When my mom woke up and saw me beside her bed, she held my hands and said: "Mom wasn't trying to scare you, they chased me out of the house and forced me to leave, what's the point of living? Jennie, you must have ideas to make them let me stay, right? I was the one who begged them to let you stay too, to let you live a good life. If you don't help me now, it means you don't care about me." Mom cried.

If I don't make them let her stay, it means I don't care about her?

Haha.....

That's my mom. What a mom.

I pulled my hands away from her with disappointment and sighed. "Mom, how do you want me to help you? You tell me."

Mom's face turned a little ugly. She cared too much about money, fame and status.

To the extent that she forgot much about me, her daughter.

"I don't care, you must have a way. You have always been smart and clever, if you don't help me I'll kill myself again."

She threatened me again. I wanted so badly to yell at her right there to just die, I don't want to care anymore! But she's my mom, I still couldn't say it.

"You're trying to leave yourself no choice and also leave me no choice! Then fine, we can die together. Let's meet dad soon and we'll be a happy family!" I yelled, my tears rushing out of my eyes.

Mom suddenly got up from her bed and yelled like an insane woman: "Don't even bring up your father. I will always be part of the Mason's Family, your father is none of my business!"

Seems like my mom will always be embarrassed about the fact that she was once married to a village guy.

"Mom, I..... I really can't help you." I stared at mom, didn't know what to think, to say or to do.

Mom was still acting like a mad woman on her bed. She suddenly took the small fruit knife from the table beside her bed and pointed it at her neck. She yelled: "Useless daughter, do you really want to see me die?!"

I was shocked, the tip was already on her skin, I could see some

blood.

I panicked and tried to comfort her with my shaking voice. " Mom, stop, put the knife down and we will talk about it, okay?"

"If you don't promise me today, I'll die right in front of you now." She yelled, then she proceeded to stab herself. I was so scared I jumped on her and we fought to take the knife. She accidentally cut my face. It was a long cut, blood trickled down my wound.

I snatched the knife and threw it away from us, I screamed and cried: " What the hell do you want?! You really leave me no choice, do you?! No matter how good Uncle Mason is, can he be any better than your own daughter?! Just wake the hell up, mom! Uncle Mason doesn't even like you, now you're getting older, he can't wait to chase you away from him!"

"I forbid you to speak of Uncle Mason like that! He likes me, he used to treat me so well! He bought me jewels, clothes and even brought me around the world to travel! It is that slut that seduced him away from me! Jennie, please beg Lance Mason, he is the master of the house now! Please help me beg him, for mom?"

Mom suddenly kneeled down and begged me. I shook my head in disbelief. I couldn't accept that this woman is my mother. How could she do this to me?!

I laughed out in the middle of my cries, asking mom how does she want me to beg? I was like a crazy person.

Mom remained kneeling, pulling on the edge of my pants, she stared at me with wide eyes: "I don't care, you must have a way, mom only begged you once, help me this time and I promise to never bother you again!"

I stepped back in horror, the way she looked at me..... I knew what she meant.

Asking a young lady to beg a man, with what?

.....

How could my own mother, my blood related, biological mother, treat her own daughter this way?!

"Wow, mom, just wow!" I scoffed, shaking my head. I left her ward and kneeled down in the middle of the hospital walkway and cried my eyes out. I couldn't take it anymore.

I sat on the bench for a long time, mom noticed me and got worried, kept on chasing me to go see Lance.

I didn't want to go, she threatened to jump off the building.

I stared at my mom, who was like a stranger in front of me. I calmed myself down and thought about Niklaus and the Lay Water Park Project. If I want revenge, I must think of a way to get close to Lance Mason.

This reason would be perfect to get close to him, or else if I suddenly try to get near him, he would suspect.

I stared at mom and wiped away my tears, with a stern voice I said:

"alright, fine."

Mom pulled my hands happily and said: "Jennie, I knew you still cared about me!"

I shook her hands off me and scoffed. "You are the biggest embarrassment if my life."

I knew I sounded harsh and would hurt her, but that was how I thought. She didn't care about hurting me, why would I care about her feelings?

This kind of woman doesn't deserve to be a mother.

"Embarrassment? Do not forget that I was the one who mad it possible for you to grow up nicely, in a rich family and live a good life. You owe it to me, if not for you, if I had abandoned you, Uncle Mason would have treated me better." My mom said in a cold voice.

"Jennie, you should learn to be grateful." She added.

She looked just like a cold-blooded woman to be at this point. Not my mom, a perfect stranger that I owe my life to, how pathetic.

Hi dear readers, please wait for every chapter to be updated, I sometimes need time to think about what to continue and what to write to make it more interesting, sometimes I cannot update every day but I will try my best! And sometimes it will be a very long chapter, sometimes it will be shorter, but no worries, for every shorter chapters, I will make sure the next chapters are long enough to satisfy every readers! Happy reading, thanks for the support!

## Chapter 27 Deal

Lance's fingers that were pinching my chin started to become tighter and tighter, I groaned in pain. Lance saw my pained expression and grinned happily. He let go of my chin and asked me: "What do you think you can get from me?"

"I don't know, this is your decision to make, not mine. I don't have a choice." I massaged my chin, I really didn't have any idea what I would achieve from this, it was a bet I made. I couldn't understand why a man who hated me for so long would rape me and used drunk as an excuse, he even didn't let me off and instead latched himself on me. I still remembered the first time he touched me, he ripped my bra and massaged my birthmark. He even kissed that spot. I had a feeling there's something behind this birthmark and Lance.

So, I put all into this bet, myself.

"Let's see, a young and healthy man and a beautiful woman like you, what will both of us get? Hm?" He leaned against the desk and folded his hands.

Hearing his words, I knew I won this bet.

I slowly moved my hands towards my top. Then I proceeded to take off my clothes one by one while Lance stare at my body with squinting eyes. If you say this wasn't embarrassing, no one would believe you. If you say this wasn't upsetting, no one would believe you either. Imagine the hurt and pain I experienced right at this moment.

Right at that moment, I don't know anymore if I was doing it for mom or for the hatred in my heart. It felt like both of this reasons had their own invisible hands, pushing me towards this black hole.

I also didn't know what kind of ending I would get, I could only go one step at a time and see how it goes. I didn't know if I would regret this, but I didn't think too much about it anymore.

I used to imagine my life with Leo Mason, now look at me.

Ironic.

Ever since Leo dumped me, I promised myself to never think too much ever again, I should always just go with the flow.

When I reached the last piece of my clothing, my bra, I hesitated and stopped. I looked at Lance, who was still admiring my body.

He noticed that I have stopped taking off my clothes and asked: "Why did you stop?"

I thought about it and sighed: "Lance, I still haven't recovered completely, you can do whatever you want with me once I recovered."

Lance raised an eyebrow and approached me. His fingertips grazed over my lips and he flashed me an evil grin. "You still have a mouth, don't you?"

And with that, he walked back and sat down behind his desk.

It was very obvious what he wanted me to do. Although I'm still



considered as innocent in this area, but as a woman, I knew what he wanted.

I didn't expect him to insult me this way the first time around. I had a million thoughts telling me to reject, but I still forced myself to walk towards him, kneel down before him, take off his pants and move my head towards his groin.....

I did something that would embarrass me for the rest of my life.

After that, I felt so disgusted that I started puking dry on the floor. Lance cleaned his area with a tissue and buckled his belt. He bent down towards me and pulled my hair up so that my head lifted to meet his head. "Disgusted just by this little action? If you want to be my lover, there's still much more disgusting things waiting for you. Oh and I forgot to tell you, I really am as pervert as you said I am, so, Jennie, are you still on for this deal?"

I didn't hesitate and nodded my head. "Yes, why not." Or else I just wasted what I did just now.

Lance stared right into my eyes, as if he was suspicious of my answer.

"Jennie, aren't you afraid of what I will do to you?" he asked.

"What other things can a woman and man do other than f\*cking around in bed?" I asked him back.

Lance laughed at my response. "Naïve little girl! Don't you know men in the business world likes to play around with women? Once we get sick of them, we will throw them away to another man to enjoy. Aren't you afraid that I will give you away to another man?"

I didn't know that men in this business world are so gross, seems like the rumours in the magazines and tabloids were all true.

I glared at him with wide eyes, if it really is as what he said, would I be able to accept the consequences?

Lance noticed my shocked expression and laughed. "Look at you, I was just kidding. No matter what, you are still a very innocent little woman when you come to me, how could I gift you to other men? Yes I admit I have weird and perverted fetishes in bed, but since you insist, then alright."

## Chapter 28 Not My Mother

Lance finished what he wanted to say and left his study room. My eyes turned red and I slowly put on all my clothes.

Stepping out of this mansion, I went to the hospital to visit my mom. But I didn't enter her ward when I arrived, I suddenly felt like I didn't want to see her.

I realized that me and mom lost our relationship. I just owe her a responsibility to take care of her.

I stayed in the hotel for a few days, I have been waiting for Lance's message. The nurses in the hospital informed my mom had been making a huge ruckus, not recovering at all.

I knew my mom did this because Uncle Mason still didn't go bring her home, she was doing that on purpose, to pressure me.

At night, I dialled Lance's number. He picked up the phone and asked with a hushed voice: "What?"

"About my mother, have you talked to your father? My mother has been making a lot of trouble in the hospital lately, since you promised me, can you hurry up with this?" I asked.

Lance chuckled and said: "Old man fell in love again, I need some time to talk things into his head! Go bring your mother back home tomorrow and let her stay there. Tell her that old man already decided to be with that woman, as his son I couldn't do anything much. Your mother still can live there but she has to bear with it, she must be prepared that he will always have woman around him."

He hung up after telling me these.

I understood what he meant. Lance was telling me that my mom can still live with the Mason's but Uncle Mason will still continue fooling around with women, but he won't marry anyone.

Lance is the master of the family, but he couldn't keep his father's pants on, that's his father's rights.

The next day, I woke up and went to the hospital. I told mom what Lance told me. Mom was happy that she was still allowed to stay with the Mason's. She said men will always be men and fool around outside, but they will always come back home, as long as she is still the mistress of the house.

I was always very curious where mom got her confidence from. Who gave her the status of mistress of the family? I'm speechless.

I also told her clearly that I would only send her back there, I would not take a step into the house, and from that day onwards, I do not have a mother anymore.

Humans are selfish, so let me be selfish this time!

Just when I was about to leave, Lance's car stopped in front of me. "Since you're home, why didn't you go in?"

Mom saw Lance and said: "Young master is back!"

Her fake smile made me even more disgusted.

Three of us entered the living hall. Uncle Mason sat on the sofa. He glanced at us, as if he already knew we would all come.

Mom approached him and spoke to him in a soft voice: "Dear, I'm back."

Uncle Mason didn't say anything. He glanced at my mom and looked away. Mom continued to ask him things such as did he sleep well, did the servants served him well.....

I couldn't see what was happening in front of me so I went up to them and cut them off: "Uncle Mason, how are you?"

"Fine, very well." He answered shortly. He sounded angry.

Then, he got up and went upstairs. Mom followed right behind.

Looking at my mom, I was really embarrassed. I look down on woman like her.

Out of nowhere, Lance spoke into my ears: "Your mother was way worse than how she is right now when she was younger. So when I told you she was a slut, it was true. Can't believe you wanted to kill me for speaking the truth."

No matter how bad my mom was, she still was my mom, if someone insulted my mom, aren't they indirectly insulting me too?

But right at this moment, I didn't know what to say back to Lance.

Now I get it, he must have wanted me to see how low my mother was!

On the same day, Lance brought me back to California.

## Chapter 29 Low

I didn't understand why Lance asked me such a question. Ever since Leo got married, I have already deleted all his contacts from every social media, no matter how much I still liked him, I would never break someone's family apart.

I stared at Lance with confusion, he scoffed. "Still pretending?"

I didn't get it! "What pretend? What are you talking about? Just spit it out!"

I was innocent, so my face was naturally full of confusion, I didn't look like I was pretending. He raised an eyebrow and asked sincerely: "You really didn't contact Leo?"

I shook my head. "You don't have to try me like that, I'm very clear that he's someone else's husband now, he's a married man with a wife and a son, I would not break his family apart."

He took one last look at me and turned around in bed, laying beside me, I could feel his breathing. "That better be true, Jennie Gomez. If I ever found out that you are still in touch with him, I will not forgive you."

Right at this moment, I could feel my body freezing cold. I didn't know if it was because I was naked or because of his threat.

Leo has become the dream that will never come true.

Therefore, Lance's warning was just extra.

The sweat on my body got rid of the heat from my body, I was freezing cold. I decided to get up and take a hot shower.

I was getting out of bed when Lance grabbed my arms: "Where do you think you're going?"

"I just want to take a bath!"

Lance's voice turned cold. "What? You think I'm dirty?"

I shook my head and replied: "How would I dare to think that? It was you who always think that I'm the one who's dirty."

Lance's eyes moved around my naked body, although we did it twice already, but his behaviour still made me uncomfortable. I picked up a shirt and draped it around my body.

My actions seemed to be a funny thing to him. He laughed sarcastically and said: "What are you doing? Don't act like I haven't seen every inch of you, don't try to act innocent and clean, okay?"

Although he said it, I still covered up my body. I went to the toilet and squatted down on the floor, waiting. He did me a few times just now without ant protections, plus I'm allergic to pregnancy pills, so there was a possibility that I might get pregnant. The doctor even told me I can get pregnant easily so I have to be careful.

But of course, Lance wouldn't care about me, if I got pregnant, he would ask me to go for abortion. Perhaps this was one of his way to make me suffer.

I convinced myself that I shouldn't be upset. Maybe I did horrible

things in my last life and this was God's plan to punish me. Perhaps this would make me less upset.

When Lance entered the bathroom, I was still squatting down, with my head in my knees and still very much naked. My body was wet, my face was also wet, but I wasn't sure if it was the water or my tears.

Lance's legs appeared in front of me, I looked up. "Taking a shower?"

He nodded.

I stood up and moved away to make some space for him. I covered my body with a clean towel.

"I'm going back." I informed him.

He looked at me and said nothing. I wasn't sure what he meant, was he okay with me leaving? Was he not?

I stood there staring at him, waiting for his approval. The water from his shower splashed onto me, so cold.

I shivered.

My split second of weakness was witnessed by Lance.

He didn't look at me but he spoke very coldly to me: "Leave if you want, don't stand there and annoy me."

I nodded my head. "Alright, bye."

With his permission, I went to his bedroom and put on my clothes, pick up my bag walked out of the mansion with a sore body.

Back at my rented condo, I switched on my speaker and played my favourite song. It was also Leo's favourite, < As Long As You Love Me >.

We used to tell each other, as long as we love each other, others are nothing..... is he telling his wife the same thing now?

The next morning when I went to work, I didn't see Lance around. I asked Wendy and she told me Lance went to New York.

New York?

Leo was in New York, was Lance meeting Leo? Why did Lance ask me if I was still in touch with Leo? Or was he going there for business?

## Chapter 30 Jade

I kept overthinking that day. Lawrence knocked on my office door when it was near 5pm. He asked if I was free for dinner.

I recalled the one time when I had a cold, Lawrence ran out in the rain to get me meds, I'm not stupid, I knew about his feelings for me.

Such kindness was very valuable to me. I really appreciate it.

But I will never deserve such kindness anymore. Ever since the day I decided to sell myself out in a deal, I deserve nothing.

I rejected Lawrence's invitation, he drove away with disappointment.

I needed to clear my mind alone so I went to the mall. I came across a small private clinic beside the mall and suddenly remembered what Wendy said. She said Lance would most probably be back after a week right?

I took some pills yesterday and puked the whole night. It's clear that pills weren't my best solution, but I couldn't just let myself get pregnant and go for abortion again, right?

I entered the clinic and saw the doctor. Private clinics just want money, they wouldn't care about your body and would do what you want them to do as long as you pay. I wanted to insert a tiny little metal gadget into me, it was to prevent pregnancy. Lance would be back after a week, my body would have recovered well by that time, so if he wants me on bed my then, it shouldn't be a problem.

The doctor did as I said.

He told me it wouldn't hurt, but it did.

I recalled the time when I aborted the child. The pain ..... I wouldn't have to experience the same pain ever again.

By the time I left, it was already near dark. I called a cab and went back to my condo.

I cooked some instant noodle and filled my stomach up with junk foods.

When I was deep into sleep, I suddenly felt a warm feeling all over my body. My forehead was burning. I thought, maybe my body still wasn't used to this IUD (intra-uterine device).

I didn't have any fever meds with me so I drank a lot of water to fight off the burning sensation.

The next day was Saturday, so I didn't need to go work. I stayed at home to rest.

I was taking a nap when my phone rang. I glimpsed at the screen with one eye and saw Lance's name. Wasn't he in New York? Was he so free to call me?

I picked the phone. I didn't even have the time to speak as he already spoke first.

"Where are you?" he asked straight away.

"Home, why?"

"Nothing, come to Jade Recreations." He said. I stopped him from hanging up by asking quickly: "Aren't you at New York?"

He didn't answer me immediately, he stopped for a brief moment and said: "I came back yesterday, um..... how do you know?"

His last question confused me, was he trying to tell me I have no right to know where he went?

I didn't think about it much and pack my stuff. It was freezing cold out there, so I wore my thickest trench coat.

The colour of the coat made me look much better, not so sick.

I picked up my bag and headed to Jade Recreations.

This is a famous relaxation centre. A lot of rich and upper class people come here to entertain themselves or relax. There's a huge gold-club there too.

Arriving at the place, one of the staff brought me to Lance. He was playing gold with an old man, he seemed to be really humble around the old man, not as cocky as he is normally.

I approached them and greeted. "Mr Mason."

He looked at me and scrunched his face as if my outfit wasn't suitable.

"Oh, you brought a lady friend! Introduce us, will you?" the old man spoke up. He stared at me up and down with that little eyes of his. I had a bad feeling.

Then I kind of guessed what Lance wanted to do.....

## Chapter 31 Prostitute?

I stared at Lance with wide eyes. Was he really trying to send me to this man?

Then I recalled the time when we were younger, he hired some gangsters to rape me. What can't Lance do?

My hands turned into fists, I couldn't escape, could I?

"This is Jennie Gomez, she's my secretary." Lance introduced, smiling at the old man.

Since when did I become a secretary? This position, as secretary, allowed the old man to run his wild fantasies even further.

The man looked at me with excitement and put his hands out in front of me: "Oh, it's Ms Gomez, nice to meet you."

Why did he speak like he knew me?

I forced myself to smile and shake his hands. His rough hands held mine and wouldn't let go.

I felt extremely disgusted, I couldn't describe the disgust I felt. To be honest, it was as disgusting as having intercourse with Lance.

Later, a lot more people joined us. I recognised some familiar faces, they appeared a few times in the news. They were people in the government.

Lance invited them here to spend some time.

This was just the surface, god knows what they do in the dark, money and women.

After the golf, Lance led them to a fancy restaurant inside this place for dinner, there were two other women with us, they were really pretty. Their names were Irene and Izzy. They looked to be about the same age as me.

During the meal, the woman named Irene spoke in an oddly sweet voice: "It's a little warm, don't you guys think?" and she took off her coat. She must be kidding, right? She was wearing a tube top in such a cold weather.

Izzy followed her behaviour and agreed. "Yea, I know right, it really is warm!" she took off her coat too, and what she was wearing was even more revealing. She was wearing a low cut bralette only. Her body was so gorgeous that the middle-aged men were all staring like there's no tomorrow.

I never knew the upper-class society was so 'low'.

"Aren't you feeling warm, Ms Gomez?" one of the middle-aged men asked me.

Winter wasn't over, although it doesn't get like really, really cold or snow in California, but I could never get used to rainy and slightly colder seasons.

I glanced at Lance, he was also looking at me. He didn't seem to be happy, was he trying to send me a message, telling me that he brought



me here for a purpose?

If Lance really send me as a gift to them today, would he benefit?  
But I didn't want to, I'm not a prostitute!

Lance kept staring me with that look. I had no choice but to take off my coat too. Thankfully I didn't wear anything revealing, but it hugged my figure tightly and showed off my curves.

"Ms Gomez has such a nice body." One old man complimented, touching my arms slightly.

I forced myself to smile politely. "Thanks for the compliment."

Lance's eyes were filled with his unseen laughter. He must be satisfied.

The old and middle-aged men talked and 'accidentally' touched us women here and there.

I was forced to drink too.

I got more and more dizzy, I was getting unconscious.

The last thing I saw was Lance talking about business and women with the old men. He's an animal.

When I woke up, I felt someone molesting me. I opened my eyes and saw the bald man trying to kiss me.

I shoved him away in disgust. He grabbed my legs, not letting me off. I kicked him out of instinct.

He got mad and slapped me hard across my face. It hurt so much my tears came out immediately. My face stung.

"B\*tch, stop pretending like you are innocent, your boss gifted you to me. Stop struggling and let me kiss you, will you?"

## Chapter 32 Let Me Go

Seemed like Lance really treated me as a means of trade to get what he wanted.

I felt like someone was slicing of my heart, piece by piece. I never knew I could be treated this was as a human being.

I didn't know why I wanted to escape. I sold myself to Lance, how was it any different from laying underneath this man?

When the old man's rough palm touched my skin, I wanted to vomit. I gagged, I can't. I really couldn't accept this kind of man touching me.

I struggled hard underneath him. Although he was old, he was not weak at all. He gave me another slap across my face.

Then, he licked my face with that gross tongue of his. I nearly died right on the spot out of disgust.

"Pretty little girl, stop trying, if you serve me well I will approve the land your boss wants. Come on, just let me do you, okay?" his words were filthy. Lance Mason, I screamed out his name in my mind. My hatred for him only grew bigger.

I was struggling for my life when I saw a table lamp beside me. Without hesitation, I picked it up and smashed it onto the old man's head.

He groaned in pain and laid on me, his blood splashed a little onto my face. I was shocked I pushed him away from me and ran out. As I didn't hurt his weak part, he was still conscious. He tried to grab my legs but I was quicker. I didn't even put on my shoes and ran out bare footed.

I didn't know where to go at this point, I just knew that I have to run for my life and never let Lance find me again. I don't want to be used as a trade.

"Come back here, you little b\*itch!" the old man shouted behind me.

I ran like a dog was chasing me and never looked back. I ran as fast as I could and I crashed into a man's arms. I looked up and saw Niklaus Sands.

I pulled his shirt and didn't let go, shaking him. "Mr Sands, help me please! Please I beg you!"

Niklaus Sands pulled me away from his arms but didn't push me away from him. He noticed the old man behind me, running towards us with blood on his head, and looked at me, who was looking like I've just seen a ghost. He's a smart man and immediately understood what was going on.

"Mr Zhang, didn't the government create a law forbidding anyone from the government from coming to this kind of places? Seeing Mr Zhang chasing after a lady here in this place at night, I guess you are already breaking the law, am I right? As a good citizen, should I report you?" Niklaus hugged me by my waist and softly patted me at my back, as if he was trying to comfort me.

It seems like Niklaus wasn't afraid of this Mr Zhang at all.

The Sands Family is a very powerful family here. Lance's power wasn't as high and authoritative as the Sand's Family yet. They were very close to the government, of course Niklaus wouldn't be afraid of a small government officer.

This place wasn't Lance's stronghold, so in order to get the land he wanted and to do business, he had to make a deal and be humble to these officers.

"Oh, it's Mr Sands! How's your grandfather?" Mr Zhang immediately changed a topic, trying to shift the attention away from what he wanted to do with me.

Niklaus ignored his question and pointed at me: "I know this woman, I'm here to bring her back. If you see her in the future, keep in mind that she's not someone you can touch."

Then, Niklaus led me to the lift and we entered the lift together. My sighed in relief, with teary eyes, I bowed to Niklaus and thanked him for saving me. If he didn't turn up there, I must have been raped, again..... at this point, I didn't want to think about revenge on Lance anymore. Whatever hatred or stupid mom, I didn't care anymore. I just want to live peacefully in the corner of the world, alone.

Niklaus patted on my shoulder and comforted me gently: "Don't be scared, okay? This is my place, nobody would dare touch you if I say so."

I nodded my head and thanked him again.

Niklaus looked down at my bare feet. Without a word, he carried me in his arms. I felt a little shy so I asked him to put me down.

He refused.

The lift stopped and I saw Lance. He was held up by his driver, he looked like he was in a hurry to get into the lift.

Lance noticed me in Niklaus' arms and his eyes turned ice cold.

I stared back at him, my eyes were only filled with hate and nothing else. I've known this man for nearly 20 years and I have never hurt him this much, how could he?

"Using a woman to get a piece of land, this doesn't seem to be how CEO Mason works." Niklaus scoffed and insulted.

I wasn't sure if the alcohol made Lance's brain functioned slower, he hesitated for a moment before speaking: "Who else isn't like that when it comes to business, don't try to act noble."

Then, Lance turned to me and demanded me to get out of Niklaus' arms. "Jennie, get down and walk by yourself, or are you waiting for me to carry you?"

I didn't think he would even touch me, let alone carry me. If he did, he would carry me to the old man again!

I was really terrified. Niklaus was like my safe haven right now. He's my guardian angel at this moment. I didn't dare to let go of him and I held onto him even tighter. To be really honest, I was really, really

terrified of what Lance would do to me if I let go.

My behaviour seemed to provoked Lance even further. His eyes turned blood shot, like he was going to consume me whole. Am I going to die?

## Chapter 33 In his car

"Jennie Gomez, I'm warning you. Get down on your feet." Lance growled, but his demand sounded weak.

It didn't give me a lot of pressure, but his gaze, his look terrified me.

What happened just now already took half my life away.

I didn't think about it further. Niklaus put me down and patted my head. "Follow him back, this is not Denmark, it's California, my territory. If anyone tries to bully you in the future, just tell them you are Niklaus Sands' sister, use my name. I can guarantee your safety."

Niklaus spoke to me softly, then he looked at his watch. He seemed to be in a hurry. He must have come here to do something. Meeting me was a coincidence, he saved me and I wasted his time. I felt guilty.

Because I felt bad, I bowed and thanked him once again: "Thank you, Mr Sands, for saving me."

Niklaus smiled and said: "No worries, stop with all the bowing and thanking."

Then, he left with his people.

Now, I was left with Lance and his driver. Lance stared at me and remained silent. The driver noticed me staring at Lance and called me out. "Ms Gomez, let's go."

I nodded.

His car was parked outside of this recreation park, so we needed to walk a short distance to reach the car. It must have just rained a while ago as the ground was still wet and cold.

Lance, who had been walking in front suddenly stopped walking. I didn't stop, instead I walked pass him bare footed. The coldness from the ground shot through my veins.

I couldn't even feel my feet anymore. I kept asking myself: Jennie Gomez, is this how your life is going to be?

Is this your life?

Who can guarantee something like this wouldn't happen again in the future? I must just be a stranger to Niklaus, would he even consider to protect me.

I'm not stupid, I know Niklaus wouldn't protect someone like me.

I might be useful to him, but not very valuable to him.

I wanted to be his acquaintance, he agreed out of courtesy, not like he really thought that I would be a worthy ally.

I sped up my steps. The driver was kind enough to open the car door for me. He didn't open the door for Lance first, but thankfully Lance didn't get angry for such a small matter.

The driver got in the car the last and switched on the air-conditioner in the car. I didn't know if the heater was working or if it was my problem, I was freezing cold. I started to shiver.

My shivering body started to shake even harder.

Lance might have been annoyed by my shivers and demanded the driver to turn up the heater.

"Turn up the heater, the weather is cold." Lance commanded.

"It's already over the normal temperature." The driver said.

I tightened my jaw and forced myself to stop shaking. Sure enough, I stopped shivering but my feet were already painless. I couldn't feel a thing.

We were in complete silence. I could here three of our breathings.

I didn't care about what Lance might think of me and pulled up my knees and rested my feet on his expensive leather seat. I turned me head to the other side and looked out at the scenery.

After around 20 minutes, Lance suddenly laughed coldly.

I didn't have the mood to even ask. I wasn't curious at all.

"Sister, hahaha..... More like lovers!" he said with a sarcastic laugh.

I didn't say anything, I just let him say anything he wanted to.

I leaned my head against the window and looked out. My stubborn tears rolled onto my lap.

I knew I shouldn't cry in front of Lance, it would show him that I'm weak, he would only get happier.

My nose started to get stuffy, I didn't have any tissue paper so I wiped my nose on my sleeve.

I guess the driver couldn't see me like that and handed me a tissue paper.

"Thank you!" I thanked him.

The driver glanced at me through the mirror and took a glance at Lance too. Then he replied: "You're welcome."

I noticed Lance's hands had turned into tight fists. Did I ruin his plan to get the piece of land? My disobedience must have angered the old man..... was Lance thinking of ways to kill me?

I looked out and didn't recognised the route, so I asked: "Driver, can you send me to my place?"

The driver looked at Lance for approval, Lance was his boss, not me.

"Head to Pavilion Residence." Lance sounded like he was trying to contain his anger.

Pavilion Residence was his house in California, why is he was he bringing me there? Was he trying to punish me on bed for ruining his plan?

## Chapter 34 Surrender

No, I don't want to go!

"Mr Driver, can you drop me by the road?"

"I..... Ms Gomez, it's starting to rain again, and you don't have your shoes....." Although he was talking to me, yet he looked at Lance.

Lance remained silent. I started to scream like mad.

"Let me out! Let me out of the car!"

I even banged my head on the window.

I made a scene for a few minutes, my forehead was even red, but the driver continued driving.

I stopped.

But I never looked at Lance.

My phone rang. Strange how my bag was able to be saved in the middle of all that happened. My phone kept vibrating in my bag. "Ms Gomez, your phone is ringing." The driver said to me.

I took out my phone and looked at the screen. A stranger's number. I muted my phone.

Lance turned around. "Why didn't you pick-up?"

I put my phone bag into my bag and ignored him

My phone rang again after a few minutes. It's the same number again. I answered the call. "Hello, who is this?"

A soft and calm voice sounded from the other side of the phone. "Jennie."

One single word made me cry again.

I hung up in a hurry, making Lance suspicious. "Which one of you lovers called you?" he insulted.

I didn't bother about him and ignored him. I turned to the other side. I didn't want my enemy to see my tears.

Lance didn't give up. "It really was a lover?"

I looked up at him angrily and laughed in a high pitch tone. "Guess who? It was the old man back there who tried to rape me so you can get a piece of land. Satisfied?"

I wiped my tears away with my sleeve harshly and looked away.

Lance moved his lips. He wanted to say something. After who knows how long, he turned away and didn't say anything.

His car stopped at my place. Strange, I didn't hear him asking the driver to send me home.

I got down the car, my feet touching the wet, cold ground once again.

"Jennie Gomez!" Lance suddenly yelled out my name.

I turned around. He got down from his car too.

He seemed to have something to say to be, but no, I didn't have

anything to say to this kind of man.

I glanced at him one time and turned back around to go into my house.

I turned around to see if he left but I saw him standing there, staring at me. Was I crazy or did I saw a smile sneaked onto his lips.

"Lance Mason!" I changed my mind and walked towards him.

He asked gently: "Something to tell me?"

I nodded my head.

The corner of his lips went up, "Shoot."

"Can you let me go? Can you let me live my life?" I asked. I lost, I surrender. I didn't want any revenge anymore.

I regret!

I thought about it. I have known him for almost 20 years.

The twenty years that I know him, he never treated me well. He made sure my life was a living hell.

Since I have already lived such a horrible childhood and adulthood, why not I spend the rest of my life away from this man?

Why not I enjoy my own life and stay out of his way?

Revenge? No more, I don't want any of that anymore. I just want to disappear from here and never see him again. Yes, I am weak. I gave up easily, but I didn't want my life to be a tragedy.



## Chapter 35 A change of attitude

If what happened tonight happens again in the future, I might as well just die right now. Wow, I fantasized about how satisfied and powerful I must feel when I got my revenge on Lance, but look what happened even before I started my plan.

I thought that I was brave, I thought I wouldn't be terrified since I had nothing to lose anymore. Seemed like I was wrong.

When the old man was on top of me, pressing me down with his body, I realized there's something way scarier than death in this world. The feeling was like when I was 13, a gang of gangsters trying to rape me in the streets.

My memory filled me with extreme hatred for Lance once again, I want him to die and to pay for what he did, but I also wanted a peaceful life.

If, Lance really promised to let me off his grip, then I could consider forgetting everything he did to me and never think of revenge ever again.

I stared at Lance, my heart beating faster and faster.

Lance was staring at me too, he looked serious, but his face was very cold and emotionless.

He seemed to be thinking seriously. I didn't know what was behind his looks and his mind.

My feet were already too cold to feel anything at this point. Out of nowhere, Lance spoke up: "Let you go? Do you deserve it?" he stared at me while he speaks. Then, he added: "You, Jennie Gomez, are my toy and you spark my interest. If I let you go, won't I become bored? Stop dreaming."

Then, he softly patted my face with the back of his hand and grinned like an evil child. "Understand? If you don't get it, think about your mother more."

And with that, he turned around and drove off in his car.

Tears didn't form, my emotions didn't burst out. Was I numb already?

My fever nearly burned my brain off in the middle of the night, I forced myself to get up and measure my own temperature. It was already around 40 degree Celsius!

My throat was hurting like hell I couldn't even eat or drink anything.

I didn't want to die, so I called the ambulance and got myself sent to the hospital.

I didn't go to work the next day and Wendy gave me a call, asking me why I was absent. I informed her that I had a fever and inflammation, I'm having treatment in the hospital.

Wendy didn't say anything and we hung up afterwards.

Nearing the end of the year, work is always more stressful. I thought since my salary would be given depending on Lance's mood, I shouldn't

anticipate too much. What am I to him? Worker? Or his lover on bed? No, not at all, I was just a toy to him.

Ever since Lance started to latch himself on me, like a master of his favourite toy, I noticed I have become the hospital's regular client.

I lined up and sat at the waiting bench for my turn to receive drip-feeding. I was too weak to eat and my throat wasn't recovering at all. When it was my turn, a man sat down beside me. I didn't look at that man but I could smell him.

Oh no.

It must be Lance! I turned to his side and looked up. Sure enough, it was him! God must be kidding me.

The nurse was checking his body and wanted to inject him with something. Must be a vaccine. However, the nurse kept injecting the needle at the wrong place, he raised his brows and clicked his tongue. "Tsk." He seemed really annoyed.

But I was happy internally to see him hurt. Although this little needle won't bring him too much pain, but it still made me happy to see him in any pain at all. Serve him right, jerk.

Lance's male assistant, who was beside him looked dissatisfied and complained the nurse: "is this how you were taught to inject needles? Bring your head of nurse here!"

The nurse must be shocked to be scolded like that, his hands shook a little and injected the needle at the wrong spot again. She pulled the needle out and a little bit of blood shot out.

"I'm terribly sorry, forgive me." The nurse said in a small voice.

Lance then smiled warmly at the nurse suddenly. "It's fine, no worries it's not painful at all. Take your time, sweetie."

Huh, look at this gentleman. How sweet. What a joke. I thought to myself, the corner of my lips twitched up. Lance suddenly took a glance at my direction and saw my smirk. I quickly turned to the other way.

After a long time, the nurse finally finished her job. She informed Lance about what he should know, stole a few looks of his face, smiled and rushed off.

Lance opened his mouth to speak to his male assistant. "You may go back to the office first."

The assistant looked at him and said: "But, you're sick, can you drive?"

"You drive back, I'll call a cab, go." Lance answered.

"Or I can come and pick you up in a while?" the assistant asked again.

Lance told him there's no need and asked the assistant to go back to work. After he left, me and Lance sat on the bench together, we didn't speak at all.

I looked around to see if there were any empty seats left. Unfortunately, no. but it was awkward sitting with him, not saying a

single word to each other.

I took out my phone and started scrolling my Instagram, from the corner of my eyes, I could see Lance stealing glances at me, observing me.

A lot of the patients here were also using their phones, swiping their screens.

"What's so nice about social medias? Let's watch the show on the TV." Lance spoke up out of nowhere. Strange enough, his tone was..... good.

I was stunned, this was my first time hearing him speak like that to me, with such a normal tone, not filled with insults and sarcasm.

I ignored him and turned my attention back to my phone. He seemed to be unhappy with my behaviour and snatched my phone away from my hands.

"What the hell?" I almost shouted at him.

## Chapter 36 Childish Lance

"I'm bored and I don't want to connect to the public wifi here due to privacy, let's watch something on your phone then, if you don't want to watch the show on the TV." He explained.

He clicked on the Netflix icon in my screen and looked through my downloaded list of shows and movies. He clicked on a random show and started watching.

He seemed to like to watch reality shows.

My phone was snatched away by him. Since I didn't want to get too close to him but had nothing to do, I started counting every drop of liquid in the tube.

Lance noticed me not watching the show together with him. He scowled and asked in a low voice: "Why aren't you watching it with me?"

Let's just call this 'childish Lance'. I didn't want to even entertain him by answering him so I sighed. This was so not like the usual Lance.

I said to him: "I watched all those shows before, you watch it yourself."

Lance took out his mobile phone from his pocket and handed it to me. "I have Instagram inside my phone, use my private data and kill your time."

I was completely stunned at this point. Did Lance just hand me his phone? Since when did our relationship improve this way?

His change of attitude was a little bit strange. It caught me off guard.

"What are you staring at? Go on, use it. Or if you don't want, you can return me the phone." Lance said, noticing me not moving.

I stared at the phone, a thought crossed my mind.

This phone was the same as the one I picked up by the stairs back at his house, didn't he complain that it's dirty because I touched it and threw it away?

"Isn't this the phone you asked your maid to throw away? I touched it before." I emphasized on 'I touched it'.

He looked a little awkward and answered me after a brief pause. "Not that one, this is just the same colour and model."

I played with the phone in my hands and smirked: "Will you throw this away? I touched it."

He squinted my eyes at me. "I already touched you whole."

I knew what he meant.

I pressed on his phone's on button. The screen showed a 4 figure password lock.

"Unlock, please." I hand it to him.

He took his phone. We looked at each other's eyes but he didn't proceed to unlock. I laughed coldly and turn away.

He threw his phone on my lap and said: "9180."

He told me his password. What.....?

I keyed in the password and sure enough, the phone unlocked.

I scroll through my Instagram, looking at my favourite celebrities' photos and stories. Then, I stalked my favourite male celebrity's profile.

Lance eyes' were not on the show he was watching, it was on my Instagram.

He noticed me searched up the male celebrity and asked: "Do you girls all obsessed with male celebrities like him?"

I tilted my head a little to look at him but who knew his face was so close to mine. Our cheeks touched each other, he felt cold like me. Awkward.....

I moved my head away quickly and answered his question. "Um, I guess?"

"Hm....."

After a while, he spoke up again. "That male celeb isn't even handsome, I thought you girls like handsome celebs?"

I know Lance also has his own entertainment company, so he personally know a lot of celebrities.

"Not all women like good-looking celebs." I answered him again. Then, I looked at the phone and liked one of the celeb's photos, to show some support.

"Then why do you like this one? He's a little older and not even handsome." What was his problem? Why did he suddenly started chatting with me?

But I could only answer him, since he was my boss. "he's funny. He's a comedian. He has a wife, a son and a daughter and they are a very loving family. Looking at his life, I wish one day I can be like that too."

We started chatting more and more.

I was never someone who would waste a lot of times on chasing celebrities and stuff like that. I only like one and that's him, the comedian. His shows are really funny and nice.

He once said something that I will never forget. He said, to live is to hope.

## Chapter 37 Kids?

Lance looked at me and thought for a while, then asked: "You like kids?"

I was stunned once again. I didn't understand why he would ask me this question so suddenly.

"I can't say I like or don't like, you don't have a choice when it comes to being a parent one day." This was my answer.

But true enough, I can't say I like nor doesn't like kids. Maybe if one day I get my own child, I might know my own answer.

"Weren't you pregnant before, how could you say you've never been a mother?" Lance's face turned dark.

I was completely confused, why was he acting so strange?

"Then if you said it like that, you were once a father too. Any comments? Do you like kids?" I asked back angrily.

Lance was shocked by my response and question. He paused for a brief moment and moved his lips. Then he said: "Then it would depend on who's the mother of my child."

I got what he meant. He meant, if the child was given birth by Jennie Gomez, then of course he wouldn't like kids.

I'm not stupid.

I stopped talking to him to prevent embarrassing myself any further. I looked up at my drip-feeding tube. Good, it was almost done. I pressed on the bell on my bench.

One more small tube and I could leave this man alone.

The nurse changed a new one for me and before she leave, she glanced at Lance again.

However, Lance didn't even look at the nurse, she seemed a little disappointed.

I searched for a novel from the web and started reading. This way, I could forget about the man sitting beside me.

Lance stopped watching the show and asked me: "Can I look through your album in your phone?"

My eyes opened wide and I stared at him, how the hell did he become a gentleman out of a sudden?

"If I say no, would you not?" I asked.

"Of course I will." he shrugged his shoulder.

I rolled my eyes and said: "Then why even bother to ask?"

"Jennie, aren't you getting braver and braver everyday? Since when did you have the guts to speak to me like that?" he must have noticed my bad attitude and eye-rolling. Did he felt challenged by a low worker?

"How do you want me to treat you? Should i have taken off my clothes and let the old man rape me last night?" I asked him back. I still couldn't let that incident off. I couldn't get over it. To be honest, I felt that

I'm a cruel person, not to others, to myself. I kept hurting myself on the same wound again and again.

Lance face turned very pale, like he just saw a ghost.

A nurse called out suddenly. "Sir, your drip is done, why didn't you press the bell?"

The nurse's question got rid of our awkward atmosphere.

After changing to a new tube, Lance stopped looking or talking to me.

I was done with mine and I stood up to leave but was stopped by Lance. "Wait for me, I'm going to be done soon."

He already requested can I say no? I stayed and waited for him.

When he was done with his, the nurse that kept glancing at him came over and blushed when she saw his face. "Sir, can I get to know you?"

Lance looked at the nurse, put one hand around my shoulder and answered the nurse warmly: "Sorry, my girlfriend here gets jealous easily. She doesn't like it when I make female friends."

I looked at the blushing nurse, then looked at Lance's fake smile. I felt grossed out.

But what the hell? Girlfriend?

## Chapter 38 Public Transport

Lance and I walked alongside each other. We never walked together like this before, I would always walk behind him.

I let him walk in front of me too this time, but he slowed down until I was beside him, then continued the pace.

Lance is weird today, I could feel it. The change in his attitude was also huge, what is he thinking? Is he planning something?

I thought after running his plan yesterday, he would make my life a living hell, but instead he treated me a little better.

I even thought he might have the slightest feelings for me, like how a normal man would have for a woman, but after what he did to me last night, I threw the thought out of my mind.

It's cold outside of the hospital.

"I'm not familiar with the places around here, you've been here for some time, do you know if there's any supermarket here? Need to buy some stuff." Lance asked me.

He's a rich and powerful guy, why would he buy stuff himself?

I bit my tongue and stopped myself from asking. I answered his question instead. "There's a small supermarket two stations down, not far away."

"Then let's take the bus, shall we? I have never taken the bus."

His words showed how curious he is towards a public transport. I pointed at the bus stop: "There, wait there."

We crossed the road together. He pulled me from his right side to his left side and said: "I don't like it when people walk on my right side."

I don't care which side I walk on, but I do know that the cars are coming towards us on the right side. I didn't think much about what he said, I just thought maybe he just purely doesn't like people walking on his right side?

I took out a five dollar change from my purse as I didn't have smaller change.

We got into the bus. It was crowded, so we stood together with our hands holding onto the handle.

There are a lot of people in the bus. Everyone might touch each other once in a while due to the movement of the bus. I glimpsed at Lance's face and noticed that he doesn't seem too happy. Hahaha, seems like young master Mason here isn't used to this situation.

He must not want to go into a public transport ever again.

A middle-aged man kept pushing against me. His hands already touched my butt many times. I have no choice but to lean nearer towards Lance.

Lance noticed my behaviour, my head was already almost in his chest. "What's wrong?" he asked.

I answered him in a low voice. "It's crowded here."



He glanced at my back and then suddenly, he pulled me behind him and turned around, his back facing the middle-aged man who touched my butt.

The lady behind me was also pushing against me. Lance didn't say anything and pressed me against his chest. He then whispered into my ear: "See, easy."

His breath was warm on my ears, making me a little uncomfortable.

My face was pressed against his chest, I could smell the faint orange-y smell on him. I know he loves oranges, his dessert after meals are always oranges.

He even asked his servants to get him orange scented spray for clothings.

I continued taking in the smell of him and I realized although we have stayed in the same house for so many years and we never interact, I still know what he likes and what he doesn't like.

He is a really tall man, perhaps he's tired, he rested his chin on my head. This may seem better for him as he can be more relaxed but my neck hurts from trying to stand his head's pressure pressing down against me.

We arrived very quickly. I pushed him softly and reminded him: "We're here."

He seems unhappy. "Why so fast?"

"It's only two stations from the hospital!" I answered.

Getting down the car, Lance suddenly tried to hold my hands but I moved my hands away. His face turned cold and he glared at me, then he walked in front of me. I followed behind.

Entering the supermarket, I pushed a trolley and walked behind Lance. I noticed he didn't take anything from the racks, he just walked around casually.

I asked from his back: "Lance Mason, aren't you getting anything?"

He stopped walking and turned around, his face looked better than just now. "Get some vegetables and cook at home. I'm hungry." He pointed at the cabbage.

I remembered he hired servants and even cooks, why is he buying his own groceries?

"Why are you staring at me like that?" he asked, after seeing me not moving.

I chuckled awkwardly. "Hahaha, nothing. I just wanted to ask you what food you like."

He heard me asking me what he likes. What surprised me was he smiled awkwardly. What the hell? Is this the cold-blooded Lance Mason?

"Do you know how to prepare fish? I love fish." Lance asked.

I know how to steam and fry fish very well, because Leo loves eating fish. This pair of siblings are only different in terms of personality, what they like and their appearances are actually very similar.

Lance's calm behaviour and attitude sometimes make me thought it was Leo in front of me.

"Yes, I know. But not very tasty." I said to Lance. I knew what he wanted me to do, to cook meals for him. I'm a patient with high fever. I sighed.

Seems like I have to be his one day cook. I thought.

I walked to the fish area and picked a few fresh-looking fish. I plan to cook sweet and sour fish.

"What else do you want?" I asked after getting the fish.

A smile was plastered on his face. Strange enough he even helped me push the trolley. We looked like a couple buying groceries together.

## Chapter 39 My House

I blushed at the thought and internally scolded myself for having this kind of thoughts.

"What else do you know how to prepare?" he asked.

"A little bit of everything." I answered shortly.

"Then get a few crabs. When mother was still alive, she always made crabs for me and Leo."

This was the first time Lance mention his mother to me, in a good way.

Leo's name made my heart skipped a beat. I know Leo loves crab, so naturally I tried to learn how to prepare crabs too last time. I learned everything that Leo loves.

My mom got into a relationship with their father even right before their mother died, so of course Lance would blame my mom for their mom's death.

Perhaps, I should suffer for this. It's only natural for me to suffer for my mom's actions.

Lance wanted crabs, so we took 4 big crabs.

We took a few more different vegetables and went to the counter for bill. Lance suddenly asked me what I like to eat and told me to go get it too. I told him I'm not a picky eater, so I'm okay with the food we just chose.

The reason why I'm not a picky eater is because I was sent to stay at the school's hostel since middle school, I knew being a picky eater would naturally lead to more expensive meals, so ever since that time, I try to eat everything that's given to me.

Lance stared at me with disbelief: "What century are you living in? I can't believe there's still people out there who isn't picky with food. I thought 90s kids like you are all very picky eater....."

Seems like people have very huge opinions on the 90s kids.....

"Picky eaters are not according to age, only the rich pick what they eat, poor people eat what they have." I rolled my eyes.

He burst out laughing: "Don't bullshit, I know you don't like fish, pork ribs and beef, right?" he looked at me with confidence in his eyes.

He must have noticed this when we ate at the same table, that was because I knew he would judge me or insult me. He would not have eaten the food that I took.

I smiled and said: "I only like rice."

It's our turn to pay, so our conversation regarding picky eater stopped just like that.

I rushed forward to pay, Lance didn't have any cash with him. What he had in his wallet were all kinds of black cards. Of course the supermarket would allow us to use credit cards, but I was afraid of what people might think or look at us if he took out his black cards. I stopped

him before he could do anything and smiled at him. "We've known each other for 20 years, and have been eating and using Mason's money, why not let me pay for this?"

Lance stared at me in disbelief, he must think I've gone mad.

Under his disbelieving eyes, I took out my cash and paid for the grocery. Lance helped me carry some stuff and we exited the supermarket.

I stared at him with a weird look. "Why are you staring at me like that again?"

I chuckled softly. "I just felt so unbelievable."

"Why?" he asked.

"Because this is the first time you're being a gentleman towards me." I answered.

His face immediately turned dark after what I said. What the hell? How can he switch his mood so fast?

"Jennie Gomez, I'm being nice to you, don't try anything."

I nodded my head immediately. "Alright, sir, you're nice to me so I must be grateful."

I called a cab and we entered the cab after 2 minutes of waiting. At first I thought we would be heading to his mansion in the Pavilion Residence, instead he told the cab to head to my place.

I wanted to refuse, that's my little safe haven, I don't want him to ruin it. Plus there are a lot of me and Leo's memories inside, if he sees it, he would definitely destroy it!

"My house is very dirty, next time, alright?" I asked nicely.

Lance furrowed his brows and said: "Why are you acting like a man is hiding at your place?"

I sighed and looked out the window. Fine. Seems like there's no way I can stop this man.

I think about Leo and sighed once again. Fine, he's someone else's husband now, I should move on and not hold on anymore.

Reaching my place, Lance followed behind me, waiting for me to unlock my door.

The condo I rented has 2 rooms. Leo's stuff is locked inside a small room.

Lance entered my house casually and put down all the bags of groceries. He looked around my small condo, I could feel the judgment in his eyes. He's used to big mansions and luxurious life, of course he wouldn't like my place.

"Have a seat, I'm going to cook."

I started preparing the dishes. I don't feel like cooking, all I wanted to do was to lie in bed and rest.

I was cleaning up the crab when Lance burst into the kitchen with cold eyes and said: "Man came over!"

He wasn't asking me, he was stating it.

I lifted my eyes and looked at him. I was lazy to explain. "Many men came over, what are you trying to say?"

No matter who came, Lance Mason has no right to care about it.

"Did Leo come?" he asked.

I wasn't surprised. Of course he would ask me this question.

I looked at him straight in the eyes and said: "Yes, he used to stay here during his university breaks."

"hahaha..... no wonder." Lance laughed coldly. Then he added: "No wonder he didn't come home, he came to your place instead."

Lance suddenly approached me and came behind me. He hugged me from behind and lowered down his head. He put his head in my neck and sniffed. "Let me smell how seductive you are!"

## Chapter 40 Toy Replacement

Lance's lips touched my neck. He was gentle, but his behaviour terrified me, I wasn't sure if he would open his mouth and bite my neck at this point.

His lips moved downwards. Seems like my worry was extra.

"Aren't you hungry? I was going to cook!" I said. I haven't even recovered fully from my previous surgery, and after the terrifying incident last night, I don't think I was strong enough to handle anything today.

But this man obviously doesn't care that much about me.

He carried me up and walked out of the kitchen. He lowered his head towards mine and grinned: "Yes, I'm hungry, but not for food, for....."

He didn't even finish talking and threw me on my bed. Then, he came on top of me.

"What are you thinking about?" he stared straight into my eyes and asked.

His hands were everywhere: "You're lost in your own thought, did another man slept in this bed before?"

I stopped his hands with my hands and said: "I don't know what kind of bullshit you're saying, I'm hungry and I want to go cook, get up please."

Me and Leo slept on this bed before, but we only slept and didn't do anything else. So when Lance pressed against me on the same bed, I felt uncomfortable.

I tried to push Lance's body away, but I couldn't. He's a tall man with a proud height of 187cm plus he goes to the gym regularly. I glared at him after failing to push him away. "Get off."

"Jennie Gomez, did you forget your own place again? How dare you reject me?" Lance's true colours finally showed again, after half a day of pretending to be a gentleman.

"That's right, your true colour is out. Isn't this the real you, Lance?"

His eyes were shooting daggers at me at this point, like I killed his whole family.

He really didn't pity me at all. It was painful, very painful.

My eyes were empty, staring at the ceiling while he moved his body, doing what he wants with my body.

My tears wet my pillow.

Leo's brother was doing this to me fiercely, does he know? If he knew how his brother was treating me, would he regret not touching me?

I moaned out between my lips, like I have completely lost my mind. "Leo, I really love you. I love you so much."

The man on top of me stopped moving and move his lips away from mine. I opened my eyes a little and I pretended Lance was Leo.

I must have lost my mind, but they look so similar to each other.

I thought Leo moved away from me and I held onto his neck, but it was actually Lance's neck. I pressed his head down onto my chest and whispered gently: "Leo, take me, take me right here will you?"

\*slaps\*

I felt a huge slap across my face, it hurt.

The slap woke me up from my hallucination too, I opened my eyes completely and saw Lance on top of me, not Leo!

My tears rolled down again.

Lance's face was as cold as the tundra now, like he could freeze me to death any moment.

His bloodshot eyes glared at me hard. We stared into each other's eyes. When I opened my eyes and saw Lance, not Leo, I was disappointed. I think I must have shown my disappointment on my face and provoked Lance even further.

He put his hands in between my hair and pulled hard. My head lifted but my skin was pain.

He never treated me gentle at all. I glared at his face.

He looked like a hungry lion at this point, "Slut, who did you moan out for just now? I dare you to call out his name again."

I was in despair, but yet I laughed. I laughed out loud coldly.

I laughed in a high pitch, like a mad woman.

"I called Leo's name, my second brother. Lance, you two look a lot like each other don't you know that? Seeing your face makes me think for a split second that you are Leo. Every time we do it, I imagine you are Leo, so that I could at least feel a little better you know?"

I knew the consequences of saying this, I knew it, but either way he would make me suffer, so I didn't care anymore and tried to provoke him.

I know Lance loves Leo a lot, he's his only brother, Lance wouldn't go for him and instead, would shift his anger onto me.

Yes, I did provoke him. His hand raised up again to slap me, seeing the height of his raised hands, I knew how painful it's going to be. "You said I'm your toy, then you're my replacement for the man I love."

"I'm a toy, you're a replacement, hahahahaha....." I laughed like a woman from the asylum.

His hand never landed on my face. Instead, it turned into a fist and punched the pillow beside my face. It was a huge blow that I could even feel the wind.

He glared at my face for a long time, thousands of emotions exploding in those beautiful eyes of his. I wasn't sure anymore if it was anger I saw, or disappointment and despair that I saw in his eyes.

He didn't say anything and got out of the bed.

After a while, I heard the door banged shut. Good, Lance Mason left my house, good news to me.

Chapter 40 Toy Replacement

I picked up the blanket on the floor and covered my own body. Then I started sobbing.

What kind of life is this?.....



## Chapter 41 Like you?

I slept on the dirty bed for a day and a night, the next day, I had no strength at all. The bedsheet was stained with a little bit of blood. Lance was pretty harsh on me yesterday, he didn't care if he was hurting me at all.

When I tried to get out of bed, I fell on the ground the moment I took a step, my body was on fire.

I struggled to stand up and wobbled my way to the bathroom. I took a warm shower and got out. Then I went to the kitchen and threw the crabs and fish away. I didn't even have the mood to cook anymore, so I only had instant noodles. Wendy called me again and asked why I was absent, again.

I said I already informed Lance Mason. Wendy said it was Lance who asked her to call me. He said there were a lot of work waiting for me. All the sketches and papers.....

Didn't Lance know what he did to me? I couldn't even walk, let alone go to work.

I looked like I was raped by an animal, how could I go outside like this?

Wendy hung up after informing all the important things. I dialled Lance's number immediately. He picked up the phone after a few rang and asked, in an annoyed tone: "What?"

"I need some days off."

What came next was Lance's yelling: "Jennie Gomez, is this your family business? Who gave you the right to choose if you want to come to work or not? The office isn't your hotel, okay?!!"

I moved the phone away from my ear a little and calmed myself. "The office is not my family's, I don't even have a family, what are you even talking about? I know this company is yours that's why I asked you for permission. I'm wounded, I'm sick, I have fever and inflammation, I need to go to the hospital for drip-feeding again. If you are still interested in this human toy of yours, then allow me a few days off to rest."

I didn't lie, I really was sick.

Lance paused for a moment and asked: "The same hospital?"

He's always like that, hurt me deeply the day before and act like nothing happened the next day.

Always.

"No, I'm going to the gynaecologist."

Lance suddenly growled at me on the phone: "Are you pregnant? Going to abort?"

What the hell is with guys? Do all men think going to the gynaecologist means abortion?

I laughed coldly: "Thanks to you, my down there is wounded, okay?"

Lance's voice calmed down a lot. "Alright, come attend the company's party two days later."

I said okay and hung up. Then I went straight to the doctor. I got scolded for being so needy as woman and has no self control.

After one night, I felt much better. I thought about all the sketches, if I didn't go to work, then everything will fall onto Lawrence's shoulder.

Lawrence treats me really well, I couldn't be so selfish. I went to work after one day of rest instead of two.

Lance saw me at work and asked me curiously: "Didn't you apply for a few days off? Why are you back so soon?"

I didn't think about anything and answered him immediately. "If I don't come, then Lawrence has to do all my work, I feel bad."

"Hmph!" Lance scoffed unhappily.

I gave him a weird look and continued my work.

"Are you close with Lawrence?" Lance asked me in a husky voice.

Lance wouldn't do anything to Leo, but he would do something to Lawrence. I can't say anything wrong.

"We are colleagues, so we help each other at work." I answered.

Lance sat inside my office watching me, not leaving. He must have a bad memory. We just fought and he even beat me a few days ago, now he's acting like nothing happened.

After a while of working, my back was sore. I stood up and stretched my body while Lance rested his head on his hand and watched me.

I jokingly teased him. "Lance, if you keep watching me this way I would think that you have fallen for me."

Lance blushed slightly and moved his lips a few times, trying to explain, but he didn't say anything. Then, he said: "What?! Fall for you? What a joke, please look at yourself in the mirror."

I gave him a fake laugh and said: "I'm kidding, alright? I'm not as stupid as you think, if you like me, would u have given me to that old man?"

A flash of anger crossed Lance's eyes. In a blink it turned into sarcasm again. "So, be obedient, alright? If not, there are still a lot of old men waiting for you. Niklaus Sands won't be around to save your ass every time."

My face paled. I forced myself to act calm and replied: "Really? Then I shall wait. It's all the same, right? I sold myself to you, what's the difference with those men? I'm at fault for not mentally well-prepared last time, I will be prepared next time."

I noticed Lance's hands turned into fists, trying to contain his anger.

"Good girl, that's how you should think. Whores can't always think of ways to climb up the status stairs."

I stared at Lance and wanted to laugh. Does the public know this is how Lance speak to women behind everyone's back?

## Chapter 42 Droplet Necklace

During the company's party, Lance even joined his company branch's staff.

He's rich enough to give out very luxurious gifts for the 20 staff.

For the men's group, the first place comes with a Mercedes Benz sports car. The rest of the place also comes with cars too.

As for the female's group, the first place comes with a 2 million dollars luxurious condominium, the second place is also a house but cheaper, and the third place's prize was a 10 thousand dollars diamond necklace.

The necklace contains a pendant shaped like a droplet, and in the middle of it is diamond. It shines brightly under the light, all the female staff were eyeing the necklace and chatting excitedly about it.

To be honest, I'm a girl too so of course I would get excited seeing all these pretty necklace, but then I didn't want it, because the person giving this out was Lance Mason.

The award ceremony carried on and now it's the female group's turn. One of my colleagues eyed the necklace and turned to me excitedly. "Jennie, we help each other out later okay? Let's get those prizes back!"

I've never seen any company being so generous before. The estimation for the prizes here, I assumed, is nearly up to 100 million dollars! But of course, rich and powerful Lance wouldn't even care.

I shook my head: "I don't think I can make it." I sighed.

Then I picked up a glass of cocktail and stood beside, watching the ceremony.

The emcee spoke up: "Girls, girls! Now, let's not ruin our own image by fighting over prizes shall we? Let's make it a lucky draw."

Lance nodded and agreed. "Alright, not a bad idea."

A waiter then walked around, letting the female staff pick a number.

I casually took out a small piece of paper from the box.

The paper showed: 3, Droplet Necklace.

My colleague looked at my paper said jealously: "Wow, can't believe you get such a nice necklace."

I smiled at her and said: "Why not we exchange if you like?"

She tightened her grip on her little paper and refused: "Nah, I got a house, I don't want to pay for any rental, so I'm sticking to his."

It's obvious that although she likes my necklace, she prefers the house she got. Who wouldn't want a free house in an expensive city like this?

Lance started to give out the prizes, my colleague went up to collect her house keys. She looked so happy.

When my name was called, I walked up the stage, why didn't I feel excited? Since when did my luck become so good?

The emcee said: "Why don't our boss here put the necklace on Ms Gomez?"

The male staff down there started to cheer. "Yeah! Boss, put it on our gorgeous designer here!"

Everybody knew something was going on between me and Lance, they must have guessed that I'm his lover on bed.

I already heard a lot of rumours and gossips, I just chose to ignore it. I don't care what people say.

Lance looked me in the eye and patted my shoulder: "I found Ms Gomez from another company, she's a talented designer, I hope you can improve and work harder in the future." His words were formal. But to me, it sounded fake.

Lance took the necklace from the lady beside us. He then moved my hair away from my neck gently and put the necklace around my neck from the back. I didn't know why, but my heart started beating faster.

Lance suddenly lowered down his head towards my ear and whispered: "Do you like it?"

I froze. Then I turned around and look at him: "Thank you boss, I will work harder for the company!"

Lance chuckled and nodded. Then he patted me on the back. "I'm lucky to have a worker like you."

He said he's lucky to have me as a worker, not the company is lucky..... he must mean something.

## Chapter 43 Fiance

The people below the stage saw how Lance patted me and even helped me put on the necklace, they must have already guessed my relationship with Lance.

Why did I get the feeling that Lance was trying to ruin my reputation and image by giving me a necklace and treated me so close in front of the others? Was he trying to create rumours and hope I crush under the rumours?

I heard from mom 5 years ago that Lance had an arranged marriage with the daughter of a very powerful family. She's the third daughter of the Abel's Family. Her name is Tiffany Abel.

Tiffany must be studying in the UK now. I don't know much about her but mom mentioned that she's a few years younger than Lance, and that they will proceed to marry each other when she turns 26, which is soon.

If Lance still didn't let me off, then I would become the third wheeler of them.

Every paparazzi knew about this arranged marriage, he acted as if we were very close on stage..... didn't this mean he was trying to push me into hellfire?

Seems like he's scared that people don't know I'm his lover. Huh, funny. Then I have officially become a third wheeler. Great.

How could he be so mean? How?

Even if my mom was his father's mistress, how could he do this to me by making me like my mom?

Was he punishing me? He must be!

My colleague, Lindy, who got the house pointed at my necklace and said: "something is going on between you two."

"What something fishy? Isn't it obvious she's f\*cking around with the boss? Jennie, you're so lucky to be boss's woman, I envy you." Another colleague, Janet, spoke beside us.

I forced a laugh. "Lindy you got a house! What something fishy, I'm just lucky to have taken that piece of paper."

"Hmph!" Janet scoffed. "Who are you trying to bluff? You're obviously his lover." And with that she walked away with a glass in her hands.

Lindy patted my shoulder and said: "She's always like that, she gets jealous easily. Don't worry about her okay? She has a crush on boss for a long time already and even confessed, but boss has an arranged marriage and is from such a powerful family. So it makes sense that he didn't accept her."

I looked at Lindy, was he trying to pretend that she's comforting me? No. she's using another way to tell me that I'm a whore, a third wheel.

After the party, I tried to call a cab but Lace's car stopped in front of me and asked me to get in. I had no choice but to get in the car under

everyone's stare.

Lance told the driver to head to Pavilion Residences.

He touched the necklace on my chest and fiddled with the pendant. "You haven't answered me, do you like it?"

"of course, it's from boss." I answered sarcastically.

His face turned cold for a brief moment and he smiled again. He had a lot of drinks tonight, he reeks of alcohol. He let go of the pendant and carried me on his lap. He then rested his chin on my shoulder. "New Year's Eve is in a few days, tomorrow I need to attend a ball, then after that you go back home together with me, we spend New Years together."

He sounded as gentle and soft as a cotton candy, I could feel that Lance was in a good mood today.

"I'm asking you a question, why are you lost in your own thought again?" Lance bit my face. It wasn't painful, it was just like a tease between couples.

## Chapter 44 Go home

The driver was still in front, he could see us from the mirror, I felt a little uncomfortable.

Lance acted as if he wanted the whole world to know our relationship.

Would I die because of gossips one day?

Lance was unhappy with my behaviour and pinched my butt. I cried out.

"I..... I don't plan on going back this new years, it's fine here."

Due to my relationship with Lance, Leo's wedding, my mom, and the people from the Mason's family..... these are all the reasons why I didn't want to go back.

Lance turned my body around to face him and raised my chin. "Why not?"

I didn't know how to answer him. "No particular reason, I have always wanted to spend new years in another place. I have a few places in mind that I want to visit here."

I lied straight to his face. I didn't dare to look him in the eye and I blushed.

Lance, on the other hand, of course didn't believe me.

He stared at me, as if trying to read my mind.

"Is it because of Leo?" he asked. He was half right.

I didn't nod or shake my head. I answered him calmly: "No matter what, the Mason's isn't my family, am I right? Brother you reminded me many times, so....."

I haven't even finished speaking and he cut me off. "Hahaha..... not your family?"

He glared at me and said: "Not your family, yet you stayed and leech yourself onto tis family for so many years. Ungrateful woman."

He got angry and shoved me aside. I didn't have time to prepare and I fell from his lap and knocked my head on the window with a loud thud. It hurt so much my eyes reddened with tears.

The driver looked worried. "Ms Gomez, are you okay?"

I shook my head. "It's fine, no worries."

"None of your business! Drive your car!" Lance yelled.

I massaged my head and lowered down my head, not saying a word anymore.

My behaviour seemed to provoked Lance even further.

He grabbed my wrists and pulled me towards him again: "Why aren't you talking? If the family is not yours, then give us back all the food and money you used!"

I stared at him weirdly. Wasn't he the one who always reminded me that this family will never be my family?

Why was he so angry right now?

"I don't care, follow me back." Lance demanded.

"Lance Mason, you were the one who told me I will never be a part of the Mason's, why are you over-reacting now?" I asked carefully. I really don't understand this man.

"Am I?" he meant was he over-reacting, seems like he didn't want to admit.

"Aren't you? This isn't like you, Lance! are you sure you don't like me? If you like me you can just tell me, since I'm single now I'm ready for a relationship." I said to him.

My words made his ears red. He was speechless for a moment, staring at me just like that. Then he said: "Do you think I'm Leo? Don't you know I have a fiancé?"

I nodded my head and said: "Of course I know, I'm just kidding, Lance. I know even if all the men in the world like me, you wouldn't be one of them!"

Lance gave me a look and turned around, not saying anything anymore.



## Chapter 45 Dead of Alive

Humans are strange creatures. At least that's what I thought. Lance's behavior right now was making me confused. What was he trying to do to me?

I'm his toy that he's been playing with a while now, why wasn't he getting sick of me? Was he trying to stab me with a knife slowly?

But giving me to an old man, letting gossips cover me.....these are all invisible knives that stabbed me already!

We reached Pavilion Residence. Lance got out of the car first and I followed behind. He went up his stairs. I didn't know if I should follow, as his lower, I should. But I stood there in his living room, not moving.

Lance turned around and looked at me with annoyance. "Are you waiting for m to carry you up?"

I sighed and followed him.

We were in this middle of the stairs when he suddenly turned around and carried me in his arms. I was surprised. "What are you doing?"

"You! Isn't that obvious?" Lance answered me coldly, looking at me in his arms.

I'm always impressed at how Lance can say such dirty things in such a formal tone.

He put me down on his huge bed and immediately came on top of me, unbuckling his belt.

"I don't feel well today, I'm having my period." I said.

My words seemed to upset him, he raised an eyebrow and asked: "Really?"

It was obvious he didn't believe me.

My stomach was having cramps, so I assumed my period was coming soon, I've never had an accurate period.

I nodded: "Yes, it should be here by today."

Lance looked at my face. I didn't look like I was lying but he was still having doubts. he inserted one of his hands into my pants.

I used my other hand to stop him and yelled angrily: "What the hell, Lance!"

He pulled my pants away and opened my legs wider, he touched me down there and asked: "Didn't you say you have your period? Where? Where it is?"

He asked sarcastically.

I just knew it was coming, I have symptoms all the time, I couldn't be wrong.

"It's coming real soon, can you not touch me? If you do me during this time, it would hurt my body! Wait for a few days."

Lance didn't even care about it. He continued unbuckling his belt:

"Do you think I would care about your body? Are you kidding me?"

Yea, who am I kidding? I should have known.

He grinned evilly and said: "I heard that when girls are on their period, their hole get tighter and will make us men feel better. I've never tried it, so let's do it."

And with that, he opened my legs even wider and inserted himself into me.

Without any foreplay, which means he didn't even get me wet and pushed himself inside my body.

Pain shot through me like bullets. I cried out in pain.

He's an animal, cold-blooded animal.

He moved his body and bit my lips at the same time, not letting me cry out in pain.

The sweat from his forehead dripped onto my lips, making feel grossed out.

I've never felt so much hatred for a person in my life!

I was so in pain but I couldn't scream, I could only cry. I watched the man on top of me, memorizing his every expression.

The pain that he put me through now, I will make him pay twice the price.

.....

The next day, all I could felt was stomach cramps..... I recalled Lance's hard breathing and my own voice, begging him to stop.

But nobody cared for my pain, he kept on moving and moving inside me.

This, this is my life!

When I woke up, the sky was already bright. My abdomen was in pain, and someone put a pad down there.

Suddenly, someone knocked on the door and asked: "Ms Gomez, can I come in?"

It was Lance's servant.

I moved my lips and voiced out. "Come in." my voice was hoarse.

The servant came in with breakfast in her hands. "Ms Gomez, here's your breakfast, this is from sir."

I stared at the breakfast but I didn't have any appetite. I thought about the pad and wanted to asked if she was the one who helped me put on. But then I thought, of course, period is blood and Lance must think it's dirty, he wouldn't help me put it.

"Alright, I'll eat it, you may leave."

I stood up from the bed and my abdomen hurt even more. This time it was a lot. Must be because of the abortion surgery plus the sex last night.

I went to the bathroom and changed to a night use pad. I was already soaked in cold sweat by that time.

I forced myself to eat the hot porridge a little and had the servant cleaned it up for me.

The servants told me to rest well and even served lunch to my room. They told me that Lance would be back at night.

With shivering body, I went back to the bed and hid under the blankets, recalling the nightmare yesterday.

I wanted to live peacefully, but the devil doesn't want to grant me that wish.

I recalled the novel I once read when I was still in university. It is about a bad boy CEO and a girl. He made the girl miscarry three times and even nearly had someone rape her. She wanted to get her revenge but in the end her heart softened. Later, the CEO regretted and treated her better and in the end, the girl forgave him.

If me and Lance are in the novel, there would be no forgiveness between us, only hatred for each other.

Lance would never love me, and I would never love him either.

Why not, I play a death or alive game with him?

It doesn't have to be me who die, right?

Since Lance Mason was the one who started the game, then I shall end it.

I got excited thinking about it.

Then after a long time I only realized I was crazy, not excited.

I bit my teeth and struggled to get out of bed, I walked out of the bedroom and looked around to see if there's any hidden camera.

Hmm, no, I didn't see any.

## Chapter 46 Bipolar

Lance just moved into this mansion not long ago, I figured he hasn't got the time yet. He must have the Lay Water Park project files in his mansion here. I stared at his study room and my brain started to think hard.

I peek down stairs and made sure all the servants are doing their jobs and not watching me.

Then I sneaked into his study room and sat down on his chair. I pulled my sleeve so that it covered my fingers and switched on Lance's computer.

It was locked, so I tried the password he told me for his phone last time, 9183.

Wrong, I tried his birthday, and it was wrong too, Leo's birthday didn't make it also. A brain cell clicked and I put in Lance mother's phone number. I know he loves his mother a lot.

I was right! The computer unlocked and I clicked into every file that I could see. Sure enough, I found the file about the project.

Lance saved his rough ideas and planning in his computer but there wasn't much details. I scrolled through the whole thing and tried to memorise the important details.

My memory is very good, so I was able to remember the important stuff with just a look.

Just when I was about to quit, I noticed an unnamed file in his laptop. Since I had the time, why not have a look?

I clicked into the file and what popped up was a video. It was of a man and a girl doing it..... I recognised the man. He's one of the officers in the government sector. If not mistaken, he was also one of the important people for this project.

I knew this is how business works, but I didn't know Lance would use this method too.

Then I thought about it, if he could already send me into another man's bed, what can't he do?

I emailed the video to my own mail and deleted the history. Then I switched off his computer.

I went back to his bedroom with a shaking heart. I've seen the video and the details. I knew if I tell all of these to his opponent, they will know what Lance had been planning.

Lance sacrificed a lot of projects for this Lay Water Park. Let's just say this water park would be the Mason's Company's future 10 years' investment.

If this project fails, it would be a huge blow to Lance and his family.

That's why Lance Mason tried to get the video of the officer, so if the project falls into Niklaus' hands, he can use this video to threaten the officer.

I never expected Lance to be so fierce to even plan to threaten the officer from the government.

Should I be a good person and let the officer now about it?

I lied in the bed for a long time, considering about this. Then I decided to just tell Niklaus Sands about it and it will be none of my business anymore.

They will be starting this project after the New Years Festival, so I sent everything to Niklaus, hoping that he would prepare in advance.

When Lance came back, I was already asleep. When I woke up, I saw him beside me.

In a low voice, he asked: "Are you feeling better?"

"Thanks to you, no. But still alive." I smiled bitterly.

Looking at his fake smile, I thought to myself, 'You can't be happy this long, once you know that you are going to lose this billion dollar project, let's see you smile'.

One day, I will make you pay.

I guessed, since Lance was able to record one video of the office, he must have more. Then I should let the ones in power to go against him and I watch beside.

He must have never even thought that I would do this to him, for revenge. He must think that I have let my guard down around him.

My sarcasm upset him. "Since you're all good, come down for your meal." He said coldly.

I followed him down, the dinner was full of dishes to help make my body feel better.

I ate a few and stopped. I didn't feel like eating.

Lance noticed me putting down my cutlery and asked: "Not to your taste?"

I shook my head and answered him: "No, I just don't feel like eating."

"Let's go see the doctor." he demanded the servants to call the family doctor to come over.

"There's no need for that." I said immediately.

"If you're sick, you need to see the doctor." Lance insisted.

I recalled the few times previously, where he would hurt me then tried to treat me well the next day.

"Why are you staring at me?" Lance asked curiously.

"I noticed an odd pattern" I said.

He raised an eyebrow and asked: "What pattern?"

"I noticed every time you hurt me, you treat me well the next day. Lance, are you bipolar?"

"PIAK!" Lance smashed his spoon loudly on the table.

"Jennie Gomez, who gave you the guts to speak to me like that?" I didn't realize what I said would brought such a huge response.

I shrugged my shoulders. "Then pretend I didn't say anything." I stood up and leave. I guessed I must have slept too much during the day, because I couldn't sleep at night.

## Chapter 47 The hospital again

Lance came in the room near midnight, he must have been in his study room. I worried for myself, I wondered if he noticed I went in?

But I was pretty sure I deleted every history and made sure I didn't move anything in his room. I tried to convince myself that he wouldn't find out about it.

Lance came out of the bathroom after he took a shower and laid beside me on the bed. He pulled me into his arms and kissed my neck. His voice entered my ears, it was low and husky. "What haven you been doing the whole day?"

His question actually made me afraid. Did he somehow notice that I went into his study room?

"What can I do? I just lay around in bed due to period cramps." I answered him.

"You're still in pain?" Lance put his hands on my abdomen and massaged me, how sweet.....

Haha.....

"Hm." I answered simply.

"You always get period cramps?" he asked.

"No."

He seemed to be unhappy with my attitude and removed his hands from my abdomen. He then turned his back to me.

After a while, I got up and he asked in an annoyed tone: "What now?"

"Sorry." I apologised awkwardly. He turned back facing me and raised an eyebrow: "Why are you apologising?"

I pointed at his butt and said: "My blood stained your pants, change it."

He got out of bed and looked at his own pants. He furrowed his brows in annoyance. "Why is there so much blood?"

I bent down in pain and said: "I also don't know, today's amount equals to a few months of my period."

Lance knew something was off and shouted: "To the hospital, now!"

I stared at him, his worried face surprised me. Is this the Lance Mason I know?

"What are you staring at? Change your clothes and let's go!" He said, while taking off his boxers and pants in front of me.

"No need, it will pass after a few days. Women's body is just like that. That's why we need to take care of our bodies." It's late, I didn't feel like going out again.

Lance clicked his tongue, irritated. "I say, let's go, stop talking nonsense."

And just like that, I was brought to the hospital by Lance. The

gynaecologist asked me, straight away in front of Lance: "Did you have sex the day before?"

I blushed hard and didn't look up at her. I didn't know what to say. Lance explained for me: "Yes, we did it a few times, did it hurt her?"

The doctor glared at Lance and said: "How old are you guys? Don't you know women can't have period sex? Its either going to lead to infection or her uterus would be injured, this will greatly affect her ability to get pregnant!"

"Ability to get pregnant?" Lance asked immediately, his voice raised. I stared at him in surprise. Why does he care about my abilities to get pregnant?

"What do you think, Mr? You should take care of your wife more, don't have sex during these times!" the doctor said, she looked a little angry.

I wanted to explain that I'm not his wife, I'm just his lover. Have you ever seen a husband treating his own wife like that?

Lance got scolded by the doctor and remained silent.

The doctor gave me some meds and told me I needed drip-feeding. I was infected.

Lance ordered the nurse to bring me to the VIP ward. Just when I was on my way, I heard Lance asking the doctor about my pregnancy matters.

I wasn't able to hear what the doctor told him.

I laid in the bed and the nurse helped me with the drip. Lance entered after a while and sat beside my bed. His phone was in his hands, but he didn't use it. He stared at the air and did nothing.

The room was strangely quiet.

I looked out the window, at the round moon.

"These few times that we did it, did you take your pills? Don't get pregnant." Lance suddenly spoke up. I turned back to face him and saw how pale his face was. He must be tired too, as the CEO of such a huge company. He's been getting very less sleep lately.

And for the Lay Water Park, he's been coming to and from among the officers.

"Don't worry, I won't get pregnant." I answered.

"You took the pills last time and got pregnant? How do you know you wont get pregnant this time?" he raised his voice.

I got more and more confused about him.

"Even if I get pregnant, I will abort. So don't worry about me trying to get your money." I said calmly.

"hahaha....." Lance laughed coldly. "The doctor said your IUD was done at a small clinic, and it was done badly. So please do it in the hospital, I will pay for it."

"Although I really can't bring myself to like you, I will still pay for this



kind of things. Just don't try anything silly. I can't possibly ask you to kill my child again if this sh\*t happens again, right?" Lance added.

"Don't worry, no matter how bad the consequence is, I don't care if it means not getting pregnant ever again, if I got pregnant with your child, I will abort it." I said harshly, it's the truth.

Lance glanced at me and walked towards the window. He opened the window and the cold breeze blew on me. He must have done it on purpose.

I hid myself under the blankets.

I saw Lance calling someone and lowered his voice: "Sam, come in."

Sam is Lance's driver for many years. He came into my room after a while and looked at Lance. "Boss, you need anything?"

Lance asked, his voice emotionless: "You have any cigarettes?"

Sam answered: "Yes..... but it's all cheap ones, I'll go get nice ones for you, boss."

Lance waved his hands. "It's fine, give it to me."

Sam handed it to him and left us alone in the room.

Lance lit his cigarettes and came sat beside me. He smoked and squinted his eyes at me.

I can't stand the smell and the smoke, so I started coughing: "Lance, what the hell?" he knew that I can't stand it. What a bastard!

"Leo smokes too, do you treat him like that?" he asked instead.

Yes, Leo smokes too, but he never smokes in front of me, except the one time when he broke up with me.

I pinched my nose and scrunched up my face. "You send me here, then smoke in front of me, are you trying to kill me?" I asked, then I called him out softly. "Lance!"

"I want you to.....to....." Lance stood up, he looked a little triggered, then he paused and walked towards the window. He looked out and with a calm voice he answered me: "I want you to die slowly."

I stare at his back, his handsome posture. This man is many women's dream, rich and powerful.

But instead, he's someone I truly hate! I didn't want his money, or his status.

What is my interest in him? His life! I want him to die!

## Chapter 48 England

I pulled out the tube in my hands and picked up a chair beside me. I walked towards him slowly at his back. If I smash this on his head, he would die, right?

I lifted the chair, but put it down again. I couldn't do it!

If he die, I would go to jail.....

"What? Just like that?" he asked, still looking out, his voice oddly calm.

The reflection from the window showed a man, tall and looking out, and a woman with a petite body, shorter than the man nearly a head.

I put the chair behind him and touched his shoulder. "You must be tired, sit."

Lance tilted his head and glanced at me with the corner of his eyes. he finished his smoke and carried me to my bed. Then, he pressed the bell.

The nurse came in and helped me inject the needle and drip again.

"One more time of injection, aren't you pained?" Lance asked me, while helping me pull the covers over my body. Then he touched my face.

I smiled at him and said: "This is nothing to me."

I mean something else in my words.

Lance gave me a lopsided grin and didn't say anything. He took out another cigarette but didn't light it. He just put it between his lips.

Such a precious moment, a moment of peacefulness between us.

Out of nowhere, he asked me about my student life.

"How many times have you dated?" what a weird question.

I laughed bitterly and answered him: "Mr, one needs time for relationships."

He didn't get what I mean.

"You didn't have time to date in university? Why was my university life so relaxing?" he asked.

"Of course your life was relaxing, I'm different. I had to work to pay for my tuition fees and my cost of living."

Lance raised an eyebrow. "Are you kidding? Didn't you take a lot of money from the family to pay?"

"Lance, did you forget what you did?" I lived a sad university life, unlike the rest of the people. It was very depressing.

"What did I do?" Lance asked with an innocent face that seemed to say: don't try to blame me for things I didn't do.

I reminded him: "When I was still in high school, you were already the master of the house. Don't you remember? You told your father it's time for me to handle my own life and stop leeching off your family, so you cut off all my expenses."

He seemed to recall this incident and his ears reddened. "Really, I must have forgotten..... are you blaming me or the family?"

I quickly fake a laugh. "Of course not, the Mason's is not my family, Lance you are not anyone to me, so you don't have to pay for my anything, right?"

Lance nodded his head in agreement, he seemed to be satisfied with my answer. "Yeah, no matter what, you should also be grateful that my family still took care of you when you were a kid."

What does he mean? Grateful?

"Yes, I will." I answered.

"But how come I've never seen your act of appreciation towards the family?"

I stopped for a brief moment and teased: "Why not you dig my heart out and see if it's grateful?"

His face turned dark. "I already know your heart must be black in colour."

I touched his chest and stared right into his eyes. "If my heart is black, is yours black too? People always say, never blame the younger generations for what their older generations did, I was only five, what did I know? What did I do to you to make you treat me so badly? Until now, you're still making me suffer, treating me like a dog. Isn't your heart black too?"

Lance lowered down his gaze. He pressed his hands above my hands, as if wanting me to feel his heart beat.

"Jennie Gomez, tell me honestly, do you hate me?"

"hahaha....." was he kidding me?

"Lance, in my eyes, you've always been a very formal person. So please don't throw me these funny jokes." I said. Anyone could see how much I hate this man, there's no point lying to him.

Lance must know too, he's not dumb.

Lance's eyes flickered and he pulled my hands away and said jokingly: "So what if you hate me, what can you do?"

I sighed in disappointment and agreed. "True, what can I do? This is a world where the rich bullies the poor."

After the drip-feeding was done, we called a cab and went back. We were both tired so we took off our clothes and lay in bed together. But once I got in bed, my sleepiness went away. I moved my head onto Lance's chest and asked: "I hope to visit England. Why not you bring me there? Don't secret lovers always get to travel with their boss? I'm such a failed lover!"

Lance must find my sudden change of attitude weird and raised an eyebrow: "Didn't you say you hate me? This is not how you should be acting if you hate me. Why do I get the feeling of you trying to act cute for me?"

"I said it, I hate you, but I can't do anything, then I shall try to love

you. Although I'm not a supermodel, but I'm still beautiful. I know you have a fiancé, but I don't mind being your secret love affair." I bullshit.

Lance obviously didn't believe me.

"Jennie Gomez, what are you plotting? Why do I get a bad feeling?"

I acted innocent and said: "I just want to visit England, and I'm not rich, so I'm hoping my boss would bring me there, no?"

Lance must have got weirded out by my sudden sweet attitude.

I think he's weird lately, he must think I'm weird too.

Niklaus told me Lance had been doing a lot of transfers to England. He moved a lot of his wealth there. He's working in the States and sometimes in Europe, never in England, so why was he doing this? He must have done something dirty.

"Why, not willing to spend a little on the trip? Then what about giving me a little money? I'll travel alone." I shook his arms, trying to act like a child. I realized if I acted tough, he would be tough back, I needed to change to a softer tactic.

"Why do you want to visit England?" Lance stared straight into my soul with observing eyes.

## Chapter 49 Secret Lover?

I actually regret after speaking. I saw Lance's schedule, he would be heading to England in a few weeks time, I should have brought this up when he is preparing to fly, not now. He would have even thought to bring me there for business.....

Now that I brought it up so early, it felt a little bit on purpose.

I looked at his observing eyes and forced a smile: "If you're not willing to spend this money on me, then fine."

Then I tried to leave him but he pressed onto my waist, making sure my head was still on his chest. "You said you don't mind being my secret love affair?"

He stared at me with a strange look, I didn't know what was going on in his mind at this moment.

He must have believed that I said I would try to like him..... Maybe he thought I don't mind selling myself to him.

I laughed dryly and said: "I was kidding, if you got married and still wouldn't let me go, of course I would still be your secret lover no matter if I want it or not."

"Hm true. Jennie, now I realized how adaptive you are, you know your own place." I wasn't sure if he was really complimenting me or being sarcastic.

He played with my hair, combing his fingers between my hairs. "I'll be heading to England in a few weeks, if you want, you can follow me!"

Lance agreed to bring me there too, I felt a little bit excited, like I'm one step nearer to improvements.

But what I didn't know is, there's a bigger storm waiting for me at the back.

Lance's hands played with my hair, and slowly moved to my face, then moved downward. What the hell was he thinking? I just came back from the hospital, was he trying to send me to hell?

"Where's your necklace? Why aren't you wearing it?" Lance touched my neck, not happy.

I remembered that I took it off this morning, he just noticed it now. Although the necklace is very beautiful, but it was really hard for me to like it.

"The necklace is too expensive, I've never seen anything so expensive, I was afraid that I might lost it so I kept it." I tried to explain.

Lance rolled his eyes. "What a country girl. It's just a necklace, how expensive can it be? Put it on tomorrow."

I nodded my head. "Okay, next time, give me more luxurious gifts, like branded bags or houses or cars, then I can become those elegant women." Of course if Lance Mason gifts me those stuff I would want it, it can be changed to money!

Lance stared at me speechlessly, he must have thought I'm no

different than those women out there, gold-digger.

When I woke up the next day, there was nobody beside me already. He must have gotten up long time ago, since I couldn't feel any warmth on the sheets.

I picked up my phone. I was near 9am so I got up and washed up. I went downstairs and met the butler. "Mr Mason is jogging outside, can Ms Gomez call him back for breakfast?" he asked, very responsible man.

I said okay.

There's a huge man-made lake outside the mansion, I saw Lance jogging around the lake. I walked out and towards him. I yelled: "Lance Mason, stop jogging, time for breakfast!"

Under the morning sunlight, Lance smiled at me through the slight fog and nodded. He jogged towards me, out of breathe and sweating like there's no tomorrow. I took out a packet of tissue papers from my pocket and handed it to him. He didn't take it, so I tip-toed and helped him wipe away the sweat on his forehead, gently patting his face. He didn't move away, allowing me to help him.

"See how wet you are, did you run a lot?" I asked, while still wiping his sweat.

Lance lowered his head a little more, giving me more access of his sweaty head and neck. His voice was hoarse: "Yeah, I jogged 12 rounds, I wanted to jog more but you're here. When we're free, you come with me, your body is too weak, always heading to the hospital."

My body? Weak? Who made me go to the hospital again and again? But I didn't say anything, I just gave him a slight smile. "Alright, sure."

Then, Lance and I headed back to the mansion, with his hand on my waist.

After breakfast I accompanied him to the mall.

I thought he was going to bring me back to Denmark, since tomorrow will be New Year's Eve.

"What do you need? Oh wait, the family would have bought everything, don't worry about it." I said to Lance, who was driving.

"What do I need to buy? Can't I get other stuff in the mall?" he asked.

When we reached the mall, Lance hold my hands and brought me to luxurious clothing stores. Seems like what I said last night worked, he's here to buy me clothes.

Well, he had his own explanation for that: "What you always wear is a disgrace to the Mason's Family, how can you wear that to celebrate New Year's? I'm buying you new clothes so you can wear it during the family gathering."

I held his arms in mine and nodded: "Thank you, brother!"

Lance stopped in his tracks and gave me a very weird look. "Jennie Gomez, don't you think you're over-acting?"

## Chapter 50 Shopping

"Hm? Are you serious? Isn't it better for both of us that I'm more obedient? Don't you think that every time I don't obey you I end up in the hospital?" then I added: "I would like us to interact peacefully, not always fighting each other, what do you think?"

I squinted my eyes at him with a grin on my face.

"You don't hate me anymore?" Lance asked.

I think for a moment and answered: "It's not that I don't hate you anymore, I just don't want to hate anymore. You don't know when you treat me well like right now, I don't hate you at all."

Lance glanced at me with suspicion. "You, woman, are full of plots and twists, don't think I would trust you after a few words like that."

I acted like a child and said sweetly to him: "Hey, even if I'm full of intentions and plots, what can I do? Who are you and who am I? I'm not born with golden fingers, and I wasn't born into a good life."

"What golden fingers?" Lance didn't understand what I meant.

I explained patiently to him: "There's this slang people use on the internet, which means you kinda get like a super power, and whatever you do will be successful and rich."

Lance is 8 years older than me, he wouldn't know these internet slang as well as I do.

Perhaps I made him really satisfied with my behaviour, he bought 30 thousand dollars worth of stuff for me, bags and clothes, all in one day. I've never worn anything so expensive in my life.

I have a very nice body figure and I'm also considered tall, so whatever I wear, it suits be well. If I see the satisfied face of Lance when I change, then the next thing I know was him paying for the clothes.

When we were in the middle of shopping, I suggested going for lunch as I was still on my period and I'm tired.

But Lance felt like going to the jewellery shop, so I had no choice but to follow.

I never like these kind of accessories, Leo gave me one last time and I cried for days when it broke.

Lance asked me what I like, he wanted to buy a few for me so that I can wear different ones. The ones he looked at all cost up to a few hundred thousands. If I change all of this into money, I can survive for the rest of my life without working!

"These are all too expensive, I don't want it." I purposely said, while I stare at a diamond bracelet.

Lance's eyes were like eagles, he noticed and told the staff: "Get that diamond bracelet out."

The staff took it out and Lance put it on me. As I have very fair skin, it looked very beautiful on me.

The staff immediately complimented me: "Miss, this suits you so

well!"

I stole a glance at Lance and smiled: "What do you think, Lance?"

"Do you like it?" he asked me back.

I nodded my head. "Yes, I love it!"

"Get me the same series necklace." Lance told the staff.

The staff got excited and rushed off to get it for him. She must be so happy, the commission for this series is most probably her usual's annual commission amount.

Lance pointed at a diamond ring in the glass cabinet and asked: "You like this?"

I pretended to look at it carefully and nodded. "So beautiful, I like it but it's too expensive, you already spent so much on me, so let's not buy it."

Lance patted my face and said: "If you like it, just take it, its not THAT much money."

Then, Lance spent nearly a million dollars on the bracelet, ring and necklace. I put it on and acted very happy. From the corner of my eyes, I noticed Lance's gaze, it was filled with judgmental looks.

I thought, Lance is too arrogant and cocky to know me.

I don't like diamonds, I like rubies and emeralds. The one Leo gave me was ruby. There's only a small series of rubies in this store. Although the one Leo gave me was cheap, but it was something that I love and appreciate very well, because it reminded me of something beautiful.

"You like it?" Lance asked beside me. I took one last glance at the ruby and said: "No, these are cheap ones, I don't like it. I prefer diamonds."

Lance raised my wrists and said: "These diamond bracelet suits you, rubies don't."

He didn't mean anything, but he reminded me of Leo..... maybe me and Leo are not meant for each other, he doesn't suit me.....

We ate a little in the western food restaurant, then Lance drove us back. In the car, I touched my diamond bracelet happily.

When we stopped at the red light, Lance looked at me and scoffed: "Seems like you're not any different."

I know what he meant, he was looking down on me, he must think I'm like mom, gold-digger.

I continued playing with the bracelet on my wrist and said: "Women are the same, tell me which woman you know that doesn't like any of these?"

Lance didn't speak anymore and we headed back to his mansion. "Pack your stuff, we leave at 3pm later."



## Chapter 51 Back to Denmark

I knew I couldn't escape this, I had to go back and face Leo and his family.

When we were in the plane, Lance started doing his work on his laptop. I had nothing to do so I started sketching him. I sketched Lance Mason while he was working, but I didn't put in all my effort. My only put in all my heart when I'm drawing Leo Mason.

I wrote: happy new year, Lance Mason.

I touched his hands and he put down his papers. He looked at me with annoyance. He doesn't like it when people disturb him while he's working, but I know.

I quickly handed him the drawing before he got mad and said: "Since you gave me so many stuff, I'll give you one too. Although it isn't worth any money, but I drew it myself."

I flashed a pretty smile at him.

He took the drawing and looked at it. I drew him while he's working, with his head low. They always said men are the most handsome when they focus on work, and yes I admit, he was really handsome just now.

I observe his facial expressions and noticed a quick smile, it was gone after a second. I knew he was satisfied with it.

"Do you think I would like this kind of gifts?" Lance put down the drawing on the table.

His behaviour showed that he didn't like it.

I pouted my lips: "You're so rich, so I thought you wouldn't like anything that can be bought by money."

Lance picked up the drawing again and stared at it. "Not bad, I'll keep it." Then he put it inside his file.

Our time in the plane was still pleasant, I guess.

When we landed, it was Leo who came to pick us up. My heart didn't even beat faster anymore seeing him. I was still walking beside Lance and the moment I saw Leo, I slowed down and walked behind Lance. Lance noticed and glared at me.

Then, he walked up towards Leo and gave his brother a big hug, they must miss each other a lot.

They let go and spoke to each other while I stood awkwardly beside them.

Leo saw me and was awkward too, we didn't know what to say to each other and just stood there.

Lance broke the silence and said: "Let's go back, what are you guys standing here for?"

Chapter

Leo looked at me, who was standing behind lance and smiled at me. "Jennie, you seem to have slimmed down. Did you only work and not eat?" he walked pass Lance and helped me carried my luggage. Then he

touched my head: "Why aren't you happy that I came to pick you up, why the sad face?"

He touched my head, like how he used to back then. My heart started to beat faster and I stared at him. My hands were sweating.

"Err Uhm...." Lance faked a cough at us coldly.

I pulled myself back from my thought and glanced at Lane. His eyes were warning me. "Give me my luggage, I can carry it myself." I said to Leo.

But Leo didn't care and pulled it behind him. He then said with a low voice: "Second brother is still second brother, I never changed."

He said he never changed.

Haha..... but he has a wife and a son now, how can he still be the Leo that loved me?

Lance walked away and towards the arrival hall, he was obviously angry already. He would punish me in private, I know it.

Leo held my hands and pulled me along, I wanted to shrug his hands off but I missed the feeling of it. But I can't be like this, he's married.

After a few moments of internal struggling, I pulled my hands away and said: "Brother, this isn't right."

Then I pulled my own luggage back from him.

We reached his car and got in. I sat at the back. I expected Lance to sit beside Leo but he didn't, instead he got on beside me. I was really scared that Leo would find out about my dirty relationship with Lance and look down on me.

Leo was also stunned why Lance chose to sit at the back, he turned around and told Lance: "Brother, come sit beside me, I want to talk."

Lance leaned against the seat and massaged his head: "Talk later, I want a nap."

Then he closed his eyes and pretended to take a nap.

Leo turned around and looked at me with a surprised smile: "Brother seems different."

I laughed awkwardly: "Yeah, hahaha....."

I knew what he meant, everyone in the family knew how much Lance hated me, but he chose to sit beside me in the car, this must have surprised Leo.

Leo tried to talk to me a little in the trip home, and I knew Lance wasn't asleep, because he used one leg to step on me, warning me to not speak to Leo that much.

## Chapter 52 Divorced!

Arriving at the Mason's Mansion, Mrs Mason was already by the door. Her eyes reddened when she saw Lance. She must have missed him a lot.

Lance respects and loves his grandma a lot too. I'm pretty sure that Mrs Mason and Leo Mason are the 2 most important people in his heart.

Mom saw me and smiled. He pulled me over to greet Uncle Mason and Mrs Mason.

Mrs Mason gave me a cold shoulder while Uncle Mason gave me a cold smile.

Then, I pulled my own luggage to my small room. Every room in his mansion has a heater, except for my room. I sighed.

Suddenly, I thought of Lia. Why didn't I see her and her son? During this New Year's time, Lia's personality would be trying to show off her new-born son and husband! Where was she?

Mom came into my room just when I was thinking about Lia. "Why are you here? Everyone is outside, if you're in here alone, Mrs Mason would think you're lazy."

I lifted my eyes to look at mom, she was in makeup and still gorgeous, but her slight wrinkles couldn't cover the fact that she's getting older.

"From today onwards, don't care about me. Just care for yourself." I said to her harshly.

Mom yelled at me: "Is this how you speak to your own mother?"

"haha....." I laughed out bitterly. "You still remember that you're my mom, not my stepmom?"

My mom slapped me across my cheeks.

"Jennie, no matter how angry you are at me, you still need to remember that I was the one that made sure you're alive!"

I glared at her with ice-cold eyes. She suddenly looked guilty and raised her hands to touch me. I slapped her hands away and pointed at the door. "Get the hell out." I yelled.

"Jennie, why are you yelling at your mom like that?" Leo suddenly came into my room.

Mom saw Leo and immediately smiled. "Leo, this room is cold, you were just sick a few days ago."

Leo smiled back at mom and said: "Karen, I want to speak to Jennie, can I?"

Mom nodded and smiled at me. "Jennie, your brother wants to talk to you, then I'll leave you two siblings alone."

Mom left and closed the door. Leo came and sat on my bed. He then touched my face, which was swollen and red.

I moved out of his touch.

He sighed and said: "Jennie, I heard you and your mom fighting, you never speak to her like that, what's wrong?"

I stood up, not wanting to be on the same bed as him, as it felt wrong.

"Brother, can you leave? You're a married man, you shouldn't enter my room."

Leo stood up from my bed and walked towards me. He raised his hands and wanted to grab my shoulder, but in the end, he didn't.

"Jennie, I..... I'm divorced."

These few words were like lightning, it struck on my heart. I stared at him in shock, he became blurry in my vision. I stepped back in shock, my lips moving but no words came out.

I stared at Leo with wide eyes.

Leo suddenly approached me and grabbed my shoulder, stopping me from stepping back. He stared into my eyes, as if he has decided to explain to me everything. He gulped and said: "Jennie, I divorced Lia Sanderson. I know I shouldn't tell you, but I feel the need to let you know. There wasn't any one night stand at all, I was so drunk that night, how can I even have sex with her? The next day I woke up, Lia was beside me. After a few months she came to me and told me she's pregnant with my child. Jennie, you know I'm a doctor, I can't just kill a child. And when the child was born, he had golden blonde hair and green eyes, then Lia told me the truth. She had sex with a few men, but she woke up beside me, so she decided to lie and said that child is mine. We never did anything....."

It made sense, how could a very drunken man even get hard?

My eyes reddened. My mom slapped me hard yet I didn't even have tears.....

I wanted to cry right now, I really wanted to, why is this so dramatic?

I bit my lips hard, telling myself not to cry. I could taste my own blood.

Leo's face fell when he saw my blood. He looked at me with love and said: "Jennie, don't do this to yourself, it breaks my heart seeing you this way."

"Why?! Why, why do you have to tell me that you didn't f\*ck Lia, the child isn't yours? What does this have to do with me? Who gave you the right to tell me these? I don't want to know, I don't want to know at all!" I cried. "Get out of my room! LEAVE!" I screamed.

I pushed Leo, but he didn't move at all. I started to cry. Leo pulled me into his hug tightly and said: "No, Jennie, I won't go out. It's all my fault. Jennie, my fault for making you sad!"

The man I love, pressing me against his chest, telling me again and again that it's his fault. It's our fault. We both did our own mistakes.....

## Chapter 53 No, not at all

I know very clearly that it's impossible for us to be together ever again. If I didn't give my body to Lance, perhaps I would be jumping in excitement to hear Leo say that the child wasn't his, and that he divorced. F

But right now, at this moment, the bitterness in my heart was threatening to drown me in sorrow.

My head was pressed against Leo's hoodie. I clenched my hands into fists and hit his chest, he made me suffer through this!

I cried, Leo's tears rolled down his cheeks too. I know deep in my heart what kind of person Leo is. He's a very kind person. Lia told him she's pregnant with his child, he would never ask her to abort. He's not Lance, he's not so cruel.

And it was because of his kindness that I was able to stay alive in this house. When I came into their family at the tender age of 5 years old, he was nearly 8 years old. I used to call him brother, and he would smile at me and pat my head, he would even let me play with his toys.

In my heart, he is always the warm and kind boy.

He actually knew that my mom and his father's affair sped up his mother's death, he doesn't like my mom too, but he never blamed me like Lance. He treated me with love and care. He gave me protection.

And it was because of this warmth and love, that made me willing to sacrifice my life for him if needed to.

Revenge? No, with him, the man I love so much, revenge is nothing to me. But my body was polluted, my soul and body were not clean anymore. I don't deserve this man anymore.

I cried for a long time in his arms, I wanted to stay in his embrace longer, but I knew I couldn't.

If this goes on, a storm would be waiting for me.

I pushed Leo Mason away, but he didn't even move a muscle, he didn't want to let go of me.

Then, the door of my room was pushed open suddenly.

It was Lance Mason.

He stood at the door and glared at us coldly: "Reminiscing? Hugging each other so tight that tears are even coming out?"

Leo let go of me and wiped his tears. "Brother, you should knock."

I lowered down my head, not daring to look at Lance's face. He must be thinking of ways to beat me, to slap me and insult me.

But since Leo was here, he wouldn't do that. I was pretty sure he would punish me in private when we are alone.

"I did, but you were too into hugging each other and didn't hear me." Lance answered in an angry tone.

Leo looked back at me and touched my head. "Jennie, you are not feeling well. Go take a nap in my room, it's cold in your room."

Leo used to try not to be so obvious in front of Lance, he didn't dare to treat me so well in front of Lance, but Lance caught us in each other's arms, Leo must have thought there's no point hiding anymore.

I knew right at that moment, Lance wanted very badly to tear me apart. I wiped my tears and said: "It's fine, my covers are thick. You two brothers must have a lot to catch up, go then."

I signalled Leo to lead Lance out. Me and Leo have been very close for so many years, of course he got my signal. "Brother, let's talk outside. Don't disturb Jennie." He said to Lance.

I glanced at Lance. His gaze was filled with bullets.

"Yes, I have something to tell you." Lance said and turned out, leaving the room.

When they left, I sat down on my bed and sighed. What the hell was this?

Just when I have already ruined my life and myself, there he is, coming back to tell me that he's gotten rid of all the problems.....

Haha.....

How pathetic can my life get?

Suddenly, someone knocked on my door, Leo's voice sounded through. "Jennie, I'm coming in."

I didn't get the chance to answer him and I already saw him carrying a very huge stuff into my room, setting it on the corner.

He came to me and sat beside me, touching my face. "After all that you've been through, now I know what is most important to me. I used to overthink and that made you suffer. I will never let you be in pain ever again. I told brother that I love you, and I want to marry you."

I was completely stunned. I never expected Leo to tell Lance such things.

"I'm serious, I will not let you get hurt again, I'm sorry."

I pushed Leo's hand on my face away and asked him coldly: "Are you crazy? Did you ask me if I want to? Did you even ask me if I'm willing to be with you?"

Leo's face suddenly turned panicked and worried. He asked me carefully: "The, do you still want to be with me?"

I knew I had to be harsh on him, and myself. I looked at his handsome face and answered him firmly: "No, not at all."

## Chapter 54 Get Married

I saw the rapid change of expression on Leo's face. He must not have expected me to say that I do not want to be with him. I, Jennie Gomez, who loved him so much, said no to him.

"Jennie, I..... I know it is my fault, can you forgive me?"

His eyes were filled with anticipation, it made me distress and heartbroken, but I know I have to be cruel, to him and to myself, to avoid a triangular situation.

"No, you hurt me, and you can't just come asking for my forgiveness like that!"

This must be the cruelest thing I have ever said to him. If it was last time, I wouldn't say such things to him, to hurt him.

Leo looked at me, heartbroken. He wanted to caress my face a few times, but he didn't. He stared at me and said: "Then what do you want me to do, to have your forgiveness?"

"Nothing, just stay away from me, I already have a boyfriend. Although you and I are siblings, but we are not blood related, if we get too close, my boyfriend would get angry."

I lied straight to his face, but I didn't dare look at him, because he would know that I'm lying if he saw my eyes.

Leo stood up and stepped back in disappointment. He laughed bitterly and said: "Wow, I didn't expect you to have a boyfriend already. Good..... you're not young anymore, it's time to date. Brother will never bother you anymore."

My tears kept running down like the waterfall. From the corner of my eyes, I saw Leo. He must be heartbroken and hurt by me.

It's better sooner than later..... this hurt is inevitable, I shouldn't waste his time, so it's best for me to hurt him now than later.....

During dinner, Leo didn't turn up while Lance's face was as dark as the night sky. My head was held low, looking at my own plate, while mom kept serving Uncle Mason.

Mrs Mason sat beside Lance and held his hands: "After the festive season, you're going to turn 32 soon. Our family still hasn't got a grandson, I already spoke to Tiffany Abel's mother. We plan for your wedding to be in June, are you fine with it?"

Tiffany Abel, I know this name. She is Lance's fiancé, 2 years older than me. She's marrying Lance once she finishes her PhD studies. What's the point in studying PhD when all she's going to do after she gets married is to stay at home and take care of kids?

I really don't understand these upper-class people.

Lance didn't seem to be in a good mood and he looked annoyed: "Let's talk about this next time, the project is the most important thing to me, if I haven't even started it, how can I even marry and have kids? Grandma, don't chase me on this."

Strange enough, Lance glanced at me when he said that. I immediately looked down.

Then I heard Mrs Mason complain. "Something so stupid happened to your brother, and you're still here not getting ready to get married. Then I will not have a chance to meet my own great-grandson before I die!"

Lance seemed to be triggered and raised his voice: "The work and businesses in company is already giving me a headache! Grandma, can you stop?"

In my impression, Lance was always respectful towards his grandmother, he never spoke to her like that.

Because he raised his voice at her, she gave him a pitiful look.

Lance realized his own behavior too and immediately apologized to his grandma.

She looked at her baby grandson and said; "Okay, I won't force you, but at least invite her over for dinner, or else the Abel Family would think that we don't prioritize her daughter."

Lance didn't want to reject his grandma again, so he nodded and agreed.

The businesses and companies of the Mason's Family are all under Lance's control, so Leo could do what he likes.

I've never seen Tiffany Abel, but it's not because they never came over. Tiffany comes to the mansion a lot, it was me who was always not around.

After dinner, I cleaned up myself and went to bed. Then my phone buzzed. Lance sent me a message to go out.

I ignored his message and laid in bed.

I hadn't even put down my phone and he already called me. I pretended to be asleep and put my phone in silent mode.

After a minute, my door was pushed opened. I knew very well it was Lance Mason, I could smell him from my bed. My heart started to beat faster.

He came closer and closer to my bed, I shut my eyes close tightly, knowing that I'm doomed.

I tried to calm myself down and pretended to be sound asleep. Lance sat on my bed and switched on my table lamp. My heart skipped a beat.

Lance grabbed my chin and said: "Your eyes are moving, stop pretending." He said.

I opened my eyes and faked an act, like I just woke up. I gave him a grin and asked: "Brother, why aren't you sleeping?"

Lance returned my grin with a dark smile and touched my lips. "Leo talked to me today. He said he likes you and wants to be with you. He came to me to ask for my permission. Let's see, what do you think? Do you want to be with him too?"



## Chapter 55 Evil

Lance's evil smile gave me goosebumps. He suddenly put his hands around my neck and started to choke me. He closed his hands around my neck tighter and tighter, I started to have problem breathing.

"Hm? Do you want to be with him, Jennie Gomez? Just tell me, I might approve?" at this point, I'm convinced Lance Mason is the devil lord from hell.

I didn't want to do, so I kept trying to pull his hands away. My tears rolled out, while I struggled to tell him what I told Leo.

Just when I was about to die of suffocation, Lance let go of me. I coughed like there's no tomorrow on my bed. Tears were falling out non-stop.

"No, you always reminded me to be aware of my own place, so I never even thought of trying to get with him to get anything. I told him, that we are impossible....."

I could hear my heart breaking into pieces when I said this.

This heart of mine, has been broken and hurt many times. I stared at Lance, why is he always treating me like this? I'm human, I have feelings, I have a heart, I can feel pain too, my heart can bleed too.....

Lance glared at me, his eyes filled with evil. "How do I trust you? What if you are plotting something behind my back? Leo Mason is my only brother, and you know I love him the most, I don't you, a slut, a whore, to ruin his life! Jennie Gomez, tell me, what makes you trustworthy?"

Lance suddenly grabbed my hair and pulled my head towards his face. We stared at each other's eyes.

I sniffed my nose and said: "I had an abortion, I'm your lover in bed, I'm a dirty woman....." my voice was extremely weak.

"I love him. Yet when I was still clean, I already don't deserve him. Do you think I deserve him now that I'm so dirty? Lane, you have no reason to not believe me, Leo is someone you love the most, and he's also the man I love the most, and my only love." God knows how much I love Leo Mason!

I sobbed harder and harder. I think, I wouldn't be able to love anyone anymore after this. I gave all my love to him, I will never love ever again.

Lance let go of my hair. I fell to my bed like a ragged doll.

He walked out and stood by my door. "Love him? You don't even deserve to love him." He said coldly.

He then walked out and closed the door shut. I cried even harder. Yeah, Jennie, you don't even deserve to love Leo.

During the middle of the night, I got high fever. I remembered the huge stuff Leo carried into my room, it was a heater. I switched it on and the room got warmer.

The next morning, mom woke me up to go help out with some

chores. I was still in fever and felt very cold, so I wrapped myself in many layers of clothing like an old lady.

When I exited my room, I came face to face with Leo, who didn't look good.

With my hoarse voice, I greeted him good morning.

He nodded at me and didn't say anything. Lance got out of his room too. He must have saw my outfit and have me a judgmental look.

Lance went out to fetch his fiancé over for dinner after lunch.

I started the chores in the kitchen, an older servant came and asked me if I was sick, because my eyes were red. I said no and told her don't worry about it. Then she told me to help wash Leo and Lance's clothes. I sighed and nodded.

I used to help them do their laundry, but I never did Lance's.

I was squatting on the floor, washing the clothes when Leo came in and said: "You don't have to wash my clothes, we are not blood related siblings, you washing my clothes for me might anger your boyfriend."

And with that, he picked up the pail of clothes and stood up. Lance appeared out of nowhere and said: "She's no different than the servants here, why can't she do the laundry?"

"Brother, how many times do you want me to tell you, Jennie is not out servant, she doesn't owe the family anything." Leo said, and then left without another word.

Another bucket was filled with Lance's boxers and jacket.

I started to wash it, I used all my strength on it. Lance came over and watched me.

"Boyfriend, why didn't I know about your 'boyfriend'?"

I glanced at him with the corner of my eyes. "You know everything, why bother asking?"

I continued washing his boxers, it grossed me out. I washed Leo's boxers before, but Lance's.....disgusting.

Lance leaned against the wall and watched me brushing his clothes with all my might: "Are you pretending the clothes are me, why are brushing so hard?"

I ignored him and continued washing, then I put the cleans one in another bucket.

The warm water turned cold in this chilly weather, so I sat and wait for the heater to heat the water up. "Why are you leaving my clothes in the soap water? Are you planning to make my skin allergy?" Lance asked.

"I'm waiting for the water to heat up."

"Use cold water." He said.

I stared at him and he stared back, his eyes were telling me: don't even think about going out if you don't finish washing now.

I took over the pail and put my hands into the cold water. I told

myself to bear with it, if he sees your pitiful face, it would only make him even happier.

Lance is a weird person, I noticed no matter how soft or how tough I act, there's no difference.

I sighed and hung out the clothes after washing. I forced myself to give Lance a smile and said: "I'm done, I shall leave then."

Lance glanced at me and left. I went back to my small room and laid on my bed. I groaned out loud due to my sickness, making me feel sick.

## Chapter 56 Tiffany Abel

During dinner, because Tiffany Able was here, the dishes were even more fancy. And in this meal, I finally saw the legendary gentleman Lance Mason, taking dishes for his fiancé, speaking softly to her and taking care of her.

After dinner, Mrs Mason and Uncle Mason gave Tiffany a huge gift. Lance gave her too, and also Leo.

Tiffany rested her head on Lance's chest and said in a sweet voice: "I'm already a grown adult, you guys are still giving me gifts."

Lance patted her head lovingly and said: "No matter how grown you are, you will always be a little girl in our eyes."

Lance's words made everyone laugh. Tiffany blushed and hid in his chest. I was actually quite envious, not because Lance treats her so well, but because I will not have anyone love or care for me like that anymore.

How depressing.

After dinner, Lance led Tiffany to the guest room to rest.

I went back to my room. Leo stopped me at the stairs. I looked at him, his face was slightly red. He lowered his head, not looking at me.

He picked out an envelope and put it into my hands: "Happy New Year, Jennie."

I knew it was an envelope of money. My eyes reddened. I didn't even had the opportunity to thank him as he walked up to his room.

I went back to my room and opened the envelope. It was money and a note. The note says: I wish you happiness forever.

He's the only that cared for my wellbeing, my happiness. But he didn't know, I'm getting more and more distant from those things.

I kept the envelope inside my drawer.

Then, I noticed fireworks outside the mansion, it was already near 2am in the morning. I took out my phone and captured the fireworks. I then posted it on my social media: I heard that if we watch a nice firework, every sorrow and sadness we are feeling will disappear.....

The next day, mom woke me up at 7am in the morning, she asked me to go clean up the firework's mess. I didn't want to, but since I was leaving in a few days' time, I did it.

Lance came over when I was sweeping the yard. He was wearing his sweatpants and a T-shirt. My vision must have been damaged, because I couldn't see his face clearly. He seemed to be moving his lips. Was he speaking to me?

I greeted him: "Why are you awake so early?"

"This spot is best to see sunrise at this time." He answered.

I followed his gaze and sure enough, the sun was slowly rising.

"Yea, very beautiful isn't it?" I sighed.

Lance looked at me and nodded in agreement. Our eyes met and I

felt awkward. He suddenly pulled out his hands from his pocket and grabbed my chin. He lowered down his head and I knew he wanted to kiss me, but this is their house, someone might see.

Just when I was about to reject him, his lips landed on mine. I was surprised and didn't move, allowing him to kiss me further.

I pushed him away after a while and he furrowed his brows in annoyance. "She's here." I said.

Tiffany was shooting me cold glares. I was panicked but then I thought, he must have a way of handling this, my dirty relationship with Lance Mason is the last thing he wanted people to know.

Lance turned his head around and Tiffany's face changed immediately into a sweet and innocent face. She smiled and said: "Lance, why are you out here so early? I thought you said you were tired"

Lance acted very relaxed and casual. "I was up to see the sunrise. Since you're up, let's have breakfast and I'll send you back."

Tiffany looked at my lips and at Lance's lips. Our lips were swollen and wet, it was obvious we kissed. But she didn't confront us. She came forward and hooked her arms around Lance's arm, her huge breasts pressing against him. She gave me a challenging look from the corner of her eyes and used a sweet tone to speak to Lance. She gave off the sweet and cute vibe for her age, while I, who was younger than her, gave off a much more matured vibe. Perhaps it's because I didn't live a perfect life like her?

Lance and Tiffany left and I continued sweeping the yard.

Since it was festive season, a lot of people came by so I had to help out in the kitchen. My body got weaker and weaker.

The older servant saw my pale face and allowed me to go back to my room to rest.

Just when I was going up the stairs, Mrs Mason came down. She was in the middle of stairs and called me out to help her down. Her usual servant was back in hometown. I went to help her, she was a very fat woman. My hand just touched her wrist, and she stepped on the air and fell down from the stairs to the first floor.

I was shocked and didn't know what to do. I froze in the stairs with my eyes opened wide.

"AHHHHH!" Tiffany's scream filled the mansion.

Everyone rushed here and saw Mrs Mason unconscious.

Uncle Mason rushed to me and yelled: "What happened?"

I was already in shock, my knees gave out and I fell down. I didn't know what to say.

Uncle Mason looked at Tiffany and said: "You saw what happened right, tell me."

Tiffany glared at me and I saw her pulling on the edge of her shirt. "I saw Jennie behind grandma and the next thing I know, grandma fell down."

Uncle Mason came to my without further hesitation and gave me a very, very hard slap.

His slap nearly made me unconscious. "B\*tch, call the cops."

## Chapter 57 To the Jail

"Mr Mason, don't misunderstand me, what if Jennie wanted to pull grandma and weren't able to?" Tiffany said. What the hell, she must be doing this on purpose, she's making it even worse.

I knew at this moment, nothing can help me anymore.

I kneeled on the floor, looking at Leo. But his face was filled with disappointment. I know he still likes me, but he loves his family more. Even Leo didn't believe me, let alone Lance.

Lance glared at me coldly and said: "Send grandma to the hospital."

Everybody left and mom came to me. She gave me a slap and said: "Why did you push her? If you hurt her, I won't be able to stay in the house anymore!"

My mom wanted to hit me again, but I went unconscious.

When I woke up, the mansion was filled with cops. They entered my room. I had a bad feeling.

The cops said: "Ms Jennie Gomez, you are reported attempted murder, please walk with us."

I knew, if I follow them this time, there will be no coming back.

I got down the bed and begged Lance to believe me. "I didn't do it, I really didn't push her. I just wanted to help her! You can ask her when she wakes up!"

"I did, she said you pushed her, the CCTV showed you pushing her too." Lance said.

Of course he would believe that cruel old woman, she's his grandmother.

The cops brought me away and after a few hours, I still didn't admit, because I didn't do it. They put me in cuffs.

I recalled the time when I was put in cuffs, I was 12 years old. I had a record, of course they would believe that old woman and not me.

Lance just kissed me this morning, and now he's sending me with the cops.

They are going to send me to jail for a year. One year? So what? I have been through all those years, one year was nothing to me.

I told the cops I wanted to see Leo, and after a few days I saw him.

He looked at me, my hair was messy, I looked like a total mess. How pathetic, he wouldn't like me anymore, right?

He broke the silence: "Jennie, why did you do that? I know grandma treated you bad, but you shouldn't be so cruel!"

At this moment, I stared at him, with disappointment in my eyes. I wanted to explain but I didn't. What's the point? I explained back at the house, he chose to not believe me.

I sighed and sniffed my nose. "Thanks for coming to see me, really."

And with that I left and went back to my jail room.

A pretty woman like me, sent to an all female jail..... you can imagine what happened to me,

During the first week, the other prisoners, they used their toothbrush to brush my back and even hurt my skin. My body was full of scars.

The next month, I left 40kgs.

I figured I would die in this place in a few months' time, I won't even survive a year.

During the night, when everyone was asleep, I took a sharp object.

I have decided to end my life. No more, I don't want this life anymore.

I cut my wrists and blood trickled out. Slowly, my eyes went black. I dreamt about my father, his warm smile and his warm touch. Then his face slowly turned to Lance. His devil face staring at me, his hands choking me, asking me why I pushed his grandma.

When I wake up, a nurse was checking up on me. Seems like I was sent to the hospital. I didn't die?!

"Why did you save me, why not let me die?" I asked.

The nurse covered me in the blankets and said: "You're still young, you still have hope."

My tears rolled down. I shook my head and said: "No, there's no more hope for me."

Then, Lance came in and thanked the nurse.

The nurse told him: "The patient is very weak now, and is suicidal, please take care of her carefully."

Lance nodded and said okay.

I stared at the ceiling with hollow eyes. "Why save me? Isn't it your biggest wish for me to die?"

"Nobody wants you to die, grandma is old and so she couldn't remember properly. Plus I was busy with the stuff in England. I didn't expect them to send you to jail so fast. Now you're okay, I did some investigation and it was a misunderstanding." Just like that, he acted like it's all fine.

I knew I'm out and fine now, but the time in jail already damaged me. Mentally, physically and spiritually. I won't recover from that ever.

I hid myself under the covers and cried out loud. Then Lance pulled the covers away and said in annoyance: "Can you stop?"

I stared at him with red eyes. I wanted this man to just die.....

I pulled his wrists. He looked at me with wide eyes. I stuttered: "Please..... please don't hurt me anymore. I'm scared.....really."

My tears were soaking his sleeve at this point. He sighed and patted my head: "It's a misunderstanding the cops only did their job. Grandma is old, can you blame her?"

I've never seen someone so shameless. What grandma is old and I can't blame her?



Chapter 57 To the Jail

Was she really blurred? Or did she did it on purpose? Why did she suddenly decided to tell the truth?

## Chapter 58 Official Mistress

After a few days of treatment in the hospital, Lance brought me back to California.

The ugly scars on my wrists were noticed by Lance. He told me to go for skin plastic surgery to remove the scars, but I refused. I told him: this is to remind me the value of life. I want to keep it.

Lance heard what I said and didn't force me anymore.

He moved me into his mansion in Pavilion Residence and even gave me black credit card. I'm officially his mistress.

I stayed in his mansion for about a week and didn't go to work. Lance went back to Denmark again. Due to my loss of blood, my body became very weak and so he hired a nutritionist for me to make sure that my body was in good health.

Lance started to treat me better. After dinner at around 6pm, I went to the toilet to wash up because I planned to go to work the next day.

The door of the bathroom was suddenly pushed open. I quickly used the towel to cover my body. I looked up and it was Lance. My heart started beating faster.

The bathroom was steamy and I couldn't see his face clearly. He walked towards me slowly and raised my head to look at him. "Look at you, so afraid. Who else can come in to this bathroom other than me?"

Then, he ripped off the towel from my body. We've not touched each other ever since the day I got out from the hospital.

Right now, I stood in front of him naked, I was embarrassed and also hurt. The scars on my body were ugly. Thankfully my skin heals quite fast, it will be gone in 1 or 2 year's time. But now, it was obvious.

Lance stared at my body. The shocking look on his face was noticed by me. He slowly touched my body and asked with shaking voice: "how did you get these? Did you hurt yourself?" he asked coldly, while glaring at me.

Hurt myself? Haha..... He didn't know how it felt like to have bushes and sharp objects being stabbed onto your body. I'm not stupid, why would I hurt myself and feel the pain?

I turned around, my back facing him, my back had even more scars. It was even more scary.

I also didn't know how Lance would react after seeing this. Would he be happy? Excited? Or.....?

But I was pretty sure he wouldn't be heartbroken to see me like this.

"what is going on?" Lance turned my body around and glared at me with interrogative eyes.

His innocent face, what a drama king.

I put on a pitiful face and touched my own scars. I said casually: "it's nothing, you know how the jail works. Once there's a newbie, the old prisoners will try to bully us. But the girls didn't scar my face, I should be

happy."

Lance pulled away my hand that was touching my scars and stared at it. "why didn't you tell me?" his voice was full of sadness and anger.

I smiled bitterly and said: "It's really nothing, it will go away soon."

Perhaps it was the way I acted, too calm and casual, Lance didn't know what to say anymore.

After a long while, he opened the shower and helped me scrub my body. Was I dreaming? Was Lance cleaning my body? Should I be grateful?

After cleaning, Lance wrapped me in a towel and carried me to the bed. He put me under the covers combed my hair with his fingers. Then he touched my face gently and said: "don't worry, I will make them pay for what they have done to you."

I was stunned. Was Lance trying to help me get justice? I wanted to kill those criminals in the jail, but I was a loner, they were all ganged up, so I chose to end my own life instead.

Now, Lance was telling me that he will punish them, but I wasn't happy, what's the point?

This wasn't what I wanted. Everything that I've been through, everything that I suffered, it was all thanks to him, am I wrong?

But.....

I put on an grateful face and said excitedly: "Thank you, really."

He was surprised why I thanked him. "Why thank me?"

"I just thought finally I have someone to help me and be on my side, I'm touched. You also know what I've been through all these years, I have always wanted someone to rely on, I used to rely on second bro....."

I didn't finish my sentence, but Lance obviously knew who I was talking about.

He stared at me with suspicion: "Why are you suddenly relying on me?"

I forced myself to tear up and hugged his arms, pressing my face against his arms I said: "Brother, you don't know what I experienced in the jail. I'm really terrified I will never disobey you ever again, please don't make me suffer like that anymore again." then I started sobbing out loud.

Lance remained silent.

After a very long time, he finally spoke up. He sighed and patted my head. "Be more obedient and stop thinking about Leo Mason, and don't even think about going to him. Luxurious lifestyle awaits you if you listen to me."

I flashed a huge grin at him. "Thank you, brother. I will be an obedient girl. After this incident, my feelings for Leo died. It was you who saved me from this pile of bullshit, even you're even willing to help me get my revenge. I will not be as stupid as I used to be anymore."

Lance pinched my cheeks and said: "You'd better be. I only have a

brother, I don't want you ruining his life."

I immediately agreed." I will not think about him anymore, from today onwards, I'll serve you only. "

Lance lowered his head and kissed my lips. My unfinished sentence went back into my stomach. His kiss got more and more steamy. I kissed him back. I didn't know if it was my kiss or what, he become more and more excited. He ripped off whatever that was covering my body.

With a husky voice he said: "Quick, take off my belt and pants."

I did as I was told, and the moment his pants fell to the ground, my heart fell too.

Lance grabbed my legs and opened them wide.

Then, with one shove, he pushed all of himself into me.....

Pain shot through my body like lightning striking onto me.....

## Chapter 59 LANCE'S POV

I stared at the little woman sleeping in my arm, feeling complicated. The scars on her body broke my heart into pieces.

If this happened one year ago, I would have been so happy, but right now, this wasn't what I wanted to see.

She cried to me, telling me she's really afraid this time and begged me not to treat her this way anymore.

For the first time, her tears softened my heart.

I have a very embarrassing secret. Ever since I became an adult, I kept having racy dreams. In my dreams, I was always making love to a woman. I couldn't see her face clearly, but I remember very vividly the red birthmark on her breasts area. When I accidentally ripped off Jennie's shirt that time and saw her red birthmark, I was completely stunned. I couldn't believe my eyes! So Jennie Gomez has always been the female in my sex dreams?

But when I was 18, she was merely only 10! How is this possible!

And on that same day, I had the same dream again. But this time I could see her face, it was Jennie Gomez. I was covered in cold sweat that night, I never thought that the woman who took my heart and soul away in my dreams is the woman I hated so much.

To be honest, I couldn't accept this. It was like you hate one type of food, but someone told you that you have eaten this food more than one time.

I didn't have enough time to digest this unbelievable fact. And as I was going to see Leo to talk about some stuff, I saw Jennie's message on his phone, asking him to meet her at the hotel.

Leo was going to marry Lia the next day, yet Jennie invited him to the hotel, what was she thinking. I wouldn't allow my dear brothers family to be ruined by her.

Only after many years later, I only realised that I had been using Leo as an excuse, to separate them. It had always been me, I wanted to possess that woman, I wanted her all to myself.

Once I saw the message, I went back to my room and drank some whiskey, alcohol always make people extra reckless. And after that, I drove to the hotel and saw her in this beautiful red dress, like she was the bridesmaid. And right at that moment, I couldn't control myself anymore, I couldn't resist the woman that I have hated for so long. I used drunk as an excuse and forced myself onto her.....

But I knew it was just an excuse. I wasn't even drunk at the very least. I just used that as an excuse to touch her, to make her mine. I wanted to know if she would feel even better than in my dreams.

In fact, she felt even more better than in my dreams. It was amazing. It was wonderful.

Last time, when she was still only in my dreams, I could use other women to satisfy my own needs. But ever since I touched her body, and

made love to her, I became only interested in her. Other women can't satisfy my needs anymore. And with a wave of my hands, Jennie became my secret lover.

Sometimes I wonder, this must be our fate. She appeared in my dreams for nearly 10 years, and we did so many intimate stuff in my dreams, even our blood type is the same.

Then I even dreamed about her giving birth to my son.

So when I knew she was pregnant with my child, and was 3 months pregnant, I was stunned. But then she aborted our child without hesitation and I got so mad. She asked me jokingly if I liked her.

In her eyes, I have always been the powerful and rich Lance Mason, I always look down on her, how would I even like her?

Later only did I realize that it's not that I didn't like her, it was me who didn't want to admit that I like her.

In this world, the people that I love most is my grandma and Leo. So when grandma was injured and every evidence pointed at her, I was angry. My hatred for her hasn't disappear and I also realized that my feelings for her had changed from hatred to something better, I hate that she's already my woman.

I hated that she's already my woman, but she still thought about Leo. Every time she looked at Leo, her eyes were filled with love, and when she looked at me, there's only hatred and disgust.

I knew she pretended to be sweet and gentle around me, trying to make me happy. At first I kind of enjoyed it but when she met Leo and looked at him with loving eyes, I wanted to tear her apart with my bare hands.

So, when father called the cops, I let them take her away. Plus the stuff in England was giving me much work. At that time, she still wasn't someone THAT important to me. At least, not as important as business and grandma.

I actually doubted grandma's words too, because I knew even if god gave her some guts, she wouldn't dare do something like that. I planned to settle this once I handled the stuff in England, so I allowed them to lock her up in jail for a short amount of time.

I wanted her to know that if she dares crosses me, then I wouldn't let her live a peaceful life.

But I didn't expect my father to be so quick to send her to jail. The day I came back from England, I thought about her and asked my assistant about her wellbeing.

My assistant made some phone calls and when he came back to report to me, his face was not looking good. He said: "Sir, something happened to Ms Gomez."

Looking at his face, I had a bad feeling. "What happened?"

"Ms Gomez committed suicide."

My mind went blank at that exact moment, the words kept

repeating in my ears. 'Ms Gomez committed suicide.' I demanded my assistant to check which hospital she was sent to, and I went straight to her. On my way, I saw an ambulance rushing towards the hospital.

My eyes locked onto that ambulance, thinking if she was inside that ambulance.

I arrived at the hospital at the same time as the ambulance. I saw the nurses pushing her down, her face was as pale as ghost. She looked like she wasn't breathing. I wanted to approach her, to see if this was really happening, but my knees gave out, my assistant had to hold onto me.

She was rushed to the ER, i stood outside, looking at her.

The nurses kept rushing in and out to grab the blood bags, a nurse scolded: "We shouldn't save criminals who commit suicide, plus she is of Rh blood type, such a scarce blood type, our hospital is already lack of this blood type.

I heard what the nurse said, and right at that moment I wanted to kill this nurse who said that they shouldn't save her. Then only I realized, that this woman had already taken up a huge space in my heart. She has already become someone really important to me.

I didn't want anything to happen to her.

The nurse said she lost too much blood, and the blood bank was out of Rh blood, if she didn't get enough blood, her body will become very weak.

I remembered that I'm also of Rh blood type, so I rushed towards the nurse and told her to get my blood and give it to her.

And very quickly, my blood was infused into her. I prayed in my heart, to make sure she's okay.

I admit I'm someone with many flaws, especially my personality, and to her, I'm the devil lord. But if not for her mother, my mother wouldn't die so quickly, and for that I hate her and her mother.

Every time I see her smiling at Leo, it increased my hatred to her. And slowly, she attracted all my attention, I knew which high school she went to, which university she got accepted into. I even knew that she was secretly dating my brother. I knew everything.

Hi dear readers, this is a bonus chapter of Lance Mason's POV, so now all of you know why he hated Jennie so much, and also the reason why sometimes he treated Jennie sometimes bad.

Also, if my English or spelling has any mistakes, please forgive me. I try to write new chapters everyday. Do support me by reading my other novels too, YOU, PRICE OF LOVE, MEMORIES LAST FOREVER. Thank you!

## Chapter 60 Aren't you?

I was stuck in Lance's mansion for a long time, he was busy but he still came over to check up on me once per few days.

The Lay Water Park was going to start its construction soon according to the news, but I didn't know if Lance changed anything from his file. I went to check it in his study room again and everything was the same. I had a bad feeling that what I saw was not real.

But there's no reason for Lance to put a fake file in his own computer, right?

"The flowers are going to drown soon." A familiar voice sounded from behind me.

I was surprised and jumped a little, the water in the watering pail splashed onto my legs and wet my pants.

"Careless little girl, what were you thinking about?" Lance bent down and carried me up, I put my hands around his neck.

He put me on the bed and tried to pull my pants off. I stopped him and said: "I'm having my period."

Lance scoffed and said: "Are you planning to wear a wet pants the whole day?" then he took off my pants, leaving me in my panties.

I got up and went to put on a new pair of pants under his vision.

He then walked behind me and hugged me from behind. His lips landed on my neck, his huge hands starting to fondle my breasts. He was never gentle when it comes to this, and I felt a little discomfort.

Lance's kiss got more and more passionate and he slowly took off my clothes. I could feel him getting excited down there, so I got worried if he was going to have period sex like last time.

He suddenly turned me around and made me look at him. Then he lowered down his lips and planted a hard kiss on my lips.

I could feel his passion in the kiss, a little different from his previous kiss. The most important thing was, I'm on period.

Lance kissed me for a little while longer and started to unbuckle his belt. Seems like overestimated my worth, he didn't care about my body at all.

After taking off his pants, he let go of my lips and caressed it with his thumb. With a voice filled with lust, he said: "Jennie, I don't want to take cold shower to get rid of this.....what can you do to help me?"

I knew what he meant, I'm not the innocent and clean girl anymore. I felt very disgusted, he wanted a blowjob. I know I did it once for him before, but it was because of that one time that made me so negligent this time.

I looked at him and begged: "Can I use my hand instead?"

His slightly red face turned a little cold and he said: "It's either up there or down there. Choose yourself."

I lowered down my eyes, I knew his temper well. So I slowly kneeled



down in front of him and inched my lips towards his area.

Men have a smell down there, and it wasn't pleasant. The smell made me wanted to gag,

Just when my tongue was about to touch the tip, I puked. I puked on the floor, tears forming in my eyes.

I didn't dare look at Lance. He left me alone on the floor, puking, while he went to take a shower.

He came back out and said: "Aren't you disgusted by the vomit?"

I nodded and went to the bathroom. The dustbin was filled with tissue papers and the bathroom smelled like semen, I started to gag again.

I gargled my mouth. When I came back from the bathroom, the floor was already cleaned by the servants. Lance was not sitting on my make-up desk, touching my skin care sets.

He saw me and waved at me, gesturing me to go to him.

I approached him. He carried me onto his lap and rested his chin on my head. We looked like a cute couple. I saw ourselves in the mirror, a handsome man and a gorgeous woman. I admit we looked very matching.

Lance's hand inserted under my bathrobe and touched my skin.

He looked at me through the mirror and asked: "Do you think I'm dirty, that's why you puked?"

I quickly shook my head and explained: "No, not at all. My stomach wasn't feeling well so when I smelled it, I puked..... sorry. I never think that you're dirty. Wait until I feel better and I'll.....give you heads okay?" I couldn't say 'blowjob' out from my mouth.....

After listening to my explanation, Lance didn't ask my anything anymore. He moved his finger down and touched me down there, although I was wearing a pad, he still pressed hard onto my clit. Women are very sensitive during our menstrual period, his touch made me shiver.

He asked: "How many days?"

I blushed and said: "Second day."

He pinched my face and continued: "Have you been bored at home?"

Home? He called this my home? This was my prison!

I smiled and shook my head. "No, just bored sometimes, not all the time."

"Do you want to travel? I'll fly both of us out."

Without further thinking, I said: "Isn't Lay Water Park going to start next week, can you go overseas?"

From the mirror, I could see Lance's face froze. I knew I said something I shouldn't have.

He asked: "Oh? Seems like you're interested in this project?"

I quickly shook my head. "No, I just saw it on the news and was just curious if you're free to go travel."

Lance said: "Didn't you say you want to visit England? Then we depart tomorrow morning and come back on Monday morning. It won't delay or affect my schedule. If I keep you here any longer, I figured you're going to go mad soon. Then I will become bored if you went mad."

I rested my head on his chest and said: "I'm not a toy."

I was really confused. He had been preparing for this project for a year, why was he planning to fly me to England just a few days before the project starts?

"Aren't you?" he asked back.

The smile from my face disappeared slowly and I said: "Yes, yes I am."

## Chapter 61 Watch and Learn

After I answered him, Lance's face suddenly turned emotionless and he put me down on the floor. I stood beside him and he got up. "I'm going to my study room and work."

After he left, I looked myself in the mirror, looking at my own face. No, not face, my mask. The invisible mask that I had put on to pretend and act around him.

I sat on the bed, and thought. What was Lance thinking? Why did he suddenly decided to bring me to England just days before his most important project?

I didn't want to think about it anymore and started to pack my luggage. Once I finished packing mine, I stared at his empty grey luggage. I struggled internally if I need to help him pack or no need. I was afraid that he might find my actions extra and judge me again. Lance came in while I was in my thoughts and noticed the pile of clothes. "What is this?" he asked.

"Didn't you say we fly tomorrow morning? I am packing."

He folded his hands and watched me. I felt uncomfortable and asked: "Do you need me to pack for you?"

He put down his hands and said: "Be careful when packing, don't mess up my cupboard. Look at your cupboard, so messy."

I blushed in embarrassment and said: "Alright, I'll tidy it up later."

Lance has this perfectionist personality. He can't stand any messy or dirty things.

As for me, I don't really care for untidiness as long as I make sure it's clean.

I put his empty luggage on the floor and Lance pointed at his drawer. "My socks and boxers re inside."

I nodded and said okay. Then I asked packed his clothes and asked him if he needed any suit. He said just bring his white sneakers and casual wear, because we are going to travel, not work, so there's no need to bring his suits.

I folded his clothes very carefully, making sure I don't mess up his stuff, to prevent him from getting mad again.

Lastly, I put his shaver and cleaner into his luggage and zipped it up. My forehead was dripping with sweat.

I wiped my sweat and looked up at Lance. HE was looking at me with a weird look. His eyes were filled with love and gentleness. But when he saw me looking at him, he quickly changed to a poker face.

"I'm done!" I said to him.

He replied with a 'hm' and said: "Let's go down for food."

I followed him down, but he turned around suddenly and pulled me into his arms. He pressed my face on his chest and said: "You're so short."

I looked at the tall man in front of me and said: "I'm not short, you're just too tall! I'm considered tall at this 165 cm height."

Lance is 187cm, of course compared to me, I'm short beside him.

Lance pulled me away from his chest and observed me. "Girls need to be at least 170cm, so they can look prettier. You're too short."

I wanted to vomit blood when I heard what he said. no logic at all.

I recalled Tiffany's height. Without further thinking, I said: "Ms Abel isn't even as tall as me, do you think she's short?"

"Are you comparing yourself with her?" he asked me back.

"I..... I....." I could feel the blood and heat rushing to my cheeks. I blushed hard.

"Not at all, I don't deserve to be compared with her." I faked a smile and said. Tiffany Abel and me, we are of such a huge difference. She's the 'princess' of a rich and powerful family, what am I?

So, I didn't stand a chance.

Lance stared at me for a split second and didn't say a thing. Then he turned back around and went down, as if he agreed too.

To be honest, I was sad. Not because of Lance's attitude, but because of Tiffany Abel. She has everything, a loving family, money, power..... I had nothing.

At the dining table, me and Lance started to eat our food. He's the politest person on the dining table I have ever met. He doesn't make a single sound when eating, I almost thought he was a ghost. I had to force myself to eat slowly and carefully, to make sure I didn't make any noise and annoy him.

After dinner, Lance pulled me along to his study room. What was he planning to do?

Just when I was thinking hard what he could do, he switched on his computer and went to Pornhub.

What the hell? I didn't expect him to watch this kind of stuff. A man like him can simply find a woman willing to satisfy his needs. So why was he trying to masturbate to porn?

Lance made me sit on his lap, his down there was hard, poking into my butt. I felt a little uncomfortable. He knew I was on period, why was he doing this to himself?

The video started and I could hear the moans loudly. I blushed,

It's not like I have never watched porn before, last time when I was trying to seduce Leo, I watched one under my covers but wasn't able to finish it as it was too hardcore. The one I watched was censored. Lance was watching uncensored ones.....

"Watch properly, this is to teach you. You are like a dead fish on bed. Seems like I do you too well on bed you forgot how to serve me."

I was forced to watch closely. Gross.....

"Watch and learn, understand?!" and with that, Lance started to

Chapter 61 Watch and Learn

touch me and kiss me again.

04:08 

**Reward**  
400

|  
My Paranoid Lover

**Comments**  
15

27.1%

## Chapter 62 Teasing me

I didn't know what he wanted to do, the porn was still playing. He was teasing me with his hands, at this rate I felt that my period was going to flow like the waterfall.

Lance didn't stop teasing my body, I felt myself heating up. I was shy and embarrassed, plus it made me a little uncomfortable too.

I softly touched his hands to stop him, hoping he would take my hint, but he didn't stop. Instead, he became even more passionate. He licked my earlobes and softly bit me, while his hands slide down into my pants, touching me through my pads.

"Don't..... please stop." I moaned out uncomfortably. It felt good, but it was also uncomfortable.

Lance turned my body around and made me sat facing him. We stared at each other, and I could feel his dick getting harder and harder beneath me. I didn't know if I should move or stay frozen.

He put his fingertips on my chin and pushed my head up, raising my eyes to meet his. He stared at me with lusty eyes for a whole minute, and I didn't know what to do. I just stared back and held my breathe.

I saw him slowly lowering his head, his long eyelashes making some shadows beneath his eyes, his tall nose and strong jawline..... I must admit this man right here is devilishly handsome!

When our lips touched, I could feel how gentle Lance was this time. Lance has kissed countless times, and every time was harsh and he even bit my lips a few times. This time was different, he was gentle and soft, slowly licking my lips, and using his tongue to push open my teeth, gaining access to my mouth and tongue. He slowly sucked on my tongue, teasing me further.

He was weird today, treating me bad then treating me so gently.

Just when I was about to go out of breath, he removed his lips from my mouth and moved downwards to my breasts.

At this point, I felt like if there's even a slight spark, it would lit my whole body on fire. When Lance's hand pinched my nipples, I accidentally moaned out in pleasure. Shit, I should have controlled myself.

Lance seemed to be very satisfied with my reaction and whispered into my ear: "Moan out if you can't take it, I like to hear you moan."

He likes to hear me moan, so I forced myself to moan more.

When our little foreplay session ended, I was like a ragged doll in his arms. I was already almost naked, leaving only my panties.

Because he teased the hell out of me and this triggered my body's hormones, my period flowed like there's no tomorrow. It even stained Lance's grey sweatpants.

I blushed and said to him awkwardly: "Um, sorry. I stained your pants again."

Lance played with my hair, the corner of his lips slide upwards a little: " Did you feel good just now?"

My cheeks blushed even harder. Under his gaze, I was forced to nod my head.

Lance was satisfied with my response and chuckled. Then put his hands behind my head and pressed my lips onto his again.

This time, his kissed me really hard, like he wanted to swallow me whole.

In the middle of our kiss, he whispered: "Be a good girl, I won't treat you badly again."

I put my hands around his neck and kissed his chin, speaking in a sweet voice: " I will be a good girl."

Lance was happy with my answer and carried me up like a child. My chest was pressed against his hard and ripped chest. Thankfully the servants are not allowed to come upstairs during the night, or else they would see me naked.

Lance wanted to carry me into the bathroom and so he did. He opened the shower and prepared warm water, then he took off his stained pants and threw it in the laundry bin. He walked towards me and started to scrub my body. The water on the floor became red, because my period was flowing. I guess all of my embarrassment will be witnessed by this man.....

My cheeks were hot and red because I was truly embarrassed. After finish scrubbing me, Lance patted my butt and said in a happy tone: "Go put on some clothes and a thick pad. I don't want to wake up in the middle of a blood pool tomorrow. You women are strange creatures, losing so much blood every month but still alive."

I nodded my head and quickly wrapped a towel around my body. Then I took a piece of night use pads and went to the closet room. I sighed out in relief and patted my own red face.

I took out my sweatpants and hoodie. Just when I was putting on my pad, Lance came into the closet room and witnessed me putting on my pads and pulling up my sweats.

I didn't dare look at his face, was he laughing at me or was there a perverted smile.....?

He came over to me when i was done and carried me up again, then he headed towards the bed. He put me on the bed and climbed beside me quickly, he even put his arms out to allow me to lie on it.

To be honest, his sudden change or attitude towards me surprised me.

I didn't under why he suddenly changed.

He was just like the devil, I never know what to expect when I'm with him.

He pulled me into his embrace and closed his eyes. I didn't felt very comfortable so I waited until I was sure he slept and moved slightly to

get out of his arms.

Who knew, he suddenly opened his eyes and scared the hell out of me.

"What are you doing? Stop moving around!" He sounded irritated.

I felt wronged and said: "It's not that I don't want to sleep, your arm is very hard, it's uncomfortable

."

Lance didn't look happy and pulled his arms away. Then he turned around with his back facing me and slept.

Looking at his very fit back with beautiful muscle lines, I thought, he was letting his guard down around me, if I put a knife in him from the back, he would die.

I was surprised to even have this thought crossed my mind. I cannot think this way, or else one day I might really kill him.

This isn't the ending I wanted.

Lance had a very bad habit, he likes to keep a small lamp on when he sleeps. At first when I started sleeping together with him, I couldn't get used to it and was unable to sleep for a few days. It was only after that I slowly got used to it. I'm actually very impressed by my own adaptation.

But I started to get insomnia again these few days.

I stared at the ceilings, hoping to be able to fall asleep soon, counting sheep.



## Chapter 63 Cunning Fox

The next day, I woke up under Lance's slap. He slapped my butt hard.

I got up and rolled my eyes with my hands. I looked at him with blurry eyes and noticed he didn't look like he had a good night's sleep. He's a busy person, he never had enough time to sleep.

"Go get my shirt for me in the closet." Lance demanded.

I felt a little bit annoyed, doesn't he have legs?

I went to his closet and picked a pair of sweatpants, his Nike shirt and his pair of Adidas sneakers. I smiled coldly, isn't this a wife's job? What am I? Who am I?

Lance seemed to be quite satisfied with my choice of clothes and took it from my hands with a slight smile. He said on the bed and started to put on the clothes. I have been sleeping with him for quite some time already and I have never known that he had this habit of wearing clothes on the bed. It was strange seeing him acting like a child, and I was like his mother.

I started the school myself internally, what am I thinking? How could I last be a child? And I'm not a kind mother.

We both have hatred for each other yet we are still living with each other peacefully.

Humans like us are always putting on a mask and acting like everything is okay.

"Help me put on my socks and shoes." Lance put both of his feet on the bed.

I was completely speechless, a 30+ year old man, didn't he have his own hands? Although I didn't want to help him and I feel insulted but I had to do as he said since I have already embarrassed myself in front of him many many times.

I kneeled down slowly in front of him, although his feet doesn't smell, but I still didn't want to touch his feet. Just when my hand was about to touch his leg, Lance suddenly raised his leg and used his toes to touch my face. At that moment I really wanted to stand up and give him a slap.

He must have done it on purpose to insult and embarrass me further.

"You don't look good, do you think my feet smell?" Lance asked with an unhappy face.

I smile bitterly and shook my head: "No, are you kidding me? Let me help you put on your socks!"

Lance pulled back his own legs and snatched the socks away from my hands. With an annoyed tone, he said to me: "since you don't look like you are willing to do so then fine I'll do it by myself!"

After putting on his own socks, he went to the bathroom to wash up.

I quickly went to the closet and change my own outfit.

Although Lance Mason is already 30+ years old but seeing him in a casual outfit, he looks really young, just like a university student.

We boarded the plane but it wasn't his private plane, Lance seemed to be very tired and slept in the plane for many hours.

When he woke up after a few hours, he stretched his back and took a sip of water. He moved his face near me to see what I was reading then he took the book from my hands and looked at the cover asking me: "what is this book?"

I answered him: "Novel, romance novel, to kill some time."

I like to read this sort of book because I thought that I was lonely and I needed to read some happy and romantic stuff to fill the emptiness in my heart.

Lance flipped a few pages and I guessed he didn't know what the book was talking about so he asked me: "What is the story about?"

I looked at him and didn't answer him immediately. He shifted his attention away from the book and on to me and asked: " i'm asking you a question?"

"Men wouldn't get interested in this kind of stories." And with that, I took my book back from his hands but he didn't let go. Instead, He said: "You didn't even tell me how would you know that I wouldn't be interested in this?"

Since he wanted to know, alright I'll tell him.

"Well, it is just the same oh romance novel. The male lead treated the female lead very very bad and hurt her deeply, then he only realised that he had already fallen in love with her. Later, he started to treat her better. In the end, the female lead forgives him and they had a happy ending."

I explained the storyline simply. Lance stared at me with emotionless eyes and I stared back. It was as if we were both holding our breaths. He looked stern, then he tossed the book back to me and said: "Have you been reading a lot of books like that? Please do remember that I am not a male lead and you are not the female lead of the book."

I smoothen the pages that were crumbled by Lance and forced a chuckle: "No I didn't, don't misunderstand me. Why would I think that I'm the female lead? Since when was my life so lucky? I'm fated to never have anyone love me, you treating me this way, giving me food and clothes and a place to stay..... I'm grateful enough."

Lance didn't say anything anymore and closed his eyes. His expression was still very stern and serious.

I looked out the window and saw the sunrise. We must be getting near to England. What will happen in this trip I wonder?

From our landing until we got in the cab, Lance didn't speak to me at all. I seem to know what he was angry about, but at the same time I

also wasn't sure. I think I must be going crazy to be guessing what Lance Mason was thinking about the whole day.

Lance had a driver here that I didn't know, he drove us to the heart of London, we arrived at a beautiful mansion. It was an English Style mansion.

When we got down the car, a middle age man, home I think is the butler, use very fluent Mandarin and spoke to Lance: "Sir, welcome home."

A very fair maid with blonde hair helped us carry our luggage. There were also other servants waiting outside the mansion for us. The scene in front of me was like watching a TV show

Lance nodded at the butler and went into his mansion. I quickly followed behind. This mansion was a lot bigger than the Mason's mansion back in Denmark. There is a golf field and even a swimming pool.

I knew Lance is rich but I never knew he was this rich. London is the most expensive city in the UK and yet he owns such a big mansion in the city.

I followed him up to the third floor, the big room was huge and there was even a walk in closet for both of us, the size of it was like my whole bedroom back in my condo.

Looking at the men's clothes in the closet, then looking back at the grey luggage I suddenly felt like laughing. This isn't travelling this was basically Lance Mason coming back home!

Lance is a very hygienic person and the moment he stepped into his bedroom he went to the bathroom and take a shower.

I observed the bedroom. It was full of European and English decoration, plus Lance had purchased a lot of different paintings from famous artists. Such a big house and expensive decoration, plus the servants and butler..... I wonder if this was Lance's real house, and if he had anything hiding in this house.

Every cunning fox has 3 dens, was this his most important one ?

## Chapter 64 Niklaus?!

Lance finished taking a shower and got out of the bathroom in his khaki pants and white T-shirt. He was also wearing a very nice jacket, he looked really handsome. To be really honest here, right now he looked just like Leo Mason. It was because Leo likes to dress in this kind of outfit, I stared at him like he was really Leo.

Lance approached me and patted on my head. He scoffed: "what are you staring at? Let's go I'll bring you out."

Once held my hand and together we left the mansion. This time, he drove himself. The scenery was breathtaking.

I told him I was hungry and he brought me to a French restaurant. When the food was served, he ordered wine for both of us.

Just when I was going to drink the wine I saw a familiar face, a man. It was Niklaus Sands.

I was pretty surprised why he would appear in England. Lance's biggest rival in this project is Niklaus

, why are these two men travelling to a different country just when the project was going to start?

"What are you looking at?" Lance asked when he noticed me looking behind him.

I answered him: "someone that you know."

Lance listened to what I said and turned around, Niklaus was walking hand in hand with a blonde girl. He was walking towards us.

With a sarcastic tone, Lance turned back around and said to me: "you have great eyesight."

I lowered down my head and didn't know what to say. This isn't about my eyesight, it was just because Niklaus is a very tall man and he is very beautiful, how could I not notice him?

Together with the blonde girl, Niklaus approached us and said: "seems like CEO Mason doesn't want to see me."

Lance that up and shook his hands, saying: "You think too much, Mr Sands."

They let go of each other's hands and Niklaus shifted his attention towards me. He looked at me while speaking to Lance: "Isn't this your little secretary? Why is she with you anywhere you go?"

Lance's lips twitched-up and he said: "My secretary is very caring and makes me comfortable, I like to bring her around for work."

My face reddened. Everybody knows what a man means when he says a lady makes him 'comfortable'.

Niklaus gave me a long stare and smirked: "Ms Gomez sure is cute, what a lucky man you are, Mr Mason."

Lance looked at the pretty blonde girl beside Niklaus and said: "You too, Mr Sands."

Niklaus and that pretty blonde girl sat at our table. Lance and him

started to chitchat about life, but not a word about business.

I felt a little bit too full in the middle of the meal and said: "I need to go to the washroom."

Lance nodded his head in approval. I went into the bathroom and splashed some cold water onto my face clear my head and mind. I leaned against the wall, feeling a little irritated. I had a lan, and I also knew my goals an intention, but the thing was, I couldn't find out what dirty things Lance did.

Right at this time, the blonde girl came in and smiled at me. I smiled back. She took out her makeups and started to freshen up.

She is a really beautiful woman, her body is great too. This is the type of woman that can seduce a man easily. I didn't expect Niklaus' taste to be this spicy and hot.

"Sis, how old are you?" The girl asked.

Did she just called me 'sis'? I looked at myself in the mirror, true, I don't look like a teenager anymore but I don't look old too! I even looked a little younger than her!

"Nearly 23." I answered.

She put on her lipstick and mascara, then she said: "I'm 21!"

"oh, well you are quite young." I said.

"Sis, how many times have you aborted?"

"WHAT?!" I was shocked to hear her question.

I sighed and said calmly: "never."

She smiled at me and said: "Sis, don't like to me, these rich men don't treat us as humans. For me, I aborted twice already. Sigh, I got together with Nik at the age of 16, 4 years, and yet he never said anything about marrying me."

"Are you British? Or mixed?" I asked, I was just curious.

"I'm half British half Chinese, but I look more like the British side, my father is from here, my mom is British born Chinese." The girl answered.

I nodded then thought about what she said just now. Niklaus looks like a gentlemen, yet he's just like Lance, this made me worried if he would really work with me to go against Lance.

## Chapter 65 Secret Message

"You must have aborted too, looking at your pale face and weak body. Let me tell you this, Sis, men are not anything good, especially pretty men. Money is still the most important thing."

She finished speaking and touched her latest edition Chanel bag. She was covered in branded all over her body, even her makeups were Lancôme. I looked at myself and felt a little embarrassed.

I was dressed in a very casual outfit today. A pair of jeans and a T-shirt plus a jacket.

I knew what this pretty girl meant, but what she didn't know was, I stayed beside Lance not to marry him or for his money. I didn't have a choice, if someone ask what's the relationship between me and Lance, I could only say hatred.

Yes, there was only hatred between us.

We went back together, Lance glared at me, not happy that I was gone for so long.

After bill, Lance needed to go to the washroom, so Niklaus and the pretty girl left first, I stood at the entrance waiting for Lance. Then I received a message. I know this sender's number, I didn't dare to save it so I memorized it.

The message: Lance has a huge mansion in England, have you been there?

I replied: Yes, it's very huge, but i didn't find anything.

Another message: try the underground room, check it out there.

I asked: anything there?

The sender replied: How would I know? That mansion is very strictly guarded, my men have never been able to get in successfully. I just know there's an underground room. According to what I know, he's been doing some dirty stuff in Europe these few years. Lance is a very power-hungry man, local businesses wouldn't be able to satisfy him.

I quickly read the message and replied with an 'okay'. Then I deleted all the message and put my phone back into my purse. Lance came out and said: "Let's go, I'll bring you to see River Thames and the Big Ben."

It was quite windy and I didn't bring a hair band to tie my hair, so my hair kept blowing and covering my face. I had no choice but to pulled Lance's hand, whom was walking in front of me.

"What's wrong?" He asked, looking back at me.

"It's windy and cold, why not we go back?" I said.

Lance nodded in agreement and said: "Alright then."

We didn't go to see the Big Ben, I followed him back, and after that, we never went to see it too.

On the way home, while Lance was driving, he answered a phone call. I only heard him saying 'alright, got it.' Then he gave me a weird look and hung up.

I initiated a conversation with him but he didn't talk to me at all, so I shut my mouth and didn't speak anymore.

Lance had been acting strange, especially his temperament. Sometimes he was jolly, sometimes he was gloomy. Sometimes when we go out he looked happy, then when we got back home he became cold and distant.

Lance parked his car in his garage, there were a lot of fancy cars parked there. I saw a not so fancy car parked there and was found it strange. Lance never liked normal cars like this.

He must have noticed me staring at that car and said: "That is Leo's car. You must know he likes car like this, right?"

Why did I sense sarcasm in this words.

I lowered down my head and mumbled: "I'm not clear about this."

"Hah....." lance laughed coldly and got out of the car, I quickly followed right behind him.

The butler came to us and spoke to Lance softly: "Young Master Mason is here."

Young Master Mason? Who's that?

Don't tell me it's Leo Mason..... I could feel myself slowly becoming a stone.

Lance turned around and looked at me, smirking: "Why aren't you moving? Your favorite brother is here, shouldn't you see him?"

I didn't expect Leo to turn up here in England, wasn't he in America doing research for cancer?

Why was he here? Did he know I was here with Lance? Or did he somehow find out about me trying to work against Lance with Niklaus?

I became very worried and nervous. I know Leo wouldn't harm me, but still, the business is his family's business, and Lance Mason is his only brother.

This pair of siblings are very close and they love each other very much, they would do anything to make sure one another is safe.

My confidence of Leo siding me went down the hell, I knew if one day he found out about this, no matter how much he loved me, or still loves me, he would choose his brother's side. Blood is thicker than water.

I stared at Lance, I didn't even dare to look at Leo who was already beside us.

But what happened next, proved that I think too much. And what actually happened next, broke my heart even further. I have never felt so low and so heartbroken in my life.

Reward

400

Comments

3

## Chapter 66 I want you to beg for death

Leo looked at me and then back at Lance, his face seemed to be judging me and it was filled with disgust. He must have guessed my relationship with Lance by now.

"Brother, why?" Leo let go of my hands, I could never forget the look he gave me, it was disgust, and hatred.

Like I was the trash beside the road, all of the good memories about me, ruined by Lance Mason.

This must be in his plan. Did he purposely brought me here and directed this whole drama so that the man I loved so much would start to be disgusted by me? This was the worst punishment I could ever imagined. Yes, I admit, Lance succeeded. He succeeded in making me want to die instead of live.

"No reason, we are grown adults. She's willing to give me her body while I'm willing to give her money. You were seduced by this woman's appearance, she's not as clean and innocent as you thought she was. Don't forget who her mother is. I told you many times before, Leo, and you never listened. I didn't want to hurt you because you are my only brother, but I didn't want you to sink into this bullshit any further. I love you very much, brother, so I wanted you to see her façade."

Lance finished speaking and looked at me, who was already on the ground, my knees have given out.

So, I'm a woman like that. What a nice 'she's willing to give her my body'. If you said this is the second time, what about the first time? When you raped me and took my virginity away?

Leo squatted down and raised my chin. His face was cold. "Is my brother telling the truth? JENNIE GOMEZ!"

I stared at my 'second brother', not a single tear formed. My heart had taken in all my tears, my heart wilted.

"Willing? You were willing to do that? Seriously?" Leo asked me once again.

I stared at him with empty eyes. If Leo was disgusted by me and started to hate me, then for real this time, I have nothing left. Nothing.

"Leo, we are brothers, before mother died, I swore beside her bed that I will become powerful and protect you. Don't blame me for doing this, this woman and me? We are just trading, a woman like this doesn't deserve you." Lance said. And before he left the room, he added: "Leo, Jennie said she doesn't like the bracelet you gave her, the ruby. She prefers the diamond bracelet that's worth a few thousand dollars. Have you seen her wearing it? Beautiful isn't it?"

I was really wearing the bracelet Lance gave me, it was hidden under my sleeve right now. But I wore it not because I liked it, it was to make Lance happy. I never expected him to use this as a weapon against me to hurt Leo.

Lance left the room and closed the door, leaving me and Leo alone



on purpose.

Leo asked: "Which wrist?"

I put out my wrist, the one with my scars. The shiny diamond revealed itself. Leo looked at the expensive piece of jewelry and laughed coldly. I could sense the sarcasm and irony in his laugh. Before he left me alone, he said: "After so many years, I thought you were different from your mother, seems like I was wrong."

I didn't know where to look at, my eyes were empty. Just before the door shut close, I heard myself mumbling in a very soft voice: "You're wrong."

Leo left in a hurry, he didn't even had dinner and went back to America,

Lance came back in the room, i was still on the floor. He yelled: "I want to work, get out."

I raised my head, my face was emotionless. I said: "Did you have to do this? I know I'm not important, you can bully me however you want, but he's your brother, doesn't it break your heart to hurt him like that?"

Lance sat behind his desk and said: "Look at yourself, you're nothing to him. Don't think that you're anybody."

I laughed coldly and stood up from the floor. "OKAY." I said.

I didn't know how I got out of his study room. I went to the bathroom and did as he said, I looked at myself in the mirror. I have such a young face, such beautiful features, but my face is dead. There's no soul, no spirit.

I filled a bucket of cold water and put my head in it, trying to numb myself with cold water.

I sat on the bed, eyes empty, recalling the time's when we were all younger. I remember one summer afternoon, when I just entered their family. It was very hot, and Lance handed Leo an ice cream. It looked very delicious and Leo started eating it. Lance watched Leo happily while he eats, and patted his head lovingly, saying: "Little brother, you finish you ice cream here alright? You can only eat one, I need to go do my homework."

Leo nodded happily, and I stood far away from them, watching Leo eat. I was drooling.

Leo noticed and gave me half of his ice cream. He didn't care if i was dressed in torn shirts. He gave me half and said: "Hurry up, finish it. Don't let brother notice, if not he's going to make you kneel under the sun again."

After that, when I was older, I only realized Leo loves ice cream, but it makes his stomach hurt so Lance didn't allow him to eat ice cream, he could only eat it once a week, and Leo gave half of his ice cream to me when I wanted.....

That was the best ice cream I have eaten.

The same year, during winter, was also the first winter I spend in the

Mason's Mansion. I wore my thin jacket, since I didn't have any thick ones and got high fever for many days. Leo covered me in his branded jacket and said in his boyish voice: "You will need injection when you get sick, it hurts. So you need thick clothing to prevent getting sick."

That was the first warmth I've ever gotten from the Mason's.

He even gave me his imported medicine. Leo's body was weak when he was a kid, and Lance loves him a lot so he gave Leo the best things he could afford.

Five year old me..... I didn't not if I liked the jacket he put on me, or the boy who cared for me, so when Lance came back from high school and saw me wearing Leo's jacket, he punished me by asking me to kneel in the snow. Nobody helped me, including my own mother. It was Leo who cried like there's no tomorrow in Lance's arm, begging him to release me, did Lance really released me, because he was afraid that Leo might hurt his throat for crying too much.

The care and love that he gave me helped me survive until now. If there's no Leo in my life, I would have died a long time ago.

My first ever pads was even bought by Leo. He accompanied me to the convenient store and bought it for me.

If you ask me what is Leo to me, I would say he was my life and my faith.

When Lance came into the room, I stopped reminiscing. I even smiled at him, I really salute myself for being able to be so strong, even after all of the shit he has put me through.

Lance didn't smile at me, although I did. He went straight to the bathroom.

When he got out of the bathroom, I was already downstairs. The servants served the dishes. He came down and saw me waiting for food and scoffed: "I can't believe you still have the mood to eat."

I smiled at him and said: "Humans need food to survive, right?"

(Lance Mason's short POV: The night before we departed for England, she dreamt and called out a Leo's name. And beside her, I listened to her calling out for Leo Mason the whole night.....)

Reward

400

Comments

8

04:09 

My Paranoid Lover

29.3%

## Chapter 67 My Job

Between me and Lance, we fought, we pretended and acted around each other, and after so many years, I still hadn't found a suitable way to communicate and interact with this man. Purposely pretend around him didn't seem to be working anymore.

Lance sat down and picked up his fork. I ate two plates of food and that shocked the servant.

On the other hand, Lance didn't seem to have an appetite, he took a few bites and stopped eating. The butler asked if the cook changed the recipe as he could taste something different.

Lance didn't blame the cook and instead, he said: "Not bad, see how Ms Gomez is swallowing down all the food?"

I knew he was being sarcastic so I smiled awkwardly the butler and the cook: "I'm grateful to even get to eat."

Lance scoffed and said something about me talking nonsense and always bullshit.

If there were strangers, they would think me and Lance are a couple, to be able to speak sarcastically to each other like that.

But it was just moments ago that we wanted to kill each other, now we were sitting on the dining table, dining together. How fake and pretentious can we humans get?

After dinner, I went to take a shower. When I was done and got out of the bathroom, Lance was already on the bed, reading a sports magazine. He seems to like football a lot, he was always looking at the football pages.

I sat beside him and suggested: "There's a football match tomorrow, wanna go see?"

Lance shifted his attention on me and I could see the look of surprise on his face. "You watch football?"

"I never watched live, but I watch it on stream." I said,

Lance looked really surprised. He must not have thought a woman would like watching football, but it's true, not many women like football.

But I do know a lot of girls who like basketball. The girls in my class back in high school like basketball, all they ever talked about was the NBA players and the games. But do they really like basketball? No, they just wanted to show the boys in 5th class that they are different from other girls.

As for me, I watch football because I like the idea of the game. It's very competitive and full of hope, to me.

I used to even stay up late to watch live matches, and it slowly became a hobby.

But ever since I started to be with Lance, I rarely watch matches anymore, because I felt like there's no point anymore. My life has no more hope, why should I watch something so full of hope?

I must have sparked his interest as he asked: "Do you have any favorite player?"

I pointed at the man inside his magazine and said: "Him, I've been watching him since he last time."

Lance looked at me with wide eyes. "He isn't even good looking, he's got dark skin too, I thought women don't like men like this."

Men always thought all girls like sports player for their looks. No, not me. And I admit, the player that I admire isn't good looking.

"Yes, he isn't good looking, when I started to like him, he just became and adult and had dark hair, plus he was skinny."

"Then what do you like about him? He's not as good as Messi, but of course he's the best among the 90s players." Lance started chatting with me about football.

I stared at the young man in the magazine and thought about why I admire him so much. He's very competitive and doesn't give up easily, and when he sweats like hell running in the fields, chasing after the opponent, he attracted my attention. And ever since that, I have been his fans.

"Perhaps he has something that I envy."

Lance turned his head and looked at me. "What?"

He pretended to be mysterious and said: "Can't tell, why not you guess?"

Lance scoffed. "Who do you think you are? I don't care."

And with that, he continued to read his magazine while I closed my eyes to nap.

I knew I wouldn't be able to sleep tonight, but I still closed my eyes and pretended that there's no problem at all, that i could sleep.

I just closed my eyes and heard Lance speaking softly: "I like Messi, because we are similar in some ways. We are not that extroverted, and nobody knows what we want. I've met him a few times, he's a nice guy."

He said, but I didn't reply him. It's nothing, I shouldn't waste my time on this.

But, he said he isn't good in expressing his feelings. What a joke. He never failed to express to me how much he hated me, he also did a good job always punishing me and making me suffer.

He's always very good at being sarcastic and saying really harsh words.

The next day when I woke up, he asked me a strange question. "You didn't dream last night?"

I looked at at him with confusion. What dream? Why would he ask me about my dream?

I shook my head and said: "perhaps I was too tired so I slept soundly last night."

"Really, then try to go out and play or do more activities in the day

time, don't dream too much at night." Lance said.

What is his problem. Then I realized I must have disturbed him. "Did I disturb you when I dream? Did I make any noise?"

Lance didn't answer me and went to change his clothes. Then he came back and paused for a brief moment. "You clenched your teeth a lot, it's annoying."

I clench my teeth when I sleep? Impossible. When I stayed with a few roommates during my high school, nobody told me about this. He must be lying, there must be a specific reason why he suddenly cared about me dreaming or not.

"If I annoyed you, then I'll sleep in the guest room tonight." I said, since I would prefer to not sleep in the same bed as him if given the chance to.

Lance picked up his expensive watch and put it on, then he glanced at me and smirked: "You make those noises every night and I'm already used to it. I can't believe you're acting like you're someone who can even decide on anything, right now I'm happy with you sleeping on my bed and I can what to do you whenever I can, isn't this your job, sister?"

## Chapter 68 The Forest

Bosses always want their workers to be responsible, seems like this rich boss right here was hinting that he needed his bed lover to be responsible now.

Although Lance hinted me, he didn't touch me last night.

After breakfast, Lance told me to stay in the mansion and don't go out. He needed to meet some friends and it wasn't suitable to bring me along. I said okay, since I needed to check out the underground room.

When he left, I started to wander around the mansion. His house was really huge, I got lost in the middle of wandering around and couldn't even find the underground room Niklaus told me about.

I didn't want to be so obvious so I pretended like I was trying to find the wine cellar and asked the servants. The rich always have a wine cellar, right? I thought Lance might be the same as well.

The servants told me there was no wine cellar here, but there's a glass cupboard full of wine in the 3rd floor.

They were all the wines that Lance collected. The servant asked me if I wanted to drink wine, and told me that all his wine are very expensive and are like treasure to him. She said to not touch it if he didn't give his permission.

I said alright.

I didn't find out anything from the servants, so I started to panic. What if I couldn't find the underground room?

There's a huge forest behind his house and it looked dark and scary. I slowly walked towards it, I was curious. I wanted to know if there would be anything inside.

The forest was surrounded with wires. Why did he surround a forest with wires? Was he hiding something?

I looked around and still couldn't find any entrance. Since I have been doing my own chores at a young age, I was able to climb up the wires slowly and carefully. When I got in, I smelled something weird, like raw flesh and meat.

Raw flesh? I widened my eyes, don't tell me someone died here.....

What was Lance up to? Why did he even have a piece of land here, a forest, and surrounded it up with wires? He must be hiding a secret.

I admit that my imagination is a little to creative, but I knew for sure Lance was hiding something, and he's done dirty business for sure.

Perhaps this piece of forest would reveal his ugly and dark side? It made me even more excited.

I didn't know who gave me extra guts but I walked further into the forest, the smell got stronger and stronger. My heart was beating fast.

I clenched my hands into fist, convincing myself to stay calm and don't scare myself.

Suddenly, I heard a howl. It sounded like a wolf, and far away from

me, I saw a pair of green shiny eyes staring at me. I realized I was in danger and started to run.

But of course, I wouldn't outrun two wolves, right? They started to run very fast towards me.

I didn't only failed to find out about what Lance was hiding, I also nearly lost my life here.

I hadn't even reach the wires and the two wolves had already surrounded me. I was stuck in between them.

The two white wolves howled at me. I couldn't think or move, I might become their lunch.

I was extremely terrified, my mouth was shaking, my teeth were clattering.

Right at this moment, I wished someone could save me, even if it is Lance Mason. I didn't want to die, i still had many things to achieve , I still hadn't avenge myself, I didn't want to die like that!

But the two wolves slowly approached me, opening their wide mouths.

They just needed to take one step and jump on me, then I'm dead. I would become their lunch. I didn't dare to even imagine that scene.

I screamed out loud for help, hoping that someone would hear me.

The two wolves must have been triggered by my scream. They were going to jump on me but suddenly I heard 2 gunshots.

Then the two wolves fell on the ground lifelessly, blood stained the ground.

Lance Mason appeared in front of me with a gun in his hands. He slapped me hard.

He yelled: "Who allowed you to come here? Are you out of your f\*cking mind?!"

The two wolves scared the hell out of me, plus the gunshot terrified me too. My knees gave out and I fell to the ground.

Lance came and held me up by my waists, using his body as a wall for me to lean against.

"Answer me!" He yelled once again.

He was glaring at me with extreme anger. I knew if I simply give him an excuse, he wouldn't believe me. But I couldn't just tell him that I thought he murdered someone here, right?

"I..... I was bored and curious so I came out to have a look." I lied. It was a stupid reason, but I still said it, because I couldn't make up any excuses on the spot.

"Bored and curious? Then how did you come in?" Lance's voice was cold like ice, slicing through my skin.

"I.....I climbed in from the fence, the wire fence." I answered him honestly.

Lance glanced at the fence and scoffed: " How bored were you to

climb up such tall fence? Plus you're a woman!"

I knew he was being sarcastic, I lowered down my head and accepted his scolding. At this time, I should remain silent.

Lance brought me out of the forest and back into our room. He gave me a cold glare and said: "Jennie, you better stop your plots and intentions. Don't think other people are stupid. You think you're the only smart person here? I know what you are thinking, you plan to find if I have any criminal records and report me, right? Hahaha..... you're so naïve I want to laugh."

I was stunned, I never thought he would know everything that I was thinking of. How did he guessed what I was plotting just by looking at me? Why did I still fail to read him even when I try to observe him everyday and even slept beside him every night?

Is this the difference between us? Will he always be the winner, and I, the loser?

If so, then what I had been doing for so long, must have been a joke to him.

"Why aren't you speaking? I guessed correctly, right? I don't want to warn you or anything anymore, if you play any games with me, I will send you back to enjoy your jail food." And with that, he turned around and left the room.

What did he say? He don't mind sending me back to jail? The jail, a place that I never want to step into ever again, that is hell, not jail.

I sat on the ground in the room, laughing at myself. I never expected myself to be such a failure. Lance could guess anything by just spending time with me, and yet here I was trying to plot his death. This was the biggest joke of my life.

So, what now? What do I do?

Did he find out about me looking at his project files about the Lay Water Park?



## Chapter 69 He Found Out

I was so embarrassed I started to cry, I couldn't control myself anymore.

After crying for a while, I went to the bathroom and washed my face. Then I told myself to not give up so easily.

If I don't give up, I believe I would one day find out about his dirty deeds.

I knocked on Lance's study room door. He raised his voice and said 'come in'. I pushed the door open and entered, he was reading his documents. I stood in front of his desk.

He looked up at and said: "What do you want? Trying to look for private and confidential business files? Are you really that dumb?"

My hands turned to fists, telling myself I have to calm down. Calm the hell down.

I put on a pretentious look and acted innocent, I knew he wasn't going to believe what I was about to say, 99% sure, but i was still willing to bet on that 1%.

"Brother, why do you like to misunderstand me so much? You always like to think of me so lowly, you know very well what kind of person I am. I'm not born into a rich and powerful family like you. I have always been a simple person, I just want a person to protect me, to not let me get hurt anymore. It used to be Leo who gave me protection, then I woke up, I know it's impossible between me and Leo. When you saved me from the jail, I already decided to follow you. I hope you can protect me, no matter if I will only ever be your bed lover, I don't care. I just don't want to live under anyone's shadow and get bully ever again. You told me if I obey you, you wouldn't make my life hard, right? If you really mean it, can you please treat me better? I'm also a woman, I have a heart, I'm not as strong as you think. I'm afraid of getting hurt too, it really hurts." I touched my heart while saying this, tears forming in my eyes, threatening to roll down.

I noticed the slight change of expression on Lance's face.

Sometimes, woman can be weapons too. It just depends on how we use ourselves; I've been wrong this whole time. But this time, I also wasn't sure if I was making the right move, but I had no choice but to try.

If I fail, then I have no choice but to die in his hands.

Lance stared at me, who was full of tears now. His furrowed eyebrows meant he didn't believe a single word I said.

Of course, if what I say would make him believe me easily, I wouldn't have been through all of this nonsense.

But this was my last chance, I needed to find a perfect solution slowly. And slowly, I shall cut open his heart and see if it's really as cruel and as evil as he behaves.

"Since you're so sincere, then can you explain why you went to that forest just now? Did you think I would hide something there?" Lance

asked calmly.

I see, seems like we still couldn't move away from this topic. Perhaps the excuse I gave just now really sucked.

"Brother Leo, he has very good drawing skills." I said.

Lance raised an eyebrow, confused why I would bring up Leo.

"What are you trying to say?" he asked.

"I..... I once saw Leo's portfolio. I saw this forest and just wondered how it looks like."

I wasn't willing to bring up Leo, because every time I do, my heart hurts like hell. But I had no choice but to use his name now, so that he might at least believe me and let his guard down a little.

I know this was a b\*tch move, but I really had no more choice.

Lance's face was full of anger right now.

I had a very daring thought, if Lance loves Leo so much and still purposely let Leo know about our dirty relationship, hurting his dear brother, what was he really thinking?

Did he really just wanted Leo to see what kind of woman I am? Was this his ONLY intention?

I wouldn't ask Lance: do you like me

No, I wouldn't do that like I used to anymore.

I've been by his side for some time now, I knew some things are best left unspoken.

"Get out!" Lance yelled, pointing at me.

How harsh, but it made me excited. I believe if there's danger, there will also be a change.

What if the change is Lance's feelings for me?

I started to bet again.

I left his study room and sighed out in relief. I remember reading a book, the author said if a man falls in love, it wouldn't affect his IQ or EQ, if a man really falls in love, they like to numb themselves, making them look like they are easy to fool.

Lance is too smart, I wouldn't be able to outsmart him.

I didn't have any other choice, if I want to get further evidence, I have to get his heart. I have to own his heart, make him fall in love with me.

And only this way, would he let his guard down. This way, I can dive deep into his and get what I want.

I admit, I'm acting like a total b\*tch now.

What I said in the study room to Lance? Bullshit. But one sentence is particularly true. I'm tired of getting bullied everyday.

## Chapter 70 Hurt

In the noon at around 3pm, Lance asked me if I wanted to join him in watching the football match.

Since he asked, of course I had no choice but to say yes. If I spend time with him more, I might become more important to him, I guess?

Lance drove us to the stadium. He didn't bring any of his servants or driver, it was just us, alone. We drove from London to Manchester City. It took us around 3 hours to arrive. We ate at a restaurant near the stadium and went in to wait for the match.

I looked around and noticed more and more British and Whites entering the stadium. I got a little scared for no reason, they were all very tall and big, and they didn't look particularly friendly.

Lance noticed my discomfort and turned around, looking at me he asked: "What's wrong?"

I whispered into his ears and said, "Do you know what is famous in England?"

"What?" he asked in confusion.

"Football gangsters, look at these people with fierce faces. If their favourite team didn't win, they would start fighting. If we sit between them, we might not get lucky." I said.

Lance listened to what I said and looked around. "You really do know something about football, you still know their team jersey."

Since our topic of conversation came to football, I didn't mind chatting with him.

We talked a lot about different teams before the match started. I was able to chat with him regarding football, as I am really someone who watched football a lot. And due to my good memories, I have always been able to remember stuff about football.

Lance stared at me with wide eyes, he must not have expected a little woman like me would have so much knowledge about football. He must have thought I said I like football just to make him happy.

He started to talk to me more about football, he seemed to be really into this topic.

"If you like, you could always set up a small football club, since you don't even care about those small amount of money, why not? It may help bring some profit too." I said and winked.

From his eyes, I knew Lance was satisfied with my behaviour right now.

"You're right, I don't mind the small amount of money, but if we want to do it, we must do it well. However, for now, I don't have the time or energy for this yet." Lance said.

I thought about it for a while and the corner of my lips twitched up, "Why not you let me do it? I'm interested in this!" I exclaimed.

"You..... what can a woman like you do for football?" Lance

smirked, perhaps he has always looked down on woman like me.

I shrugged my shoulder, "I was just suggesting, nothing serious."

The match started in no time, we sat on the bench and watch the players running around on the green field.

During the first half, the two teams got a tie. It wasn't a very competitive match and not very excited.

The next half match on the other hand, was much more exciting. The two teams kept taking turns in scoring. Nobody knew what to expect until the end of the match!

This made me think, it's not confirmed yet who would be the winner or loser, me or Lance Mason.

Perhaps we were like this two teams, nobody would know who wins until the end of the match, until one side dies.

When the match ended, me and Lance stood up t leave, but just when we were about to exit the stadium, we heard gunshots. In Western countries, people are allowed to own guns, but it was still unbelievable to me that someone actually brought guns into a sports stadium!

The football fans started to go crazy in the stadium. Everyone panicked, it was a mess. Lance pulled me into his arms and hugged me tightly. Nobody knew if the bullets would enter their body just like that.

I was so terrified that I was shaking in his arms. I have never seen such a scene. On the other hand, Lance was pretty calm, like he had already witnessed and experienced something like this.

"Don't worry, we'll be fine, I'll get us out safely." Lance comforted me.

I nodded in his arms, not even speaking a word.

Suddenly, a black guy with a gun aimed at our direction. I was so shocked that I pushed both of us down. Lance didn't know what happened and I landed on top of him. The bullet pierced into my skin. It hit my back.

I couldn't believe myself. Why did I save him instead of myself?

Why the hell did I take a bullet for the man I hated so much?

## Chapter 71 Complicated Woman

I really didn't think too much, I seriously didn't even think at all. But to be honest, I didn't think of saving him, but yet I did. I saved the man I hated so much! I couldn't believe it, how pathetic was I? How ironic!

The black guy was soon pressed down by the cops. Lance got up quickly and carried me up. His hands were covered with my blood from my back. I could see the worried look on his face. When I was carried into the ambulance, he held onto my hand the whole way, telling me that I'll be fine, that I will be okay.

To be frank, I was still very much conscious. Although it hurt a lot, and I really wanted to faint so that I couldn't feel the pain, but my brain was conscious.

I knew very clearly that once the bullet is taken out, ill be fine. But facing Lance Mason, who was looking concerned right now, I should probably cry and force out some tears to further soften his heart, right?

I held onto his hand tightly and put on a pained expression: "Brother, it hurts! I'm really in pain!" my tears rolled down my cheeks slowly.

When the bullet pierced my skin, not a single tear came out form my eyes, yet here I was, trying to act pitiful.

Long story short, my tears kept falling down, while Lance kept helping me wipe the tears away.

When we arrived at the hospital, they pushed me into the ER, but I held onto Lance's hand tightly, not letting go. The nurses tried to pull our hands away but I just wouldn't let go. "I won't leave, alright, I'll wait for you outside the ER, you're going to be alright. Trust me, Jennie." Lance comforted me.

I still wasn't willing to let go, and my sudden clingy attitude must have been strange to Lance.

"What's wrong with you?" Lance asked, with a raised eyebrow.

I pouted my lips and gave him a puppy look, "Can you go in with me and stay by my side? I don't know what's wrong with me, I don't want to face this alone. Brother, please, I'm scared."

Lance heard my plea and asked the doctor if he was allowed to go in. The doctor said okay and he went to change.

The doctors helped me clean the wound and took out the bullet. I was a little nervous and held Lance's hand tightly. He felt my nervousness and patted the back of my hand gently, "The doctor said the bullet didn't hit anywhere fatal, so you're going to be okay."

I nodded and said, "Hm, I know, I'm not scared anymore when I see brother beside me. You're like Mr Powerful, you are going to make sure nothing happen to me, right?"

Lance find my words funny and chuckled: "What Mr Powerful, don't simply give me nicknames."

He must think I was praising him, but no, I was being sarcastic. Mr

Powerful, so powerful that he could ruin my life and control me like that.

The pretty brunette nurse helped me put on drip-feeding after the operation when I was sent to the VIP ward. Lance sat beside me, watching me.

I touched my face and asked, "Brother, why are you staring at me like this? Is there something on my face?"

Lance shook his head and said, "No, your face is clean, but very pale, you need to eat more healthy food."

I nodded in agreement. He was still watching me.

I stared back at him, and just like that, we sat and stared at each other in silence. After a long moment, Lance spoke up, "Why did you take that bullet for me?"

His voice was slightly hoarse.

But he was also very calm, as if it was a normal thing for him that people took a bullet for him.

I didn't know what to say, I knew if I say I didn't want anything to happen to him so I took that bullet for him, he wouldn't believe me.

I wouldn't even believe myself if I said that.

But honestly, I really did save him because it's my nature. It's always my nature to save myself, but this time, I saved him instead. And I didn't even know why.....

"Because I didn't want you to get hurt." I answered.

And of course, he didn't believe a word I said. He stared at me with sharp eyes, I didn't dare stare back.

Lance raised my chin and said word my word, "Why didn't you want anything to happen to me? If something happened to me, you can escape me!"

Lance isn't a child, I knew my reason wouldn't fool him. But even if he knew, I still had to continue this act, because men are all the same. Once he let his guard down around me, I win.

At least this time I took a bullet for him and saw real worries on his face.

I pulled the edge of his sleeve and said in a soft voice, "Brother, can you stop thinking me as a complicated and difficult woman? I'm very simple."

## Chapter 72 He Won

Lance didn't let out a word after he heard what I say, he just kept staring at me. I didn't know how long was he going to stare at me like this, I just held my breath and waited for him to stop.

He tucked me in the duvet and reached his hand out to stroke my face softly, "I won't be hard on you anymore, don't worry."

I remembered the previous times and look into his eyes fearlessly, "You said you won't be hard on me last time, but you....."

I didn't have to finish my sentence because he knew very clearly.

"Why are you so nosy! I said I won't anymore and I mean it."

Lance got frustrated out of the blue.

I chose to stay silent at this moment.

After the investigation of the police in England, it turned out to be just some violent case caused by some gangster. In the western countries, many countries had granted their people to hold a gun, and this causes cases like this to happen frequently.

Even though it's a bullet wound, it didn't cause any serious damage to my body, therefore I am good to go after staying in the hospital a few days. My wound had been healing in the speed of light, but I still couldn't lift my arm swiftly, it's a bullet wound after all.

When I was staying in the hospital, Lance went back to Denmark to attend the bidding.

I was very nervous in the meantime and always pay attention to every news from Denmark.

If Lance wins the bidding, that means that the report I saw isn't the real report.

Could it be the trick Lance played to lead me to that report?

If so, that means he knew what I had been doing all the time.

He knew what my intention was but he didn't do anything to stop me, was he being nice to me?

A shiver ran down my spine just thinking about it. If he had installed a hidden CCTV, he has all the right to sue me and this isn't just any crime, I may find myself in the prison for a long period.

I was still in the hospital when Niklaus called me. Just when I picked up the phone, the nervousness laced through the voice of Niklaus, "You gave me the wrong data, Jennie, it was completely different compared to Lance's."

I explained to Niklaus calmly, "Lance isn't some normal businessman, the important bidding document won't be simply laying on the table for me to steal, and I know Mr. Sands has the same view as me on this. I never said that the bidding documents will be the same as what Lance is going to show during the bidding, I told you to analyse all the data yourself."

The other side of the phone gone silent for a second after he finally

speaks again, "You are right, I can't 100% trust you, but the data you gave me has a huge difference compared to the data he shows at the end. The data you gave me is obviously for distraction, he wants to lead us to a completely different path."

"You should know about my relationship with Lance Mason, I am no one to him, what makes you think that I will be able to see the real bidding documents? I am sorry to cause you such a loss but I don't think the responsibility is on me!"

I didn't pay attention to what he said afterward, all I remember was the last thing he told me before he hung up the call, "Lance Mason is a sly man, you should be careful. There must be more documents in the mansion in England, if you can go back in there try to find something. The sex videos of all the officer doesn't help much. You need to find something related to him offering and accepting bribes."

"I will try my best, we are on the same boat, we all hope to see him on the bad end."

I knew how crafty Lance Mason can be than anyone else, I didn't need him to remind me.

After the phone call, I deleted the history of this phone call. It was in a second, the butler of the mansion in England had come and brought me out of the hospital. I was being sent back to the enormous mansion directly, Lance wasn't in the mansion, the butler told me he would be back in two days.

Lance comeback on the second night after I came back from the hospital. I was actually quite curious how quickly he returned.

Wasn't he busy taking care of all the emergency of Lay Water Park after he won the bidding? It makes me uneasy because he won the bidding of Lay Water Park.

In the night, he made me lay on the side of my arm that has no bullet wound and he came in from behind me.

Even though he was gentler, I still felt uncomfortable.

He saw that I was in pain, therefore after having sex twice, he then lay down beside me.

My mind was a bit messed up thinking about the possibility of him installing a CCTV in the mansion back in then.

I was sure that I had checked carefully before, there was no CCTV around. But how did he know? Had he been taking guard on me?

"Why aren't you sleeping? Not tired enough?" He said while looking at me.

Facing him made me guilty, I didn't dare to look into his eyes.



## Chapter 73 Opinions

"Did the bidding go well for you? I saw the news; it was really successful!"

Lance reached his hand out and held me against his chest, he stared into my eyes and said, "Why? You hope that I didn't win the bidding?"

I quickly shook my head and explained, "No, you've misunderstood me, of course I hope you win the bidding, I'm just curious, Lay Water Park is a huge project, shouldn't the bidding be competitive? But you won it so easily. I'm just curious, nothing more."

Lance put his hands on my face and pinched my nose, "Why would the bidding be competitive? The one who gave a better price gets the project, that's all."

He stopped after that and spoke again, "But it's still strange that the data and bidding document Sand's company gave out are a bit familiar to mine, I feel like I have seen it somewhere!"

Lance suddenly stared into my eyes and it made me want to hide from him, but I couldn't! All I could do is make something up, "Really? Sand's company does the same business as Mason's company so maybe their bidding documents and data were once your ideal!"

Lance nodded his head and said, "You're right, I had the same ideal for bidding documents, it can save up a lot of money, this is because I didn't count the environment protection part into it, therefore, it's definitely going to have different data. Niklaus Sands wants to take this project but he didn't count in the recycle part which was important for the nation now, no wonder he didn't win the bidding."

"Lay Water Park is such a huge project, if you count in the recycle part it will be a huge amount of money. The budget for environmental protection will be more expensive than other infrastructure." I said.

"You do know a lot, Jennie Gomez. You are smarter than I think you are. Smarter than Leo who know nothing about business."

I didn't expect Lance to suddenly bring up Leo while praising me.

But I better keep quiet. I didn't want to piss this man off.

"The budget for environment protection can't be too much, because it will damage the whole profit of the project, for a businessman, this is a cost-effective business. You can't put too much money into it, if you do so, the whole funding chain will probably break." Lance was suddenly interested in discussing the whole Lay Water Park project.

I have seen that land before, I knew there are a lot of over-exploded coaling mining area around it, if you want to clean that land up, you will need a lot of money.

Lance looked at me with interest and said, "You seem to have a lot of ideas? Tell me about it."

I'll say if he wants.

"How about turning the cooling mining area into a man-made lake, and build some high-class mansion around it, even though it can't be compared to a sea view mansion but it's still a lake view mansion. Building some school and office in a distance from the lake will also be fine. Therefore, you can kill two birds with one stone, you get to take care of the part of environmental protection, the government would want to plant a lot of trees there, we can plant a few trees around the tree. So, you should keep digging, and make a man-made lake, you can save money and take care of the environment at once."

I saw his shocked impression when I finished my sentence.

"Is this what you think?" he was shocked.

What makes me more stunned was the amusement in Lance's eyes.

I felt like I was slowly breaking his wall.

Lance suddenly held onto my wounded arm pressed me underneath him. He slowly got closer to my face and kissed me, again and again.

The sudden gentleness and passion from Lance made me confused. I didn't know how to react.

Even though my body didn't seem to be able to endure this, we still had sex several times until my wound started to bleed again that night.

I can feel that after I accidentally took the bullet for him, he was starting to change his attitude towards me. He wasn't as hard on me like he used to be anymore.

He also likes to discuss Lay Water Park with me whenever he was free.

I was able to give him the most suitable advice at the most suitable time. He started to like talking to me more and more in the past ten days in England.

I was almost completely healed when Lance brought me back to California.

I didn't get to find anything in England in the past few days, but I was slowly walking into the heart of Lance. Once he finally accepts me that is when my victory begins.

On the plane back to California, Lance looked at the design proposal we discussed recently.

I was bored and I decided to take a pencil and a paper and start to draw Lance who was currently very focused on the proposal.

"What are you drawing again now?" Lance suddenly asked me.

I was frightened by his sudden questions that I unintentionally threw away my pencil.

"Why are you so nervous? What is on your mind?" He was not happy with my behaviour.

Reward

400

Comments

6

04:09 

My Paranoid Lover

32.4%

## Chapter 74 Get Involved

I quickly shook my head and said, "it's not what you think, I was just really into drawing you, and you had frightened me when you suddenly ask me a question."

He reached out his hand asked, "Why don't you show me if you were really drawing me?"

I handed him the paper and when he saw it, he wasn't happy with it, he knit his eyebrows together and say, "Do I look that comical?"

My drawing was a bit comic, that's why the Lance I drew seemed to be a bit comical.

"This is a comic drawing, every person in a comic looks like this, I didn't intentionally vilify you," I explained, afraid that he would think that I intentionally did that.

Lance watched carefully at my drawing and picked up the pencil on the table. He drew something on the paper. It was a girl. He handed it to me and said, "See! It looks like you!"

I looked at the drawing, it has a chubby body, a round head, small eyes, and a big mouth. It looked really bad.

"It doesn't look like me at all! I don't look like that; I have a pair of big eyes and my mouth isn't that big!"

Lance pinched my face with amusement, "You do don't look that bad, you look cute."

I smiled at his remark and said, "Really? This is the first time you ever praise me! I feel a bit shocked."

"So, are you suggesting me to praise you more?" He smirked.

I nodded, "If you insist."

This was the happiest moment we had shared in the twenty years that we've known each other.

When we finally landed, a man who accidentally knocked my wounded arm. The sudden pain caused my eyes to redden and Lance knit his eyebrow while looking at the man.

"Are you okay? Does it hurt?" Lance asked with concern.

"It's okay," I said. Then I flashed him a smile.

Lance held my hand in his and stroke my hand with his thumb, "After we go back, ask the doctor to have a check up on you."

Was Lance worried about me?

But I didn't ask him because I was afraid that I will get humiliated by him.

After we arrived at Pavilion Residence, Lance quickly called the doctor. He demanded the doctor to give me a full body check up.

The doctor arrived shortly and he did a full check-up. He said I was fine.

Lay Water Park project was going to start soon, it would begin next

Monday. The first to start working was the design part, I really wished Lance would let me get involved in this project, so I could get more useful information.

Lance was busy nowadays; he needed to make sure all the design paper was perfect.

After we came back from England, he never mentioned anything about letting me go back to work anymore.

Now I am just like a mistress who didn't need to work, all I needed to do was to stay at this luxurious mansion, dress myself up, shop and do anything a mistress will do.

But I am never a person like that, I wanted to go to the company and work.

Niklaus once told me Lance had cheated while doing all his estate business to save up budget.

He knows many government officers and they been accepting and offering bribes. It has been going on for a long time, therefore it was easy for him to do so.

I didn't know if Niklaus was being honest with me but I needed to dig it up and see if Lance would get his hands dirty for this enormous project.

This is a huge project, and also a huge investment, Niklaus said Lance would even probably use his own personal money.

There were rumours about the government investing a few billion into this project.

With the help of the government, Lance would be able to save up a huge amount of money!

He would find himself in prison for a few years if the news about this was revealed to the public.

So, I must get myself involved in the project.

Lance went into his office after he came back home, and he hasn't come out yet. I brought a cup of coffee to him.

He let me in after a few knocks on his door.

He was surprised to see me when I opened the door, "Why aren't you resting!" He asked.

## Chapter 75 Discussion

"I have been resting all day, it's time for me to walk around now."

I served the coffee to him.

He took a sip of the coffee and placed it on the table. Then, he continued to look at the design papers and sketches on the table.

This should be the design of Lawrence, seeing his eyebrows knitting together I knew that he was not happy with his design. I took a look, it was a classy and elegant design.

But there's still room for improvement. Laurence is a top designer; all his design is classy and high class. This project is designed for high-class mansions and apartments, but this is also a project for the people's well-being. It should have a balance point between normal people and wealthy people.

In Lawrence's design, I could only see the part for the high-class. If Lance uses this design for the project, the whole project would end up to be only for the wealthy person.

This wasn't what Lance wanted, obviously.

Lance tilted his head up, he looked into my eyes and he smiled lightly, "Come and help me observe this design."

He has been smiling at me more recently, his attitude was totally different compared to before. I am the woman who took a bullet for him, of course he should be treating me better.

"Is this from Lawrence?" I asked even though I already knew.

Lance took a sip of the coffee and said, "Lawrence's design has been getting weaker now, there is no soul in his design. He never draws out what I want!"

Lance was thinking about hiring a foreign designer, he didn't have much time left to keep modifying the design.

"Maybe this isn't the same style of designs he always do, I have seen his designs before, his style of designs is more high standard and for high-class people. This is a project for the people's well-being. If we think about the profit in future, I think we can deduct a bit from the high-class part, we just need to build a few high-class mansion around the lake and maybe a few fine dining. As for the route, we can build a subway station beside the road, and all the subway station can connect to some shopping mall. This should be fine. We can also have a small park not far away from the shopping mall. And besides the park, we can build some normal residences that are closer to school."

When I finished speaking and looked at Lance, he didn't seem to agree to my opinion.

These ideas had come across my mind before, but Lance never ask me so I won't just simply give out my opinion.

It would just make me look like I was highly interested in this project. This would definitely make Lance suspicious.

"It's a good idea, but the design won't be suitable." He said.

"I have been living in this country for many years, I think if we put ourselves in the shoes of the local, they won't want a place that has a big difference between both residences and malls. Their consuming ability is still not that high, the people in this country, according to recent economy situation here, unlike in Denmark, they won't buy something good for themselves even though they have the ability to do so, they are more into things that are cheaper. I think we should think of the consuming ability of the people when we design."

Lance stared at me without speaking a word.

Was I giving too much opinion? I was hoping that Lance would let me get involved in the project as soon as possible.

"Sorry, I was talking too much, don't mind me."

"Why are you apologizing? You are helping me. Many designers don't include the local situation while designing, they just stick to their style as always. You are right, this place isn't like Denmark, the GDP of Denmark is far higher than California. We should really consider the consuming ability of the local because after all, we are a businessman. We still want to sell the houses and products. If no one wants to purchase due to high prices, this project is going to fail, all the funds will be gone and all the hard-work will be nothing."

Lance's eyes were shining with hope after he heard my opinion, he used my finger to point at a place on the maps, "See, this is the place where I will extend out, I promise the government and people to make this project perfect, environment protecting isn't some joke, we will do it as we promised. The process of doing the man-made lake will keep going and extending, and it will use up a few surface areas, this will affect the whole arranging of the project but this is a part of environmental protection."

Lance said that he wants to protect the environment as promised, didn't Nicklaus said he always cheat in his projects? He would deduct the amount of material, and this had caused a few buildings to collapse. But luckily no one was hurt.

He was a bad businessman in my eyes.

"But the thing is, how do we bring running water into the lake? We can't use water that will not flow, it is a big lake."

"I heard that there is a groundwater artery not far away, it is linked to a river. If we can connect it to the river, the running water will be able to flow into the lake then."

"I will ask my men to go check it out, if the groundwater can work for us, we can use this idea. But we still need to solve some minor problems." Lance said.

If what Niklaus said was real, I think Lance would be able to settle those minor problems with bribes.

If he really bribes the officers, I would be able to collect evidence of him offering bribes. All I needed to do now is to get myself involved in

this project as soon as possible.

Lance picked me up and put me on his desk and stroke my face,"  
You really are something, Jennie Gomez."

"Hahaha, it's nothing compare to brother." I laughed.

He gave me a peck on my lips and said, "Anyways, you're right.  
Since we have the same opinion, I'll let you work on it."

"Me? Don't be silly, brother. I'm not working in the company now; I  
will just stay at home and be your little woman." I pretended to reject his  
offer.

He tilted my chin up and stared into my eyes with all seriousness,  
"You really don't want to work at the company?"

I laughed lightly and replied, "I really don't want to go back to the  
company to work, I haven't been enjoying my life before, I am happy  
right now, I think I've been overworking myself previously."

"What you are saying is, you had a miserable time before?" He said,  
seeming to be triggered by whatever I said.

## Chapter 76 Grateful

His good mood turned to a bad mood because of my words, so I quickly explained for myself, "I was immature back then, always pissed you off. I am thankful to the Mason's family; you gave me a place to live and let me grow up peacefully. I shall be thankful and appreciate this till my last breath."

I put my hand on my chest while lying to him to make him feel better.

Lance put his big hand on mine, feeling my heartbeat, "Your lying skills have improved a lot."

I smiled awkwardly, "I'm not lying, brother! I am being honest. You see, if it wasn't for the Mason's family, I wouldn't be able to grow up peacefully, right?"

"You're grateful towards Mason's? Really?"

I nodded, "Yes, I am absolutely grateful!"

Lance swept me off the floor and carried me in a bridal style after hearing my words and walked towards his bedroom.

I put my hands around the back of his neck and flashed him my best smile.

He put me on the bed and laid on top of me, stroking my face while he said, "Shouldn't you do something to thank the Mason's if you are really grateful?"

With that, he started to unbutton my pyjamas. I played dumb and said, "What should I do, brother?" Of course, I knew what he was referring to.

He had unbuttoned all the buttons and started to rub at my private area, "To please me of course. What else do you expect?"

My heart skipped a beat when I heard the sound of him unbuckling his belt, we had been intimate for many times, I wasn't numb yet I still felt nervous every time.

Every time he came inside of me, I could still feel the hate towards him. I hope I can get out of this life as soon as possible.

I didn't know what his intention was or if he forgot about protection, he released inside of me. He would always use protection after my contraceptive ring came off. Seems like I needed to take the pills after this.

"What face was that?" He asked me.

"You didn't use protection." I said.

He showed me his cold facial expression and said, "Wearing a protection isn't comfortable, just take the pills."

"I'm allergic to the pills; I will just go and put in another contraception ring after this."

He knew I am allergic to that kind of pills yet he still wanted me to take it.



Was this his so-called 'I won't be hard on you anymore'?

"Contraceptive ring is made of metals, it will harm your body, don't go for it. I hired someone to prepare different types of contraception pills for you."

With that, he walked to his study room and brought a white bottle of pills back with him.

He tossed it to me and said, "These pills should be fine."

I picked up the bottle and looked at all the words. It was a long-term contraceptive pill.

"Thanks, brother."

He threw me a bottle of contraceptive pills after being intimate with me and I still have to say 'thank you', what a dramatic life.

Obviously, my 'thank you' didn't make him happier, his bad mood was just up to another level. He looked at me coldly and barked, "Go and take the pills! You better don't get pregnant with my child!"

The same words again. How many times was he going to repeat that?

I took two pills out of the bottle and swallowed it; it tasted a bit sour.

Even after I took the pills his bad moods didn't go away. He just laid down beside me and fell asleep.

The next day when he woke up, I asked him if I needed to go to the company and work.

He thought about it for a second or two and said, "You don't have to go to the company to work, just stay at home and do the design, I will send you the proposal later and we will discuss it after I come back later."

"Shouldn't I discuss this with the design team? It will generate more ideas." I asked.

He ran his hand through his bed hair and said, "I need the whole design to be done by only one person and not more than one person. You just design it and I will let the design team do some modifications on some parts of it."

He let me use his study room and told me to ask him online if I had any questions.

After he went out, I went into his study room and used his laptop to do some drawing. I didn't pay much attention to the details because what Lance wanted was just a conceptual graph, I will let the design team take care of the details.

Lance doesn't like to use email; he prefers WhatsApp more than email.

I had some questions that I needed to ask him so I used WhatsApp on his laptop and I found out that I just need to press log in and I would be in his WhatsApp because he saved his password in his browser. But I didn't do so.

Just when I was deep in my thoughts, Lance called. I quickly picked

up his call and from the other side of the phone he said, "I have a document in the second drawer, I need it now, help me send it to the company."

After that, I went and opened the second drawer and saw a document. It must be some not so important document if he let me touch it. I opened it when I was on the way to the company, it was just some random document. There was a lot of data and I don't really understand most of them.

( I realized it in the future that it was an important document for me. And it was because of this document, Lance started to trust me. He was waiting for me to do something with this document but I didn't. )

## Chapter 77 Rupert Robinson

I went straight to his office after I arrived and I saw his secretary, Wendy, smiling at me and said, "It was a long time ago since I last saw you, Jennie."

Her smile was not sincere at all. I never have a good impression of her.

"Yeah, it was a long time ago. Is Mr. Mason in his office or the meeting room?" I asked.

"Mr. Mason is in the meeting room now, you can give it to me, I will pass it to him when he comes back. You can go back now if there is nothing more to do." She said while reaching her hand out to take the document.

But I didn't let her take it from me, "I will just pass it to Mr. Mason myself, this might be some important document. I will wait for him in his office." I walked towards his office without waiting for her to reply, not noticing the angry look she shot me.

I waited for Lance to come back from his meetings by sitting on his sofa. I waited for 30 minutes before he came back.

He was adjusting his tie while walking into the office, "You don't have to go back to the mansion, stay back and have lunch with me."

I pointed at the document I put on his desk and said, "Is that the document you want?"

He opened it and said, "Yes this is the one. I am going to meet a business partner now. Stay here and wait for me."

I nodded and smiled at him, "Okay, I will wait for you."

I waited for another 30 minutes after that and when he came back, he pulled me up from the sofa and said, "You must be hungry. What would you like to eat? Chinese or Western?"

"Anything you like, brother. I am not picky when it comes to food." I said.

"You're a good child. Not like Leo, he was very picky on food when he was little, he didn't want to eat fruits and vegetables. I remember that you eat anything when you are little. If my children in the future are like you, I won't have to worry so much."

Why would I be picky when I was little? I can't even get full sometimes. Poor people like us needed to eat what we have to survive. Picky eaters are for the rich, not us.

"Your child should be like you, brother. Smart like you and everyone will like your child. If they are like me, then they wouldn't make everyone happy around them" I looked at the road in front and said.

The car suddenly accelerated because Lance stepped on the pedal all of the sudden. I was holding onto the seat belt for my dear life. I was afraid but I didn't tell him. I am nothing to him, he wouldn't care if I was afraid.

Lance didn't talk to me after we arrived, he just got out of the car and walked into the restaurant. I quickly followed behind him and thought about what I have done to piss him off again.

Just when we stepped into the restaurant, Lance walked into a person he knows, Rupert Robinson, the owner of Robinson's Company. I saw him once at a party at the Sand's.

I heard some rumours about his fierce wife, yet he still dared to have not one, not two, but three mistresses.

But who am I to judge them? I was Lance's mistress too.

Rupert Robinson was excited to meet Lance here, he quickly rushed to us and held Lance's hand, "I finally get to meet you Mr. Mason! Your secretary always said that you are not in when I want to visit you."

Lance coldly pushed Rupert's hands off of him and said, "I am really busy."

"Sure, you are busy! It's really hard to meet you but since we are here, would you like to have lunch with me, Mr. Mason?"

Lance looked at me and it seems like he was asking for my opinion.

"It's okay, I just want to have lunch without any work involved."

Lance walked away after that and Rupert suddenly barked at our direction, "Is Mr. Mason burning the bridge after you cross it?!"

Well, well, what did Lance do to make Rupert Robinson say that?

"Does Mr. Mason know that the mayor had been ferreting out to have the report of having a bribe cost 800 million?" Rupert Robinson said.

Lance stopped on his way but Rupert kept on going, "Mr. Mason had so many worthy lands in the city, I heard some rumours about how you got all the projects! Aren't you afraid of what the mayor will tell everyone?" Rupert shouted from behind us.

## Chapter 78 Crime

Lance stopped on his way when he heard what Rupert Robinson said, he turned around and smirked at him, "Why should I be afraid? Shouldn't you be afraid, Mr Robinson?"

Rupert Robinson was affected by the words of Lance; I could see that his blood ran cold even though I was standing far away from him. When I turned to look at Lance, his face showed 'I didn't do anything dirty.' But I didn't believe him.

Rupert Robinson then said, "You are right, Mr. Mason, I am afraid. The mayor has been captured and I believe that he will tell everyone everything very soon. You really don't worry about that?"

Lance laughed at his words, "Why would I worry about that? I didn't do anything illegal. I did some business with you, Mr. Robinson, but everything was legal. If you have so many time, why don't you find some way to save yourself before the mayor tells the world everything, instead of trying to pull me into this dirty water?"

I saw Rupert's blood run cold again.

"What do you mean, Lance Mason!" He shouted and blocked our way.

Lance led me away from him, Rupert shouted again behind us, "If anything ever happens to me, I will tell all the dirty things you have done behind the closed door, Lance Mason!"

Lance laughed at his threat.

He held my hand and brought me our table.

Lance looked at the menu and ordered some food. After that, he passed the menu to me and said, "Order anything that you like. This restaurant is quite famous here, you've never been here before?"

I look at the decorations of the restaurant, the food here must be expensive. One meal here can cost me a whole month's worth of living cost. But I didn't tell him.

"I was busy with study back then, and after that, I was busy with work. So, I didn't really have much time to enjoy meals. I would just simply eat, anything was fine to me." I explained.

Lance wasn't pleased with my explanation, "You should know how to enjoy life. Life is short."

I laughed bitterly to myself. Poor people like us don't have the chance to enjoy life like the rich.

"You are right, brother. We should know to enjoy our lives." I said and looked at him while smiling, "But brother you don't know how to enjoy your life even though you have a lot of money."

He was amused at my words and asked, "Why would you say so?"

"You are so busy that you don't even have time to sleep, let alone enjoy it. Mason's Company is a huge company, you need to make decisions for everything every day. I don't even get to see you smile



most of the time. To be honest, you are not happy, brother."

I heard a sharp noise. Lance put down the glass in his hands hardly on the table.

"Who do you think you are, acting like you know me?!" He growled.

I placed my hands on my lap and started to tap my fingers against my lap.

I tilted my head up and said bravely, "You are right, I am no one to you. I know you never see me as your woman. I am just a toy to you, you have warned me many times, I won't forget that."

He looked into my eyes and looked like he was going to say something but he didn't.

We remained silent until the food was served.

All the foods on the table were dishes that I have never seen in my life.

Lance put some food on my plate and I smiled at him, "Thank you, brother!"

After lunch, we exited the restaurant. There is a shopping mall opposite the restaurant.

Lance said to buy some new clothes because Spring is coming. But I said I still have a lot of new clothes, so I don't need to buy new clothes.

Lance looked at me weirdly and I quickly explained myself. "I just don't want to bother you since you are busy. You can give me your card; I can go to the mall by myself."

Lance gave me his card, "The pin is 111111, I have a meeting later, I will ask the driver to come fetch you later."

I took the card and nodded. I stood on my tip toe and gave him a slight peck on his lips.

Lance was stunned by my action; I looked at him nervously and I saw him smile slowly afterwards. He reached out his hands to stroke my hair and asked me to go and be careful. I then said goodbye to him.

Prev



Next



## Chapter 79 Working Behind Him

I walked into the mall and watched as Lance drove away. I quickly walked out of the mall and walked back to the restaurant.

I needed to find Rupert Robinson.

Suddenly, all I saw was black and darkness.

When I opened my eyes again, I realized that I was in a hotel room.

I saw Rupert Robinson standing in front of me. I recalled looking for him in the restaurant.

I could have contacted Rupert Robinson through Niklaus Sands, but my brain told me not to believe in that man. I had a good impression on Niklaus before I knew the blonde girl who told me that she had done abortion three times for him. To me, he was just like Lance, a f\*ckboy. He won't be nice to me if he could do that to his own woman.

I can only trust myself in this world.

Rupert Robinson was looking at me with lust in his eyes. At that moment, I knew that Rupert Robinson is just a moron. Even at this critical period for his business and himself, all he cared about was the thing in his pants. I sighed, men.....

"I won't be able to get out of that dirty water, the mayor is going to pull me in. So, if Lance Mason doesn't want to save me, I will just have a taste of his mistress."

He was going to lay on top of me before I said, "Wait a minute! I can help you!"

He halted half way and asked me, "How would you save me? You are just a mistress of Lance Mason."

"You are right, I am just a mistress of Lance Mason, but I live with him, I know a lot of secrets about him. I can save you, if you work with me."

Rupert Robinson hesitated; I know he was moved by my word. He had no more choice to save himself. Working with him can lead me to more information of the crimes Lance had done.

"I don't know much about your situation but from the talk you had with Lance Mason today, I know that you are definitely dead now, no one is going to save you."

My words seemed to have triggered him, "You are just a woman who doesn't know anything! Stop talking nonsense!"

"It's not important that I am talking nonsense or not! The important thing is I can help you! You don't have to go to jail!" I explained.

"How would you know that I am going to jail?!" He asked me.

"I have heard everything in the restaurant, isn't that obvious enough? And you are sweating, obviously showing that you are guilty! You have two choices here, you either work with me or you go and enjoy your jail food."

I gave him two choices, choice A and choice B, A will bring more

advantage to me, and we can get a win-win situation in the end. He will be a goner if he chooses B.

He wiped his sweat with his hands, "Why would you help me if you are his mistress?"

"Because we have the same enemy! Or else why would I help you, you stupid!"

"I am not stupid! I am very clever!" He said.

I laughed sarcastically and said, "Oh yes, you are clever. Clever and still don't realize that you're being fooled by Lance Mason."

"Shut up you b\*tch!"

He was going to hit me and I said, "You better don't hit my face, you will make the last saviour of yours to run far away. You will sit down and talk to me about everything you have done with Lance Mason if you are clever."

Rupert Robinson isn't that stupid. He sat down and told me that the mayor they talked about just now was once his secretary and had a good relationship with Rupert's father. Lance wanted to get a land back then, so he used Robinson's family to connect himself to the mayor to get the land. Since then, Rupert Robinson had done some business with Lance. Lance promised to give him a 1 billion loan with free interest but after the mayor was ferret out, Lance never gave him the money. Rupert needed that money to cover up or else he would be sued and that would bring him into the jail. Because of all of these, Rupert Robinson's father had also been caught.

"Are you sure that Lance Mason offered the bribe to the mayor?" I asked.

Rupert Robinson was confident, "I'm sure he had offered the bribe, otherwise Lance Mason won't get that land so easily."

After that, he said, "You see, the mayor had been ferreted out, why isn't Lance Mason worried?"



## Chapter 80 Shopping

Rupert Robinson only said that Lance Manson offered bribes to the mayor, but he didn't have any evidence. If he had, he wouldn't have worked with me.

I gave him a phone number and asked him to call me if he has anything to tell.

I had been here for 30 minutes after Rupert kidnapped me. Lance would be suspicious if I didn't buy anything with his card.

Before I left, Rupert Robinson said, "How would I know you wouldn't work with him to take me down?"

I looked at Rupert and laughed at his words, "Do you have anything worth to make me take you down? At this very moment, you can only choose to trust me because no one is going to save you. Just remember that I am not helping you but myself. We have the same enemy, so you and I are allies."

"The court didn't give me much time, you need to be fast and help me get the money to cover up, and I will try to collect the evidence of the bribe for you."

After I left the hotel, I ran towards the mall and I saw a shoe shop that was having a sale. Even on sale the shoes still cost ten thousand. I bought two pairs of shoes.

I can't only buy two pairs of shoes; I needed to buy more things so that Lance Mason wouldn't be suspicious.

I walked into a store that was selling ties. I walked in and chose a tie for Lance Mason. I was thinking what kind of colour he likes; he had a lot of ties and most of his ties are navy blue or army green colour. I bought a pink colour tie for him and didn't even bother to look at the price.

I realized that the tie cost 7 thousand when I went to pay at the counter. Luckily, it's not my money.

I bought another two white shirts for him and another pair of couple watches.

I had used up three million in this mall and my hands were full. When I walked out of the mall, I saw the driver waiting for me.

The driver came out of the car and got all the things from me. I asked him if he had been waiting for a long time. But he said no and Lance Mason made him come 30 minutes later.

Lance Mason is nice to his worker, he never treated them like a servant. Just like now, he let his driver come and fetch me 30 minutes later to prevent the driver from waiting for me too long outside because I was still in the mall shopping.

When Lance came back that night, I showed him the watch I bought and asked him if it looks good.

He held my hands up and nodded, "Looks good on you."

I bravely kissed his cheek after that and said, "I..... bought a pair of

couple watches, do you want to try yours?"

He looked at me with so much seriousness in his eyes, it made me think that he was angry so I explained in a low voice, "I was looking at this watch and the staff told me that it was a couple watch, that's why I bought it."

He reached out his hand and stroked my hair, "It doesn't matter, what matters is that you like it."

I pulled him with me to the bedroom and took out the watch and said, "See, it looks good right? Do you want to try and wear it?"

He looked at me and said, "Just put it there, I don't like Patek Philippe. I'm more used to wearing Tourbillon."

I was a bit disappointed, "Is it because this is a couple watch with mine?"

Lance looked at me without any facial expression and said, "Are you tired, Jennie Gomez?"

I didn't quite get it, "What?"

"I am tired and you have been out there shopping for a whole day, let's rest." Lance said.

After that he walked into the bathroom and left me in the bedroom alone. I looked at the watch and laughed bitterly.

(After a long time after many things had happened, I finally understood why he asked if I was tired.)

When Lance came out from the bathroom, I was sitting on the floor of the walk-in closet arranging the things that I bought today.

Lance was drying his hair while walking towards me, "You like all of this?" He asked while looking at all the things on the floor.

I nodded happily and smiled at him, "Of course I like all of these, which woman

like bags, clothes, perfumes and jewel? I saw a Sapphire necklace today, but I didn't buy it. It was too expensive."

Lance didn't scold me, he said, "If you like it just buy it, you don't have to save money for me."

I stood up happily and tilted my head up to look at him, "Really?"

Lance nodded and said, "Of course, just buy anything you want."

I put my tongue out and smiled at him, "I won't simply use your money to buy anything, I will just buy things that I like."

"Go and take a shower, I will ask the maid to arrange all of this in the morning."

## Chapter 81 Meeting him again

I nodded and walked into the bathroom. When I was done, I walked out to see Lance squatting on the floor and holding the shirts that I bought for him. He asked, "Is this for me?"

"I don't know what brand you like so I just simply choose one that I think looks good on you. Hope you like it, brother."

He suddenly stood up and swept me off the floor and carried me bridal style. He walked towards the bedroom and threw me on the bed. His kisses litter all over my lips, nose and my neck.

I didn't know how to react to his sudden lust so I just let him do everything he wanted. His mood changes like the speed of light every day, I didn't want to piss him off again.

All of his cum was released inside of me after all of this ended.

The contraceptive pills he gave me didn't trigger my allergic reaction, hence, he didn't even try to control himself anymore when we have sex.

I felt warm and sweaty after he fell asleep so I decided to take a bath. I walked into the bathroom and turned on the water. I let the water hit my back while I squatted down on the floor.

I didn't even realize how long I had been in the same position until the bathroom door swung open. Lance knitted his eyebrow together and scowled at me, "What are you doing, Jennie Gomez!"

I quickly stood up and my knees gave out, Lance was quick to catch me before I fell down. He held onto my naked body.

"You have been showering for an hour! Do you think I am dirty?!" Lance shouted.

I quickly shook my head and said, "No, I should be thankful that you didn't think of me as a dirty person. Why would I think that you are dirty?"

Lance didn't believe a word I said, "Then explain to me why you were standing under the water for an hour!"

"I.....I....." I couldn't explain why. Lance pushed me away and I fell onto the floor on my butt. It hurt so much that my tears were about to come out.

Lance calmed himself and was not angry anymore when he started to speak again, "Get up now, don't catch a cold."

I quickly dried myself and put on my clothes and went back to the bedroom. Lance wasn't in the bedroom so I went out to find him. He had a cigarette between his lips, he was holding a lighter. I was going to light the cigarette for him, but he didn't let me.

He stopped me and said, "I have quitted smoking!"

"Huh?" I looked at him, confused. Why would he quit smoking if he likes to smoke so much?

"What? Quit smoking is for my own health and my child!" He pulled

me into his chest and I said, "Yeah, it's good for your health."

"Do you like your life right now, Jennie Gomez?" His chin rubbed the top of my head.

I nodded slowly and said, "This has been my dream life and I never thought that I will be able to live it."

"Do you like it then?" He asked again.

I nodded, "of course I like it."

"Good then." He said calmly.

He carried me back to the bedroom and hugged me to sleep.

In the morning, when he was about to leave for work, he even kissed my forehead which surprised me.

After he left, I got out of the bed and walked into his study room after I had breakfast.

When I was sketching the design, Rupert Robinson sent me a message asking me if I had already helped him prepare the money he needed.

I asked him if he had found the evidence. I told him that there would be no money for him if he didn't give me any useful evidence.

One billion isn't a small amount of money. I didn't even have one million, let alone one billion.

But that doesn't mean Lance Mason doesn't have it. All I needed to do was to lead Lance Mason into giving me the money.

A few days later, Rupert Robinson called me and told me that he had found the evidence and he wanted to meet me.

After Lance went out for work, I went out to meet Rupert Robinson. He handed me an audio record. It was the voice of Lance Mason. I was excited.

I listened to the audio recordings many times. If this is real, this wasn't enough to send him to the jail. That's what I told Rupert Robinson.

"This is just the beginning, I have more." He said.

"Show me then!"

Rupert Robinson smirked, "I have given you what you want, shouldn't you return a favour?"

"How much do you want?" I asked.

## Chapter 82 Back to Denmark, again.

Rupert was just like a hunger prey, he wanted me to give him a million dollars on the spot. How was that possible? A not so strong evidence for one million dollars?

"Don't you worry, you will get the money. But I want to see real evidence. This thing that you found is not strong enough to send him to jail. Do you think I'm stupid?" I picked up my purse and stood up to leave. Rupert grabbed my wrist.

"What makes you think I have to trust you? You never plan to give me the money, or you can't even get so much money, right!" Rupert scowled.

He was right, I really didn't have so much money, and it's also not easy for me to make this money appear out of thin air.

I smirked and looked at him, "Evidence is here, and you're still worrying about not getting any money? You think Lance wouldn't have money?"

"Jennie Gomez, what do you mean?" Rupert didn't get what I mean.

I said, "Lance is also only human, he's also afraid of going to jail, if you have evidence to send him to jail, do you think he wouldn't give you the money you want? The ten million dollars you need? You weren't able to threaten him. Why? It's because you don't have a strong proof!"

Rupert said, "Then I should just go to him with this tape, why am I still here talking to you?"

"You're not wrong, but if you give the evidence to Lance, aren't you worried that he would take his revenge on you? Compared to him, you're an ant, he's an elephant. He could make your life meaningless in just a matter of seconds. I know him very well, so if you don't have any strong evidence, you better work with me." I said.

And with that, I stood up and left. I figured Rupert Robinson wasn't a dumb man, of course he would understand what I meant.

When I arrived at the mansion, Lance was already home. Strange, he normally reaches home at either around 6pm or 8pm. Why was he so early today?

We met each other at the door.

Lance was just entering the house. He looked at me and knitted his brows together, "Where have you been to? Why didn't you bring along the driver?"

I have already thought of an excuse to tell him the moment I saw him, so I smiled and said, "I went to the alumni gathering, the driver always drives luxurious cars, I don't think it was suitable for that..... I didn't want my friends to be curious."

Lance knew what I meant.

He gave me a cold chuckle and smirked, "Didn't you say you don't care about this new status of yours? Hm?"

"I did say that, but who would want their own friends to know that they are sugar babies or mistresses?"

Lance shot me a cold stare and didn't say anything. He went into the house and I followed behind. His phone rang out of a sudden and he answered the call. I saw his rapid of change of expression.

Then he called the airport to schedule of an immediate flight using his private plane.

I didn't dare go near him as he was obviously not in a good mood, the aura he was giving off could freeze me to death.

He then turned around and yelled at me, "What the hell are you waiting for? Go pack! We're leaving!"

I already guessed it, it must be Mrs Mason.

No one else would be able to make Lance this mad, it will always be either his brother, Leo Mason, or his grandmother, Mrs Mason.

But what did this have to do with me? Why should I go back? I never want to step into that house ever again.

I stood on the same spot and didn't move. Lance glared at me, "Are you deaf?"

"Is it Mrs Mason?"

"Are you hoping that something will happen to her?!" Lance asked back.

At this point, he must be thinking how cruel I was, because I could see it in his eyes, the way he looked at me.

"No, why are you always assuming the worst of me?" I said.

He suddenly came up to me and grabbed my hair. He pulled me nearer in front of him, the skin of my head was hurting like hell, I groaned out in pain.

"Jennie Gomez, why did you and your mother had to come to our family? Huh? Both of you are the reason why my mom died, and now my grandma!"

While he was yelling, his pulled harder and harder. I could already see some strands of my hair on the floor. The servants were all too afraid to move.

I struggled in his hands, crying out, "I didn't kill your mother, I didn't do anything to your grandmother too, why are you always blaming me for the things that I have never done?!"

With his hands still in my hair, he threw me across the ground, my abdomen hit the corner of the sofa. Pain shot through me and I groaned out in pain, yet I still forced myself to laugh, "I'm here, yet when something happens to your grandmother the first thing you do is blame me! Why are you always so cruel to me? What did I do wrong? Is it because I'm Karen's daughter?"

Reward

400

Comments

5

04:10 

My Paranoid Lover

36.4%

## Chapter 83 Chased out of the Mason's

Lance stared at me, who was groaning out in pain on the floor, his face was cold.

I continued, "If I can choose, of course I would want to have a life like your fiancé! Loving parents, loving siblings, money and perfect life!"

"Jennie Gomez! Enough, don't think that you can speak to me like that to soften my heart towards you, you don't deserve it!" Lance yelled. Then, he demanded the driver to bring me to the car.

His plane arrived at Denmark after a few hours. The Mason's Mansion, to me it will always be a nightmare. If I had the choice, I would not take a step into this house.

Lance demanded his driver to send me home while he headed straight to the hospital. I didn't know if Leo came back from America.

When I arrived at the doorstep of their mansion, I saw mom standing in front of the door, bawling her eyes out. The door was shut, it was obvious she was chased out of this family again.

To me, my mom will always be a failed woman. She worked hard to stay in this family for twenty years, but nothing changed. And in the end, she was still chased out.

I remember mom and my dad separated when I was three years old. At that time, my dad told me mom went to work in the city to make more money, so that I could have more beautiful clothes. I was young and naïve, so I believed it. And after a long time, my father fell ill and died, mom didn't even come back to see us. Then only did I realize that mom didn't work, she just abandoned me and dad.

But no matter what, when my own grandparents refused to take care of me and raise me, mom still came back for me. Although I didn't have a good life in the Mason's Family, I was still able to survive until I was old enough to work and earn my own money.

So, to me, I have a love-hate relationship towards mom. I hate her, but I also still see her as my mom.

Mom saw me and her eyes shined with hope. She rushed towards me and grabbed my wrist, "Jennie, your Uncle Mason really dumped me! Help mom, okay? I can't live without them!"

Mom didn't change after all. But what could I do? Beg Lance again? I was already so low in front of him, would he even help me again? He already blamed us for his mother's death and now his grandmother, if he didn't punish us, I would be grateful enough!

But, is Lance Mason such a kind man? No.

I stared at my mom with a cold face and asked, "Didn't you already know your daughter has a relationship with both of his son? How low do you want your daughter to go? Are you asking me to climb into Uncle Mason's bed right now?"

Seeing how my mother was behaving, if climbing into his bed meant allowing her to stay, she would agree.

My mom widened her eyes and said, "Jennie, how could you speak to me like that? I was the one who made sure you survived!"

Why did I want to kill Lance when I was 12? It was because I wanted to protect mom. I was only 12. And my mom was near 50 years old, yet still didn't know when to protect her own daughter.

I shrugged my mom's hand off me, "I have some money, I'll rent a condo for you. This place is not for you."

Mom rushed to me and grabbed onto my arms tightly, she begged, "Jennie, please don't be so cold to me. Without him, I can't live. You must have a way, right? Can you beg Lance again?"

I glared at her and smirked, "No, mom. Even if you threaten to die this time, I won't help you anymore."

"PAK"

My mom slapped me really hard, staring at me like a witch, "Ungrateful brat! I should have let you die back then!"

This slap was really hard, the corner of my lips was even bleeding. I looked up at her cruel face. She really didn't deserve to be a mother. She gave me life, but never gave me protection.

"Even if you beat me to death, this house is not a place you can stay anymore. I don't know how Mrs Mason was able to know about my relationship with his grandsons. This time, she fell sick, so Lance would definitely blame us both. Instead of worrying about staying here, why not worry about what Lance would do to you?" I said, and handed her a card. I added, "As a daughter, I don't owe you anymore. But you, as a mother, ask yourself if you really don't owe me anything."

I left afterwards. This mother, even if she really die, I wouldn't do anything for her anymore. I don't have the strength and power to help her, and she doesn't deserve my help.

I walked far away from her and I could still hear her scolding me and crying.

I called a cab and got in. Then, I couldn't hold it in anymore and started crying. How depressing could my life get? There's not a single person in the world who deserve my unconditional love anymore, and no one who loved me.

I'm just a lonely loner in this world.

Leo Mason called me, I didn't answer. But he kept calling me, so in the end I picked up his call. He asked me if I followed his brother back.

He wanted to meet, but I didn't want to see him. His attitude was tough, he insisted, so we agreed to meet at a café nearby.

Reward

400

Comments

7

04:10 

My Paranoid Lover

36.8%



## Chapter 84 Leo Mason

When I arrived, Leo was already there. He didn't even stand up to greet me, he just pointed at a seat and asked me to sit.

I sat down, "What's up?"

The looks he gave me were not loving anymore, it was cold, my heart was cold too.

He spoke up, "Jennie, we were in love before, and to be honest I really can't accept the fact that you became the type of women I hate most. But no matter what, I still want to warn you, leave my brother. He's..... he's getting married."

Leo took out a cheque from his pocket and handed it to me, "This is the pay that I get from my previous research. Take this and leave him, I only have so much."

It was a 3 million dollar cheque. All of Leo's property and cars are given by Lance, he stopped getting money from Lance a few years ago. So I knew very well this 3 million dollar cheque, was everything he had, everything.

I looked at the cheque. I never thought someone would humiliate me with money like that, plus this time, it was the man I loved so much.

I heard my heart broken into pieces, but I didn't care anymore, I was already way too deep into this pile of bullshit. So what if the man I loved misunderstood me? I'm destined to be alone forever, no one would love me, everybody would only end up abandoning me.

I put on a fake look and scoffed, "Only 3 million dollars? I was just spending over 3 million dollars of your brother's money a few days ago. This amount isn't enough for me to buy a few Hermes bags."

Then I put the Hermes bag I bought a few days ago on the table,

I smiled and put a hand on his hand, slowly touching the back of his hand. "If brother Leo can give me more, I don't mind coming back into your arms."

"PAK!" Leo slapped my hands away from his hands.

He said, "Jennie Gomez, since when did you become so disgusting?!"

Disgusting? Huh, right, me right now was really disgusting.

I tilted my head towards him and smiled seductively. "I don't think I'm disgusting! Isn't this normal?"

He stood up, looking at me with the corner of his eyes. "Do you know what you will become once my brother gets married?"

"Of course I know, his mistress, his secret lover. What's wrong about that?" I asked.

Leo must be really shocked to hear me say it out of my own mouth in such a calm and casual manner. There was no going back, we were already so far away from what we used to be.

I looked up at him and smiled. "I know you look down on me, and I don't mind. I am just like that, the same type of woman like my mom.

You are born with a silver spoon, no, wait, golden spoon in your mouth, you won't understand the poor like us."

Leo stared at me with disgust, "Don't try to find excuses for your behavior."

"Everyone wants to have a better life, it's just they way it is. Just because you are rich, you have always been on top of us, so in your eyes, people like us who appreciate money and love money are considered as gold-diggers." I said.

"You're not wrong, it's normal to want a better life, but are you ONLY living a better life now? I already told you, brother will get married soon, and what will you become when the time comes? You know it very well. If you are willing to give up your own values and principals just for money, I'll just pretend I never know you."

Leo left after throwing me these words.

I was like a frozen lake, frozen on my seat, I couldn't feel my blood flowing through my veins. The man I loved told me, "If you are willing to give up your own values and principals just for money, I'll just pretend I never know you."

I stayed in the café for a very, very long time. The waiter even came to me and asked if I wanted to order another cup of coffee. I left after that.

It was the beginning of Spring, yet I felt like it was Winter.

Th world abandoned me, so I abandoned it too.

I didn't even know if there's any reason for me to exist anymore, would I be happy in the end? I walked around aimlessly in the streets of Denmark, looking at the cars and people. In such a hectic city, every one seemed to be working hard to achieve their life goals.

How many among them are worrying about loans and debts, rentals and child care.....

They worry about things like this, do married couples fight over things like this too? The middle-class may seem to be living a tough life, but this is also a form of happiness.

I stared at the blue sky. I never get to see such blue skies in this city.

I got into the public bus and went for the back seat. I sat down and looked out of the window. Then, my phone rang. It was Lance Mason. I let it ring and didn't pick up the phone.

A kind-looking old man in front of me said, "Young lady, your phone is ringing."

I smiled sincerely at him and said, "It's alright, not important."

He gave me a weird look and smiled back awkwardly, then he turned back around. the phone stopped ringing after a few more calls.

## Chapter 85 Hometown

This bus will stop at the train station. I got down when it reached the train station and bought a ticket back to the place where I was born, for the first time in nearly 20 years, I'm finally going back.

In the middle of my journey back, Lance called again, and I ignored him still. I was going back to see the only person that has ever loved me sincerely in this world.

I didn't want any disturbance from the world.

Looking out of the window, I stared at the scenery with no feelings, no nostalgia, no emotions.

I arrived after some time. It was still the same old place, not developed and looks poor.

When I arrived, a few kids saw me on their way back home from school and gave me weird looks. This is a small village near the countryside, everyone knows each other around here. I left this place so long ago, it was only normal if they see me as a stranger.

I took out some candies from my purse and asked, "Do you want some sweets?"

They were well educated children and didn't accept candies from strangers.

Using my memory, I slowly look for my father's house, which is now my grandparents' house, since he passed away.

I found the house and stood outside for a long time, I didn't know if I should go in.

Just when I was about to leave, an old lady with white hair came out of the house. She stared at me for a long time and widened her eyes, "Are you Jennie?"

I didn't expect her to still be able to recognize me after all these years, plus I looked completely different.

I nodded my head and said, "Yea it's me, how's your body?"

I remembered how cruel she was to me when I was little, father was still alive that time. I don't think I have ever called her 'grandma'.

The old lady came to me and took my hands, she led me into her house and said, "Look at you, all grown up! Time flies....."

I didn't see grandpa around. then I looked around the house and saw two photos on the cabinet, it was my father's and my grandpa's. Then I realized grandpa passed away too. Suddenly, my hatred for him and grandma seemed to disappear.

Grandma pulled my hands and led me into the kitchen. she continued cooking and said, " I wanted to go to the city to see you, but I don't know anything, so I wasn't able to leave the countryside."

I was curious why she would want to see me, "See me? For?"

She sighed and said, "Your grandpa died last year, before his last breath, he said that we owe it to you. When your mom took you with her,

we were always worried if she would treat you badly. But whenever both of us see you, we were always reminded of your mother so we didn't try to make you stay."

They don't owe me anything. I used to hate them for refusing to accept me after father died, but now I understood.

"I know, no more hard feelings, don't worry. I'm fine now."

At least her worries and concern for me at this point, was sincere. I was touched.

After dinner, I helped grandma clean up her house. Looking at the old woman in front of me, I suddenly pitied her. She was already so old, her husband and son all left her behind.....

We are all pitiful people, I guess.

Just when I was about to take a rest, grandma came and sat beside me. I asked, "Anything you need, grandma?"

She looked at me hesitantly, didn't know how to speak up. "You can just ask me anything." I assured her.

She struggled internally for a bit and finally asked, "These years, were you and your mother alright?"

I nodded my head. "Yes, I guess."

"Why are you so thin? Did your mom and that family treated you badly?" she asked.

I smiled and reassured her, "No, they treat me very well. I'm fine, really."

"Good. Before your grandpa died, he told me to tell you about your family background if I even have the chance to see you."

"Background?" I asked, I was completely confused. What background can a person like me have?

"You are not a child of the Gomez family." She added.

I was completely stunned. I didn't know how to react or response.

After a long paused, I asked, "I'm not my father's child?"

## Chapter 86 Not My Father's Child

Grandma nodded her head. "Yea, if you were his child, how could your grandpa and I rejected you and let you follow that mother of yours? We were always afraid that you would turn out like her."

I couldn't really digest the fact.

I confirmed once again, "I really isn't father's child? You're not kidding me, right?"

How could this be? I couldn't believe it, then why did father love me so much and cared for me so much? If he wasn't my biological father, how was he able to love me like his own blood and flesh?

"Jennie, this is also one of the reasons why me and grandpa wasn't able to accept you. We only have a son, and then it turns out that you're not his daughter. How do you expect us to accept you? You have to understand, Jennie."

My mind exploded into million pieces. If I wasn't from the Gomez family, then which family am I really from? Who is my real father?

"Then, who is my real father?" I asked emptily.

Grandma's eyes were full of sorrow. "You have to ask your mother, perhaps she doesn't even know who your father is."

I got even more confused. "What do you mean by that?"

Grandma sighed and started to speak in a low voice, "Somethings were actually not meant for us to tell you, it was meant for you to find out yourself. But then if I don't tell you, you would ask your mom too. Then I shall just tell you, just pretend that you didn't hear anything from me and go on with your life alright?"

I nodded my head.

Grandma said, "Your father brought your mother back after a a year of working in the city. Your mother, to be honest, is the most beautiful woman I have ever met in my life. Your father loved her a lot, but we all could see that your mother didn't even care for him. After not long, your mother gave birth to you. I forced my only son to tell me the truth. It turns out that they never even slept together. Honestly, me and your grandpa knew what kind of job your mother did when she was young..... so, if you ask her, she might not know who your real father is."

Father, father loved me unconditionally even if I wasn't his child, plus he knew.

I never expected myself to be the child of a whore and a client. I was grossed out by myself. The father I love so much isn't my real father, why did he raise a bastard child?

Lance called me a bastard a few times, I still talked back to him. Now, seems like he wasn't wrong to call me a bastard.

I've been through so much, why did grandma decided to tell me this now? To let me know I'm the product of a whore and a rich dirty client? To let me know, that my own mother and real father are not

embarrassing people. Did I really not deserve a good father at least?

Grandma patted the back of my head and said, "After you were brought away by your mom, we were always worried that you would become like her. But at least you still came back to see your father's grave and see us. Jennie, tell me the truth, do you have a nice job and living a good life, unlike your mother, in the city?"

Nice job? Yes, Good life? Haha..... I don't deserve to talk about good life. Lance was getting married soon and I was still his mistress. I was the type of woman that other women hate.

I remained silent for a long time. Grandma looked at me with disappointment on her face, "Jennie, don't tell me you are like your mother now."

I quickly shook my head and lied, "No, I..... I just can't really digest the fact about my own background. Grandma, I'm tired, can you leave me for now?"

Grandma nodded and left me alone. I hid under the covers but I couldn't cry.

I got out of bed in the middle of the night, at around 5am. I put a stack of cash on the table in the living room. Before I left, I took one last look at father's photo. He wasn't a good looking man, but his smile was the warmest smile I have ever received in my life. I really missed him.

He was a good father, but too bad he wasn't my real father. I thought, if my mother died, I will bury her beside him. She owed that much to him, so she needs to pay even if she died.

Father loved her so much, so he must have wished if one day she dies, she would be by his side.

I was by the small street when a black Mercedes Benz stopped beside me. Who could afford such a car in this small village I wondered?

The driver got down and approached me, "Ms Gomez, Mr Mason told me to bring you home."

The man in front of me handed his phone to me. I put the phone on my ear and heard Lance's low voice, "I'm the one who asked the bodyguard to drive you, come back."

## Chapter 87 Sofa

Lance hung up after finishing his sentence, without even waiting for my reply.

I got in the car. I know very clearly Lance Mason wouldn't just let me get away even if he got married, I would still be his secret mistress. Perhaps this was my fate.

Grandma said, Jennie, you must not be like your mother, you should be a good woman.

But I don't deserve to be a good woman anymore.

The driver sped the whole way back, we arrived at Lance's mansion after around 5 hours.

Lance wasn't here, the servants served breakfast for me. I ate a little while watching the morning news.

According to the news reporter, the master of the Mason's Family, Lance Mason, also the CEO of the Mason's Company, would be marrying Tiffany Abel next Monday.

According to the news, Lance Mason and Tiffany Abel have known each other for they were younger, it wasn't just a marriage for business, they have feelings for each other too.

The radios and tabloids were also announcing the news. It was Thursday today, so it means Lance would be getting married in a few days' time.

I didn't realized Lance came back and sat beside me. He was me watching the news about him and switched off the TV>

He put his fingers on my chin, raising my head, he squinted his eyes at me and said, "I'm getting married."

I grinned at him. "Congratulations!"

I guess my calmness and what I said must have been out of expectation, he just stared at me and didn't say anything. what did he expect me to do? Scream and shout? Ask him not to marry Tiffany? Joke.

After a long moment, he smirked and said, "You know once I get married, what will you become."

I smiled and said, "I know, and I told you before I don't mind. As long as you give me money, I'll be your mistress willingly. Didn't you say that I'm like my mom?"

I spoke casually, like I didn't care. I noticed the rapid change of expression in Lance's eyes. His fingers on my chin started to grab me harder, I almost felt my chin breaking.

I knitted my eyebrows in pain. He told me he's getting married and I congratulated him, wasn't this enough? Did he expect me to beg him in his arms, asking him not to marry that woman?

Or did he expect me to make a big deal out of this, screaming and shouting at him, confessing my love to him? Hahaha.....

If I really did that, what awaits me would be his words of humiliation

and insults.

Please, I have been pretending for so many days, and I'm tired of it. I would rather pretend to love money than to act like I love him, at least pretending to love money is easier.

Lance looked at me with observing eyes, "You really want to be a mistress that everybody hates?"

"Do I have the choice to choose?" I asked instead of answering him.

When I was back in Denmark, I thought about this. If Lance Mason let me go and not find me anymore, then I would learn to forget about what he's done to me and move on, live a peaceful life.

But Lance will always be Lance, there's no way he would let me go this easily.

He had someone brought me back here just to torture me slowly, isn't it?

I didn't care, I wasn't the old Jennie Gomez anymore, I have nothing left, no one to lose. What can I still be afraid of? If I really didn't succeed, I don't care making Lance die together with me.

Lance suddenly pushed me down on the sofa and ripped my shirt apart. The servants were cleaning the dining room, they would see me getting humiliated by him, was this what he wanted?

His sudden anger confused me a little. Like, what the hell?

Without any foreplay, he pushed himself into me harshly. Pain shot through my body, it was as if he tore my body into half. It was so painful I had to bite my own lips to stop myself from crying out loud.

The servants saw what happened and hurried away, afraid to stay there any longer.

Lance looked at my face and saw my bleeding lips. Then, he lowered his head and kissed me, sucking the blood from my lips.

He stared right into my eyes and asked, "Painful?"

I forced out a smile on my pale face and said, "No, I'm enjoying it."

I was already numbed by the pain, to be honest.

He must not have expected this kind of answer from me and gave me strange look. The, he started to pound me even harder. I gripped the edge of the sofa with my fingers.

He released after his last stroke and got up from my body.

I slowly closed my legs, his semen flowing out from me, staining the sofa. My clothes were all over the floor.

I reached out to take my clothes.

Lance watched me from above, his eyes filled with arrogance, "Jennie, this is how a mistress should behave. When the master needs to be pleased, you have to be willing to open your legs whenever I want it."



## Chapter 88 Family Wrecker

Lance's voice was loud. He must have done it on purpose to let the servants hear.

I looked back at him with an oddly calm face, like I didn't care that I just got humiliated.

"I know, this time we did it in the living room, what's next? The car? No problem! That's my job." I said.

Lance was triggered by my words, the veins on his forehead were threatening to pop out.

"You are really just like your mom, a slut mother bares a slut daughter!"

His words have always been harsh.

I remained very calm, putting on my panties, bra and shirt. Lance stood in front of me, watching me .

I always wondered how mentally strong I was, to be able to remain such calmness even after being humiliated.

"Jennie Gomez, do you know what you look like now?" Lance asked.

"What? Do tell."

He bent down and raised my chin. He spoke in a cold tone, "A whore."

I didn't get man, instead I laughed so hard tears started forming in my eyes. I didn't even know myself anymore.

"A whore? You're right, you give me money and I give you my body. I'm a whore and you're my client. Why not we try to make a bastard baby? Hm? What do you think?" I said, while smirking.

He looked at me like I was a monster and pushed my head away, releasing his hands from my chin. He did it so hard my neck nearly snapped.

He never failed to be harsh on me, I shivered in pain. Lance glared at me with clouded over eyes and said, "Your mother was chased out of my family....."

"I know." I cut him off.

My mother was chased out of his family, Lance must have expected me to come begging him again, but I didn't. "Why didn't you beg me this time?"

"Beg you? With what? I've given you anything I could." I said.

It was the truth. This body? He's already f\*cked this body countless times. What could I possibly give him?

I also didn't want to do anything for mom anymore. After knowing how she treated father, who loved her with all his heart, I developed hatred for her. She didn't appreciate a man who loved her, and always dreamed of unrealistic fantasies. I hate her for giving me such a low status. A bastard child.

Lance gave me one last glance and left. His look showed that he agreed with what I said.

I put on my clothes and sighed. The servants all came back out after Lance left. Two young ladies kept stealing glimpses at me, they must be thinking how dirty I was.

But, I didn't care anymore.

With a sore and painful body, I slowly walked up the stairs. When I walked past Lance's study room, I was a little irritated so I wanted to smoke. I didn't even care if he had any CCTV around, I just entered his office and took a cigarette from his desk. I never smoke, because I have mild chronic bronchitis.

I took a breath in after lighting the cigarette. I started to cough very hard, but it was as if coughing would make me cough out all the unpleasant feeling.

After a few minutes, I couldn't stand it anymore. I put off the cigarette. I had to admit, it really did help me get rid of the irritation.

There was a photograph of Lance dressed in suit and tie on his desk. To be honest, he looked like a noble gentleman when he's calm and quiet like in the photo. But I know very well, he isn't. He may look like a gentleman, but he's an animal inside. I didn't know what came over me, I took a pen and wrote a long sentence on the back of his photo: If you die one day, I will thank God; if you die one day, I would even laugh in my dreams. I want you to die so badly.

I finished writing and realized how childish I was, but I couldn't erase it anymore. So I put it back into the frame.

I sat in his office for a while and left. My phone rang when I just stepped into the bedroom. It was Niklaus' number. Strange, why did he call me so suddenly?

"Jennie, can you come out? Let's meet." He said through the phone.

I took a peek at the servants downstairs and said, "Are you here? Can we talk on the phone? I can't go out."

"It's hard to tell you through phone call! Think of a way to get out." Niklaus said.

I went back to Lance's bedroom and looked for a women's hoodie. This was his other mansion so it was my first time here, we were always staying at Pavilion. Seems like he had a sugar baby too, last time.

I dressed up and got out. The butler didn't ask me anything and the driver agreed to fetch me. I tried to call Lance but he didn't answer. Then I texted him telling him that I'm meeting up with a high school friend.

After sending the message, I called Hailey. She's my best friend, I went to her house a lot back in high school.

She waited for me at a café, the driver waited for me outside.

Reward

400

Comments

3

04:11 

My Paranoid Lover

39.1%

## Chapter 89 Hailey

Hailey saw me and gave me a big hug. Seems like I still have one person who cared for me.

She spun me around, looking at me. The worried look on her face touched me, really.

"Jennie, why did you lose so much weight?!"

"Work was hectic, I didn't eat properly. But I'm fine, how about you?" I asked.

We sat down, Hailey held my hand and said, "I changed job. I'm finally working for the Mason's Company, that was my dream! I just saw Lance Mason, the CEO yesterday, he's so handsome!"

Hailey didn't know about my relationship with the Mason's family, she always thought I was an orphan because I didn't tell her about it.

"Wasn't your previous job alright? Why did you suddenly change?" I asked.

Hailey said, "The Mason's is a big company, a lot of people work for them and I plan to find a boyfriend too. My father introduced me some guys but nah, not my taste. The most important thing is, I get to see Lance Mason sometimes, he's really hot."

Hailey likes Lance Mason, I know. Those who doesn't know Lance personally, of course they would fall for him, right?

"He's getting married, didn't you see his news?" I asked. I didn't want my friend to dream the unrealistic.

Hailey sighed and said, "I know, his fiancé is also his childhood friend. But I heard rumors that he's got a sugar baby (mistress). Seems like the rich are all the same, but, that woman is so disgusting! He's getting married and she still doesn't leave! What a family wrecker. Karma will get her!"

I never told Hailey about my background because I was afraid that she might look down on me. Now, I've become the family wrecker she hates so much.

"Sometimes, things might not as it seem. What if it was the man that didn't want to let the woman go?" I asked.

Hailey didn't seem to be happy with my response and said unhappily, "How would you know if it's the man or woman that doesn't want to let go? Perhaps Lance Mason wanted to get rid of her for a long time, but she just wouldn't leave. I heard that she even wanted to use a child to force Lance Mason. Do you know what happened next?" she asked.

I pretended to not know and asked, "what?"

"He forced the woman to abort it. But it makes sense, why would he allow such a slut to bare his child? Family wreckers and mistresses should all rot in hell." She said.

I couldn't even imagine how awkward my smile was at this point.

"How do you know all of this?" Only me, Lance and Wendy knew about this, but I don't think Wendy would be so brave to spill her boss' private matters.

"The upper-class circle is huge, one person knows? Everybody knows." Hailey said.

I was shocked to hear what she said. I asked, "Then do you know who the mistress is? Is there any photos of her on the internet?"

Hailey ate the last piece of cake in the plate and said, "No, there's no photos yet, but I think it will be revealed soon. Karma is a b\*tch."

We continued chatting and then we went up to the mall. Niklaus was waiting for me there.

Hailey wanted to buy a new pair of shoes. But I told her I'm meeting someone and I'll go back to her once I'm done.

When I saw Niklaus, I said, "Sorry to keep you waiting."

He shook his head and said, "No, just a while. Why is Lance controlling your movements now?"

"No, I guess he's just being careful."

There's a bubble tea shop in the mall. Niklaus led me there and ordered a drink for me, we sat down.

"Why are you suddenly here?"

Niklaus stared at me and said, "I came to do some business, plus attend Lance's wedding."

I nodded my head and took a sip of my drink. "Don't look at me like that, I really don't give a damn if he gets married."

Niklaus gave me a suspicious look. "Really?"

"Yes, you don't know our relationship, if you know, then you would know that I want him to DIE." I said.

Niklaus raised an eyebrow. "So serious? What kind of relationship do you two have that you want him to die? Jennie, why do I suddenly feel like you're a scary woman?"

I laughed. "Am i? its you, men, who are scary, women are just men's toys, aren't we?"

Niklaus chuckled and shook his head. "I don't agree with you."

I didn't want to waste anymore time on this topic.

"So, what do you want to tell me?"

"I found out that the material Lance bought are not eco-friendly material. The money he used to purchase it were nearly half the amount he reported. He's lying to the people....."

## Chapter 90 I Don't Trust You Anymore

"What do you need me to do?" I cut him off.

"Try to get his data and snap it down to me. I suspect that he didn't even put in a lot of money for this investment. He tried to get the investment from the government, and the profit would all be his."

"Niklaus, I'm not dumb, you know. This is a billion dollar project, all eyes are on him. Lance might have done some stuff to increase his profit, but he wouldn't dare to change the project too much. Don't think that you can use me easily, Niklaus."

Hailey told me just now that Niklaus' family used to be in the raw material sector, just recently, they slowly explore the business world more by going into property sector. I figured Niklaus wanted to sell Lance all the materials, so he needed the data to estimate what kind of price he would give Lance.

By the time, I would become his one way ticket to profit.

I'm not so dumb.

"The data you want, you would have to look for it yourself. Don't you think that you have overestimated me? To Lance Mason, I'm nothing but his sex toy. I guess we really can't be allis after all. I used to think Ms Sands would help me collect evidence of Lance's crimes, and go against him, now when I think about it, I was amused at how naïve I was. Someone like Lance, of course he would make sure no evidence is left when doing his dirty deeds. Even if you have anything against him, you wouldn't give it to me, you would use it to your own advantage." I finished speaking and Niklaus clapped his hands.

"Am I wrong?" I asked.

He didn't nod or shake his head. Instead, he said, "You are correct on one part. Businessmen prioritize profit, so in this business world, there's no friends or enemies, only benefits. But you are wrong on another point. Me and Lance are not as close as you think, we are not in the friends in terms of profit. If you check the history of the Sands, you would see that the Abel and the Sands are related. We are distant families, but the Mason's and the Abel stood together last time and chased us out from Denmark, so my family came to California and started all over again. They nearly made us go bankrupt."

I didn't expect that Niklaus Sands and Tiffany Abel, they come from the same bloodline, but not directly related. This means that they are distant relatives.

So, Lance's fiancé, is Niklaus Sands' distant cousin then?

"I don't care about your family history with the Abel's or Lance. To conclude what I want to tell you, I can't get the data you want. As for my own goal, I will try to work on it myself." And with that, I stood up and leave.

Niklaus' voice sounded from behind me. "What can you do? Rely on the useless Rupert Robinson? Don't be so naïve, you already said it,

Lance would make sure he leaves no evidence for his dirty deeds."

I was naïve and stupid, but now, of course I knew I couldn't rely on that foolish Rupert!

I turned back around to face him, "Don't try to trigger me, I don't trust you anymore. The data you want? Get it yourself, don't ask me."

And with that I walked towards the exit. Niklaus is a businessman, he wants money. So it was obvious what both of us wanted were not the same, of course we couldn't be allies anymore. He didn't want Lance's life, he just wanted money.

After saying goodbye to Hailey in the mall, I went back to the driver who was waiting for me. My phone rang twice, it was a stranger's number. I picked up and a woman's voice came from the other side of the phone.

"Hi, is this Jennie Gomez?"

I said yes. "Ms Gomez, your mother Karen, tried to cut her own wrist and she's now not in danger anymore after emergency treatment. Can you come and have a look at her?"

Mom tried to commit suicide again, but I wasn't surprised at all.

I didn't know if it was my heart who hardened, or did I started to hate her? Hate her for treating father this way, hate her for never giving me protection like how mothers usually do.

I answered her cruelly, "She's not my mother, you must have made a mistake."

I hung up after that. I knew my mother wouldn't really kill herself. I already gave her a card with a huge amount of money inside. Those were the money I saved up to buy a house. But I gave it to her, so I don't owe her anymore. I just hope she will wake up from her fantasies and live a peaceful life.

If she really wanted to die, she wouldn't let someone call me and inform me. I already knew it, so I didn't answer her call when she called me.

## Chapter 91 A night before the Wedding

I went back to Lance's mansion. He didn't show up for 2 days in a row. The news were reporting about his marriage with Tiffany all day and all night.

There was a paparazzi who took some photos of Lance and Tiffany taking wedding photos outdoor. They look so good, handsome and beautiful, very matching.

On Sunday night, I watched the news while having dinner. The TV showed the Mason's Mansion back in Denmark all glowed up. Although it was in a hurry, the decorations were even fancier than Leo's wedding.

The news reported that the Mason's used different fancy cars such as Lambo, Ferrari and other much more luxurious cars to welcome Tiffany into the family. Lance Mason even gifted her the most expensive mansion in Denmark, plus 80 million dollars for as a newly wedded gift.

The wedding dress that Tiffany wore, according to the news, it was done by more than 10 tailors. It was custom made and full of diamonds, real diamonds. Even her wedding heels were the fanciest shoes I've ever seen.

Some netizens were envious of her and also happy for her, saying that she must have done something to save the world in her last life, to be able to marry a man like Lance.

But there were also some that were jealous. They said Lance had a mistress. They even knew that the mistress was just in California.

What I was really afraid of was that someone might found out who Lance's mistress was, and post it on the internet. If that really happened, I would definitely become the slut or shameless mistress of Lance Mason.

Scrolling my ipad, I started to read the netizens' comments. A lot of them were scolding and judging Lance's mistress, who also happened to be me. They called her a slut, a whore, a shameless cow..... I was actually quite upset to see it with my own eyes.

I was just thinking about how peaceful my life would be if I hadn't made this deal with him. If my mother hadn't forced me, if I hadn't think about revenge.....

But then, Lance hated me so much, even if I didn't go to him, he would have found a way to torture me.

I was deep in my own thoughts when I received an anonymous email. it was a photo of Lance playing golf with a few government officers.

To me, these were not good enough. These photos weren't strong enough to go against Lance Mason.

I sighed after realizing it.

The most important thing right now was make Lance allow me to get involved in the Lay Water Park project. Although I argued back with Niklaus about what he said, but I was still suspicious of how Lance was

able to get this piece of land.

His proposal and the data..... there was really a huge difference.

What Niklaus didn't know was, the data he wanted, I have seen it.

I just didn't want to let him know, because I didn't want to work with him anymore.

Lance came back one day before his own wedding. I took a shower and laid down on bed. I wanted to take a rest because I was feeling tired, plus my period was delayed. I had a bad feeling.

The doctor told me before that I can get pregnant easily, plus the medicine that Lance gave me wasn't 100% effective.

I touched my abdomen and thought, if I really got pregnant, then I have to prepare to kill a second life.....

If Lance Mason is a human, he would have used a condom, not killing lives like that.

I was sound asleep in the middle of the night and suddenly felt a body beside me. He smelled like alcohol. His lips landed on my neck and he started to kiss me, while whispering, "I'm going to marry another woman tomorrow, and you'll become that kind of woman, Jennie, do you really not care at all?"

I opened my eyes.

I stared at Lance and said, "Why are you back? It's your big day tomorrow!"

Lance stared down at me from above me and sighed, "Seems like you don't care at all."



## Chapter 92 A Peaceful Night

All men are the same, they think women should love a man with all of their heart, that a woman should be crying and cause a scene when they know the man she loves is going to marry another woman, to show the man that how much she loves him.

Lance suddenly swept me off the floor and carried me bridal style, I was surprised by his action so I circled my arms around the back of his neck tightly. He carried me to the third floor to the small movie theatre.

He put me on the carpet in the middle of the room and sat beside me. I had no idea what he wanted to do. He turned on his laptop and logged into his email, suddenly the picture of Tiffany Abel was projected on the large screen projection. She was wearing a wedding dress and holding a bouquet of white roses. She looks beautiful in the picture.

Was Lance out of his mind? Why was he showing the picture of his wife to his mistress? Did he think that he could trigger me with this picture?

The picture of Tiffany changed to another picture of Lance and Tiffany, they were smiling at each other. This was the first time I ever saw Lance Mason smile like that, he looks good.

Every picture that Lance showed me that night was good. The bride is beautiful and the groom is breathtakingly handsome. They were meant to be together.

"Is the wedding dress beautiful?" Lance asked me out of blue.

"Yes, your wife looks beautiful in it, just like an angel." I said while looking at the large screen.

If Tiffany Abel was an angel, I must be a rotten meat with maggots all around me.

Lance Mason's hand balled his hands into fists and released.

"You.....like it?" He asked me again.

"Every girl likes a beautiful wedding dress, so do you like it?" He added.

I buried my head in between my knees while looking at him, "You shouldn't be asking your mistress this kind of question. What if I said I like it? I won't be able to wear it. If I said no, will you be assuming that I am jealous of your wife?"

"Are you jealous then?" He asked me as soon as he heard what I said.

"Jealous of who?" I played dumb.

"Tiffany Abel." He said calmly.

I tilted my head up to look at the screen again and said sadly, "I will be lying if I said no. But that's my fate."

She has everything, and I had nothing. Why wouldn't I be jealous?

"What are you jealous of?" He asked his mistress what she was jealous of over his wife. Was he in his right mind?

I was starting to be impatient, but it was not because he was going to marry Tiffany Abel tomorrow. I was sad and impatient to talk to him about his wife because Tiffany Abel is younger than me and the smile on her face was like a knife stabbing into my heart, I will never be able to smile like that again in my life.

How unfair was the world, God wasn't being fair to me, what have I done to deserve this miserable life?

"What are you jealous of?" He asked again because I didn't answer him.

My eyes were a bit moist so I tilted my head up so that my tears wouldn't roll down. Crying is for the weak, I can't cry.

I looked at Lance and said, "I am jealous because the wedding dress is so beautiful. You are right, every girl likes beautiful dresses, every girl hopes that they can wear the most beautiful wedding dress and marry their charming prince. But me? I don't have the chance to do so."

Lance stopped for a second after he heard what I said, "Have you ever dreamt of marrying Leo while wearing a beautiful wedding dress?"

I wasn't surprised that he used this to try to provoke me, I would only be surprised he doesn't do that anymore.

Why wouldn't I dream so? I had been dreaming about that every single day that I would be able to wear the wedding dress Leo had prepared for me and walk down the aisle with him telling him that I will love him for the rest of my life.

I didn't answer Lance's question that day. I moved my hand to the mouse and searched for a song and played it.

I stood up and reached my hand out to Lance and said, "Dance with me?"

Lance was very surprised; he must be thinking that I was out of my mind just like him.

He was right, we both had gone out of our mind.

Lance placed his big hand onto my small one and I held his hand ever so softly. When he stood up, I placed my other hand on his broad shoulder.

We were dancing waltz.

I wasn't hearing a heel so my eye level was at the broad shoulder of Lance, I slowly placed my head on his shoulder while we were dancing.

I hum along the lyrics; this is the first time Lance ever heard me singing. Leo never got to hear me sing before.

"Have you ever heard this song before?" I asked.

"Do you always listen to this song? You like it?" He asked.

"No, I just think that this is a nice song. The lyrics are meaningful. This is an old song. You weren't even born yet when this song was released."

"Why would you like to listen to such an old song?" He had so many questions that night.

"Let's just dance. We never get to be so calm with each other before. I am touched that you came to see me the night before your wedding day."

"Really?" He pulled away and tilted my chin up to meet his eyes.

I pushed his hand that was holding my chin away slowly and said, "Yes, this proves that I am important in your heart."

He didn't respond and just lowered his head down to kiss my lips. We ended up rolling in the carpet.

He was so gentle that night.

## Chapter 93 Big Day

Lance was still asleep when I woke up in the morning. He was acting like he wasn't going to marry someone today.

I pushed his shoulder and said softly, "Wake up, brother."

"What time is it?" Lance placed his hand on his forehead and said with his raspy voice.

I reached for his watch on the nightstand and looked at the time, "Seven thirty, wake up now, big day ahead!"

Lance sat up on the bed and leaned against the headboard of the bed. All this time I had spent with him, I found out that he is just like a child. He will be unhappy when someone wakes him up.

He was acting like he didn't have a wedding to attend today. He wasn't passionate.

He sat on the bed for a while and got out of the bed and walked into the closet. I stayed in the bed thinking if I should get up too, but I had nothing to do so early in the morning.

Lance called for me in the closet.

He was just wearing a boxer when I walked into the closet.

Lance pointed at his side of the closet and asked me to help him choose a suit for his wedding.

I looked at the suits he has in his closet. He looks good in every suit he owns, but I was curious why didn't he customize a suit for his wedding? It felt like he didn't care much about his own wedding.

I choose a red colour suit for him. I had been together with him for such a long time, I have only seen him wear a red suit for once. Seems like he doesn't like red.

Lance knitted his eyebrows together, looking like he wasn't pleased with my choice, so I explained, "You look good in red."

He looked at me and nodded slightly, accepting my choice. I helped him into the suit and found him a tie. Looking at the man standing in front me, he looked extra good today. "There you go, groom of the day."

Lance suddenly grabbed my hand while I was smoothing his suit with my hand. He looked at me with intense eyes, lowered my head down, he let go of my hand and tilted my head up with his hand, "Do you have any more words for me, Jennie?"

He was acting weird from the night before till this moment, he didn't look like a man who was going to get married today. I really couldn't understand Lance Mason.

He was waiting for me to answer him, I thought for a second and smiled at him, "I wish you a happy marriage."

How ironic, his mistress wishing him a happy marriage.

Lance let go of my hand while knitting his eyebrows together for minutes, and suddenly he smirked at me, "I was always happy, you are the one who wasn't happy."

Was he showing off that he had a better life than me?

He was right, the person who will never be happy is me.

Somebody's life is born to be miserable and somebody's life is born to be happy, and me and Lance are the example of these two kinds of people. How ironic.

After he left the house, I was left with only two maids. The others had followed Lance out to his wedding.

I felt suffocated staying in this enormous mansion, I just wanted to get out from here.

I wanted to go to places where Leo and I had been to before. It was when he got married that Lance Mason came into my life and ruined me slowly.

It was a crowded and busy market. I had been here more than once with Leo. He loves animals so much, especially small animals, he always brings me to the bird market. He likes the corgi, rabbits, and also cats.

He is kind and lovely and I just realized that maybe Leo Mason never loved me before, it was all about pity. He felt bad for me.

When I knew what the mansion in England meant to the Mason brother, I knew that Leo never loved me before.

And I loved him so much back then because I was weak and I needed love and attention from someone.

"Buy a baby Samoyed, little girl, it is very easy to feed them!" an old lady said.

I squatted down and reached for the baby Samoyed in the cage to bring it out. Its fur was so white, I ran my hand through its fur and the baby Samoyed rubbed its face against my hand.

The sun was so bright today but it wasn't able to warm my cold heart.

I paid for the baby Samoyed and brought it with me. I remembered that Lance Mason is allergic to dogs, that's why all the pets Leo had were put at another place.

But Lance fed wolves, he should feed a wolf because he was just like them!

I had been out there walking for a long time, I was tired and the dog was sleepy and hungry too. I brought it back to Lance's mansion. The volume of the television was a bit loud, I assumed that it was the news of his wedding today. I heard two young maids were talking in the living room. One of the maids says, "Look at the Mason's mansion! It was so big and beautiful! The diamonds on the bride's wedding dress are so shiny! And Mr. Mason looks so good!"

Another maid said, "Quit looking, we will be in trouble if the woman comes back now."

Am I the woman she was talking about?

Another maid said, "What are you afraid of, didn't you see what Mr. Mason had done to her that day on the sofa? For Mr. Mason, she is just a

bitch. Why should we be afraid of a bitch?"

The other maid said, "You're right, what a shameful mistress, still staying here even though Mr. Mason is getting married to another woman."

## Chapter 94 Reminiscing

I walked past them without any facial expression, with the dog in my arms. They were surprised to see me appearing suddenly in front of them and said, "You're back Miss Gomez."

I looked at them for a second and said nothing and just brought the dog upstairs with me.

One of the maids looked at the baby Samoyed in my arm and said, "Miss Gomez, you didn't know that Mr. Mason is allergic to dogs?"

I had known Lance Mason for so many years, of course I know he is allergic to dogs. They were just the maids that Lance had hired to take care of me, even though I was a mistress they shouldn't be talking to me like that.

I was about to scold them when I realized what they said just now was true. Now that Lance was married, there would be more people talking behind and in front of me, all I could do was to ignore all of them.

I tightened my arms around the dog and said, "Mind your own business."

It was when I almost reached the second floor that I heard the maid, "How can someone be so shameless!"

Another maid said, "Just calm down, it seems like Mr. Mason doesn't like her a lot, she is just his sex toy."

Sex toy.....

I sighed while looking at the two maids. I noticed that the dog had been hiding in my arms, it seemed like it was afraid of the two maids because they weren't friendly, I softly patted it and said, "Don't be afraid, I will protect you and no one is going to hurt you."

Ironic. I can't even protect myself. How do I protect a dog?

I named the baby Samoyed with my nickname, Nini, my father used to call me Nini when he was still alive. I recalled that I once told Leo that he could call me Nini if he wanted, but he said he was already used to call me Jennie. Thinking about it now just made me realize that he just didn't want to change for me because I wasn't important enough.

When Lance Mason had sex with me without my permission, I was afraid that Leo would eventually find out about that. But I also hoped that he could save me from that living hell back then. I had imagined Leo to be my shining knight in armour and save me from my nightmare countless times, but after all it was just my silly imagination.

I recalled when I was arguing with Lance, he said, "Do you really think that Leo loves you?!"

Leo didn't love me back then, so he never touched me before, even after he found out what I had been doing with his brother behind his back he didn't do anything he just left with a look of disappointment.

I once asked myself if Leo loved me before. Sadly, I couldn't feel his love and I still loved him.

He was the best thing that ever happened in my life.

The next day, one of Lance's bodyguards came and picked me up to go back to California. Lance brought his wife to Greece for honeymoon. It would be very inappropriate if I followed.

I went back to the Pavilion Resident, I had nothing to do so I just decided to go back to my small apartment, there was a lot of memory that I shared with Leo there.

I pulled out a box from under the bed with a thin layer of dust on it. When I opened the box, I saw a green handkerchief that was covering all the pieces of a jade bracelet. This is the jade bracelet that Leo bought in a small shop when he went travelling, he was scammed. This is just a cheap jade bracelet.

But it was precious to me, just like my life.

Leo wasn't the one who would always give me a gift, so when he did, I would be very careful with the gift and appreciated it.

There was a small red jacket in the box, it was Leo's. I was wearing it when Lance saw me so he asked the maid to throw it away, everything I touched was considered dirty, so I didn't get to wear any of Leo's clothes anymore.

I walked a long way with my broken shoes in the winter when this jacket was thrown away. I found it laying in between the rubbish.

I quickly held the down jacket against my chest when I found it and I didn't dare to take it back because I was scared that Lance would ask me to kneel on the snow again if he found out. So, I found a plastic bag and put it inside. Then I dug a hole in the soil and placed it there. I would always come here to check if it was still there. When I went to primary school, I would always bring the jacket with me no matter if it was winter or not.

I didn't have much memories with Leo because he was sent abroad to study by Lance. The time I got to spend with him wasn't much, let alone to be left alone.

I was slowly falling for him from the second he placed this red jacket on my shivering body.

I took in the smell of the jacket. My tears slowly rolled down my cheek. There wasn't any scent of Leo anymore, just like how he will never ever walk into my world anymore.

My phone suddenly rang when I was in the depth of memories. It was Lance, I quickly picked up.

"Where are you?" He sounded very angry so I assumed that he just had a fight with his wife.

I looked at the jacket in my hand and sniffed. "I will be back soon; I will be out for a while."

"You're crying!" Lance said.

Reward

400

Comments

5



## Chapter 95 Miscarried?

"N-No, why would I be crying?"

"Quit lying, you are crying, just listen to your voice. Where are you? I'll come fetch you." He demanded.

I told him where I was and hung up. I used the bed sheet to wipe away my tears and put everything back to the box.

I sat on the small sofa to wait for Lance.

Lance arrived in 20 minutes. I opened the door to let him in. His face looked pale and he had dark circles under his eyes, he doesn't get them easily even though he didn't sleep well. Seems like he had been having a good time with his wife every night.

That's good too at least he wouldn't have the energy to humiliate me now.

"Why are you here?" He asked with a serious voice.

I didn't look at him and said, "I was afraid that it would be smelly if I didn't come back from time to time, so I just came here to have a look."

He didn't say anything. He closed the door forcefully and carried me to the small sized sofa, he quickly came on top of me.

I knew what he wanted to do without even thinking more. I had been together with him for a long time now. He had a schedule for his sex life. He would have sex with me 5 times in a week and he wouldn't do it on Monday and Friday.

When he was in good mood, he would pound me 3 or 4 times a day, and if he was not in the mood he would do me 1 or 2 times, then take a bath before he sleeps.

I didn't feel right to be sleeping with him right now. He was sleeping with his wife all these days until he looked so exhausted. Just thinking about sharing the same man with another woman makes me feel so dirty.

"What are you thinking?" He asked while biting on my lips.

He would be angry if I wasn't paying full attention when we do it.

"Answer me!" He snapped and bit harder on my lip that it started to bleed.

He liked to bite on my lips until it bleeds, it was like he be happy every time I was in pain.

I licked my lips and said, "Nothing, I was just wondering if you need any rest, you look tired."

He slowly moved his hand to the top of my thighs and kiss my lips again. Then, he slide into me impatiently.

My period had been delayed a few days; I might be pregnant.

His movements were aggressive. He had always been aggressive while f\*cking me like he wanted me dead.

I felt pain forming in my stomach. Just when he was about to finish,

his big hand gripped my side. I was slowly falling apart because of the pain from my belly, and suddenly my world fell dark. My hands on his shoulder slowly slide down.

I wanted to see what his reaction was when I fainted. Maybe he would just stand up calmly and call the ambulance?

\*\*\*\*\*

When I woke up again, I was in the private ward.

I recalled being here before when he had fever last time. Was he guilty that he made me miscarry so he let me use his private ward?

I was alone in the ward and still felt pain in my stomach.

I put my hand on my flat abdomen and thought 'Another baby died in my stomach.'

The door was opened by Lance suddenly. When he walked into the ward, he looked paler and his eyes were bloodshot. I turned my head to another side not wanting to look at him. I hope he felt guilty for killing his own baby.

I was upset that I lost another baby from me. It was like a part of me had gone with the baby.

I felt Lance slowly approach me and when the other side of the bed sank, I knew he was sitting on the bed, I hoped he would say something.

"Do you know you are pregnant earlier? Did you purposely plan to not tell me, Jennie Gomez?" His voice was ice cold.

I never thought that the first word he said to me will be this.

I thought he would say, 'Does it hurt still? Do you need anything? I will give it to you no matter what.' Just like the time when he accidentally burnt me with his cigarette.

## Chapter 96 Baby?

I stared at the white ceiling of the ward, there was a glass lamp on the ceiling reflecting me and Lance Mason.

I could see the back of his hair and my emotionless face.

"Have you been planning this? To make me kill my own child? Do you want me to live in guilt forever?" He said while pinching my chin between his fingers, he looked angry.

I looked at his bloodshot eyes and said, "Will you be guilty? No, you won't. You might want a child now but the child will never be from me. You told me before, the child I carry will always be an illegitimate child, he/she will die anyway. You wouldn't be sad if you lose this child, Lance Mason. Let alone feel guilty towards me, because that's who you are. How would I dare give birth to this child?" With that, a tear rolled down.

He was sitting on the bed looking at me. Not so angry anymore. What I said to him just now was what he told me before.

I thought I saw a glimpse of hurt in his eyes, but who am I kidding? Why would he be hurt? He should be happy that the child was gone. If he wanted a child, he could have it with his wife and not me, the mistress.

"You wanted that child?" Lance asked me after minutes of silence.

I softly rubbed my abdomen which was still in pain. I couldn't deny that I love that child, but I couldn't imagine giving birth to Lance Mason's child too. If it wasn't the child of Lance Mason, of course I wanted that baby.

"I want this baby but I can't, I know what I am to him." This is his words he said before and now I use it to answer him.

Lance looked at me intensely and said, "So you wanted it?" he asked again.

At this moment, I didn't want to talk about the child I had just lost, it was too much for me.

I was in pain and he felt happy, his features slowly turned to a good mood. How cruel was this man?

"Torturing you will make me feel good you said, how do you know that?" He placed his hand on my heart and asked, "By your heart?"

I didn't let out a word and I know I was right. But looking at him acting like this made me felt like I was wrong.

Lance let out a cold laugh and said, "Oh, how could I forget that you gave your heart to someone else so that makes you a heartless woman."

He sounded so cold. He had been talking weird things and I wouldn't think too much about his words anymore.

He got up from the bed and started to pace around the ward, he looked like he was frustrated. I didn't piss him off right?

When he sat down again, he placed his large hand on my stomach and rubbed it ever so softly. I was surprised by his action; he was so

gentle.

"The baby is still here!" He looked into my eyes and said.

"W-what do you mean?"

"The baby is still here! If you want to have it, have it then."

"Really? The baby is still with me?" I asked after I calmed myself down.

Lance nodded slowly and seemed like he had been thinking about the baby, "The doctor said the baby was strong and if you want to give birth to this baby, do it then. I can afford raising a child."

Of course he can afford it, he can raise ten children at once and didn't have to even worry about the money, let alone one.

Even though he had agreed to let me have this baby, I couldn't. The reason is it was his child. The man that I hated so much. I couldn't give birth to his baby.

With the lack of my response he started to talk sarcastically, "Why aren't you speaking? You weren't so happy that the baby is still alive?"

His hand was still on my stomach and he slowly balled his hand into a fist and said, "I can help you if you don't want this baby, one punch and he/she will be gone."

I looked at his fist and said, "I know you don't want this child, but can you arrange an abortion for me? I wouldn't be able to take your punch; it will be a lot of pain....."

I wasn't able to finish my sentence when I heard a loud bang beside my face. His fist landed just beside my face.

I widened my eyes and looked at this angry man.

My chin was suddenly pinched between his fingers and he said, "How f\*cking dare you, Jennie Gomez!"

With that, he left the room.

## Chapter 97 Hard to Get Pregnant

Lance threw those words at me and left me alone on the bed, trying to digest why he suddenly got so angry.

I couldn't guess why, and I didn't want to guess also.

I touched my abdomen, it was mostly a one month old fetus, so if I take an abortion pill, it would flow out together with my period, right?

When the doctor came to check on me, I told him my thoughts and asked if he could anything for me.

The doctor looked at me nervously and said, "Sorry, miss, without Mr Mason's command we couldn't do anything. He's a powerful person, if he sues us, we cannot take the consequences."

I talked to the doctor for a long time, yet he still didn't want to help me.

Lance Mason would not want this child, this, I was pretty sure. I explained to the doctor, "Lance Mason is so famous, you also know he got married recently. You must know who his wife is. Who am I? He wouldn't want this child! So, he will not blame you, plus the child is inside of me, I have the right to choose, no?" Just when I was still explaining, Lance came in, his face dark.

I was so focused on talking to the doctor that I didn't notice Lance's face when he heard me insisting to abort the child.

The doctor saw him and said, "Mr Mason, Ms Gomez and the child are all in good health for now."

Lance nodded. Th doctor led the nurses and went out of the ward.

Lance's expression remained the same, cold and mad. I stared at him while he took his steps slowly towards me. He looked like he was going to explode anytime soon.

To be honest, Lance like this did scare me, really. I gulped and quickly said something before he explodes. "Lance, we need to talk about the child."

Lance sat on the bed beside me and put his hand on my abdomen. His cold face slightly became warmer. "When Tiffany was on her first days of period, she caught a cold. The doctor said this affected her body, plus her body wasn't the type to get pregnant easily. And I also don't want her to suffer just to bare me a child. Since you are already pregnant, why not give birth to this child and let me and Tiffany raise him/her? We'll tell the world that the child is mine and Tiffany's. I need an heir."

Lance's word made my mind blank. I was in despair.

He wanted me to bare his child for 9 months and give it to his wife? How cruel.....

It was only a small ball of cells at this point and I was already feeling a little unwilling, although it was Lance's child, but if he ask me to give it to his wife, could I do it? No!

"If I tell you I'm unwilling to?" I stared at his eyes while I asked. At this moment, I couldn't pretend to be a gold-digger anymore.

Lance glanced at me and forced a smile, "The child is inside of you, so you can choose. Just like how your life is in my hands, I can also choose to end you."

And with that, he put his hands around my neck.

With a cold tone, he said, "I know you don't care about your mother anymore, and to me it's bad news, because I can't control you anymore. But as for you, I think you're very terrified of dying."

I remained silent.

He then let go of my neck and said, "I'm not young anymore, I'm 33 and has a wife. The older generation of the family will urge me to have a son. The fact about Tiffany being hard to get pregnant? I have already make sure no one in the public will know of it. If you can help me bare a son and give him to me and Tiffany, I'll let you go and give you one billion dollars."

Money? Not what I wanted at all. But letting me go? Yes.

Lance continued, "Jennie, stop pretending. I know what you have done behind me, trying to work with Niklaus and Rupert..... you think I'm that dumb, don't you?"

He added on with a cold laugh, "You're so naïve. I've been in this industry for so long now, do you think you can outsmart me?"

He patted on my face and smirked. My blood ran cold, I never expected him to know everything I did behind his back. Seems like I'm a joker, a joke to him.

## Chapter 98 Two Options

My palms were sweating, forehead was soaked with cold sweat. I was just like a complete joke to him. How pathetic..... I didn't even have the chance to do anything to him!

I was still in my own depths of despair when Lance touched my abdomen and said, "Jennie, you once told me that to live is to hope. I'm already sick of hating one person for so long, I don't want to hate anymore. Give birth to this child for me and I'll let you go, for real this time. Think about it."

Just when he was about to leave, I stared at his back and said bitterly, "I want to live, but you, you don't give me a choice. I've been asking myself all these years, what did I do wrong? Why do you have to blame me for what your father and my mom did? Do you know how low I am? I'm the child of a whore and a dirty client! Even the father who loved me so much wasn't my real father! You shouldn't blame me, you really shouldn't treat me this way. Why, Lance Mason, why didn't you just let me go when both of us could?"

Lance turned back around, looking at me who was already full of tears. I've stopped crying in front of him, and I have never spoken so much at once to him.

After so many years, I learned to swallow my own sorrow. Whatever I experienced or felt, I swallow it down alone. I never cried out or sobbed to anyone like this, I was too bitter this time. So bitter that I couldn't take it anymore. I cried in despair.

I'm depressed.

Lance's expression changed rapidly, my tears blurred my vision and I couldn't see clearly. I didn't even want to see anything clearly now.

Lance stood in front of me, watching my cry my eyes out bitterly.

After a long time, he spoke in a cold tone, "You have two options. Give birth to this child and I'll let you go, or I'll send you to jail for trying to ruin my image."

"You said it before, that you will never allow me to bare your child, so why?" I asked. I really didn't understand.

"No reason, you are already one month pregnant, plus grandma is very old I need an heir to make sure Tiffany's position in the family is fixed and strong."

Seems like he really loved this new wife of his. He would allow the woman he hated so much to bare his child, in order to help his wife.

"If the child is a female? Are you still willing to let me go?"

If the child is a boy, I would be cruel to myself and leave, but if the child is a girl, does that mean I have to stay in this bitter life?

"The doctor used the most advanced technology and checked. The child is a boy, and once he informed me, my hatred to you actually reduced..... just bare with it for 9 months and I'll give you the money you need and let you go."

## Chapter 98 Two Options

Lance tried to persuade me. How could he do this to me?

Treat me like trash then ask me to bare his child? Plus he wanted me to give him and his wife MY child?

I never know anyone could be this cruel and cold-blooded. Now I know, Lance Mason is my first example.

I stared at him with empty, hollow eyes and said nothing.



## Chapter 99 Heir

The rich always wish that their heir will be a boy, especially for family like the Mason's. The Mason's family was so happy when Lia was pregnant.

Lance didn't look at me after he finished his sentence.

How ironic it was when he told me to give birth to the son of his and Tiffany Abel's.

I found out that Lance had the same blood type as me, RH blood. So, if he had a baby with another woman, a situation like haemolysis will happen and will also cause death. Therefore, I was the most suitable woman have his child.

So, he had made the decision to let me give birth to this baby.

To make my life to be better, I never talked about abortion anymore.

I was yearning for freedom that I made a deal with Lance to exchange my freedom with this child.

I had been in the hospital for a long time. After that, I was discharged and being sent back to the mansion. Everything in the mansion had changed, there was carpet everywhere even in the washroom, the bedsheet of Lance's bed had been changed into a lighter colour that will make pregnant lady feel better than looking at the distressed black bed sheets.

I started the life of nourishing the baby in this mansion. Lance didn't come back as often as before, because Tiffany Abel was in California too. So, I thought that he must be busy accompanying his wife.

He would come back once or twice in a week, but he would be working when he came back. He would ask for my opinion on the design of the project but I would just simply say something to put him off.

So, he stopped asking opinions from me. We were always in the same room but in silence.

I didn't have morning sickness when I first got pregnant, but it started after I hit the fourth month of pregnancy. I would throw up everything I took in and I couldn't sleep in the night.

The butler told Lance about my situation and on that night, I saw the man I haven't seen in a month.

He was darker and slimmer; the Lay Water Park project had just started so he had to go to the construction site every week.

I would often see the news of him and his wife attending some events like the foundation stone laying ceremony.

I was throwing up violently when he saw me, he took some tissue to wipe my mouth after I was done. He looked worried.

I laid my head on his broad shoulder and he stroked my face, "You've lost a lot of weight, have you been eating properly?"

Looking at him like this just made me think that he must have thought I wanted to starve his and Tiffany Abel's son.

I shook my head, "It's okay, I lost some weight because I have been puking lately."

He picked me up from the floor and carried me to the bed and placed me down. Lance asked the servant to prepare some soup for me.

When Lance wanted to feed me the soup, I moved my head aside refusing to drink it, "I would want to puke again if I drink this, I just want to sleep. You don't have to come back if you are busy, I will take good care of myself and the baby."

I knew why he was worried; he was worried that I wouldn't take good care of his son. He values this son very much because all his family members had been pressuring him regarding an heir for the Mason's Company.

For a family like Mason's, they value their heir, more than anything.

The butler who was standing beside told Lance that, "It's okay if Miss Gomez doesn't want to drink the soup, it's dinner time soon."

The words of the butler saved me. Lance let the butler take the soup away.

The butler left the room, leaving me alone with Lance. He placed his hand on my baby bump and said apologetically, "The project had just started and I was busy so couldn't come back so often. I know you are having a hard time now, but I will be free by the time you go into labour, then I will be by your side by that time."

I know the reason why he was being so nice to me was because of the baby in my belly now.

I smiled at him, "It's okay, you don't have to come if you are busy. There are so many maids here to take care of me, the baby will be fine."

He looked down at my baby bump and rubbed it softly with his large hand.

Foetus which are four-month-old are be able to move now, the baby started to kick at the place where Lance placed his hand at.

Lance was surprised by the movement and said excitedly, "He's moving! He's moving!"

## Chapter 100 Body Check-up

The smile Lance had on his face at that moment showed that he was really happy. I have never seen him be this happy ever.

But the baby stopped moving afterwards.

Lance waited for a long time to feel his movement again but the baby just stopped moving, he tilted his head up and looked at me disappointedly, "Why isn't he moving?"

I was speechless and felt that Lance had become more stupid.

"How would I know? The doctor said the movement of the baby will be more often when he gets bigger."

Lance rubbed my baby bump again and asked, "The next appointment is around the corner, right?"

I thought for a second before I spoke, "Yes, it's next Monday, to do the Down Syndrome screening test."

"What is that for?" Lance asked.

"To check if the baby is deformed, if yes, we will need to do abortion." I answered.

Lance knitted his eyebrows together when he heard the word 'abortion' and said, "Deformity? Are you saying that the baby will be deformed?"

He looked at me coldly and that made me shiver with goodbumps.

"It is just a check-up! To check on the baby!"

I explained to him and I saw him looking at me intensely.

"How could you say the word 'deformed' so easily without any emotions!" He barked.

I didn't know how to respond to Lance.

Maybe he needs a healthy heir, that's why he was acting agitated.

He didn't wait for my answer, he just pinched my chin between his fingers and said, "You must be very thrilled if you find out the baby is deformed."

This baby had been in my belly for four months, I have felt his movement not only once but many times, I had been controlling myself not to grow feelings for this baby, but as his mother, why would I want my child to be deformed?

Once again, Lance misunderstood me and I shook my head, "Even though I wouldn't get to raise this child up by myself after he was born but he is still my child, why on earth will I wish that my child will be deformed?"

Lance looked at me coldly and said, "You better be."

"Take good care of my son." He said before he left.

I was just like a container for him, to carry his child.

The next time he came back the night before the Down Syndrome

screening test, he was in a good mood that he bought a Gucci sandal for me that cost a lot of money.

I guessed this was to show appreciation to a container like me.

The next morning, I didn't eat anything because I know the doctor is going to draw some blood from me for the test.

I knew it because last time I had my breakfast before I went for a check-up, the doctor couldn't draw blood to do the check-up for me.

Lance Mason didn't eat anything in the morning too. Being a good mistress, I showed some care for him and said, "You should eat something, the test will take a lot of time."

He was wearing some comfort clothes today instead of his usual suit and tie. He squatted down to tie his shoe lace and when I squatted down and tried to help him like I always did, he quickly placed his hand on the small of my back, not letting me do so, "I'll do it myself, you are pregnant."

I sat in the back seat of the car with Lance as driver drove us there. The car suddenly braked and when my head almost hit the back of the front seat, Lance placed his hand in front of my head to prevent me hitting it.

"Are you okay?" Lance asked worriedly.

I shook my head.

"Don't you know there is a pregnant woman in the car?!" Lance scolded the driver.

The driver quickly apologized but Lance didn't accept his apologies.

## Chapter 101 Nothing To Do

"I didn't pay you to work for me like this, if you can't do your work properly, just get lost." He was being rude to the driver for the first time ever and that made the driver blush in embarrassment.

He barely talked to his worker like that.

At the end, the driver got kicked out of the car and Lance drove the car himself. I sat quietly and didn't dare to speak to him.

Lance held my hand when we were walking to the check-up room and I could feel the sweat in his hand. Shouldn't I be the one who was nervous?

Lance stared at the nurse who had drawn 5 tubes of blood from me intensely and said, "How many blood do you need from her!"

The nurse was so scared that she started to shake and said, "5 tubes is enough."

He had been in a bad mood from the morning that no one dared to talk to him.

After the blood test was done, we went into the doctor's office. This wasn't the same doctor of last time; Lance changed my doctor to this doctor who graduated from Harvard.

The doctor looked at my medical history and knitted his eyebrows, "Have you done abortion before, Miss Gomez."

The doctor was so straightforward that he didn't think twice to ask me this kind of question in front of Lance Mason.

I looked at Lance Mason and he answered the question for me, "She had done abortion before when the foetus was four-month-old. We are both RH blood, the probability for the second foetus to have haemolysis should be very low."

I didn't know what Lance was talking about so I looked at him with curiosity.

The doctor shook his head and said, "The timing for haemolysis to happen does not have a fixed time, the foetus is good for now. If the blood type of the previous foetus that Miss Gomez lost is the same type with this foetus, the probability for haemolysis to happen will be hundred percent."

No one knows the blood type of the previous baby, I didn't really understand what they were talking about to be honest, but I got a feeling that the baby inside of me right now might be in danger. That's why Lance wasn't in a good mood and he even changed a doctor for me.

"Anything you can do to prevent this from happening?" Lance gripped my hand tightly and I felt hurt.

But I didn't dare to let out a sound.

The doctor shook his head at Lance and said, "With the medical technology right now, there is nothing we can do to prevent it. People

with RH blood type are not advised to have a second baby because the first baby will trigger the production of antibodies in the mother's body.

Lance banged his fist onto the table and that made me and the doctor jumped in our seats.

"I didn't pay to do have you do nothing!" Lance barked at him.

The doctor wasn't afraid of Lance at all and I started to think that they knew each other before this.

The doctor shook his head at Lance speechlessly and said, "That's all I can do, even if you change another doctor they will still give you the same answer. People with RH blood type shouldn't get abortion when they want a child because that is their only chance to have a child!"

Now I know what was going on, Lance's and my blood type are so special that it could make the foetus die inside me.

When we were on the road to go back, we both weren't in a good mood. He didn't drive back home, he stopped at a restaurant and ordered me a lot of food.

We both weren't in the mood to eat.

Lance put some food on my plate and said, "So many bloods have been drawn from you today, eat something. Don't worry too much. The doctor didn't say the baby will be haemolytic, maybe the first child doesn't have the same blood type with this baby,"

I rubbed my baby bump and thought that I would just let God decide everything. I wasn't worried like Lance Mason.

Maybe it was because I knew that the baby won't be mine after he was born.

I knew I was being cruel to think that way.

I ate the prawn dumpling that Lance put in my plate. Unexpectedly, it didn't make me feel sick so I had more dumplings. Lance just looked at me and didn't eat anything, "Aren't you worried about the baby? And here you are eating like nothing happened. Oh yeah, I almost forget how cruel you can be that you could kill your own child without even blinking your eyes."

I didn't know what to do because Lance was suddenly angry at me. I just looked at the man in front of me whose mood swing was like the speed of light.

## Chapter 102 Lawrence

He looked at me coldly and said, "If you gave birth to the first child of us, he/ she could be one year old now! How could you be so cruel that you just simply abandoned your baby like that! Huh?!"

He balled his hands into fists and looked like he was going to swing his fist across my face in any second.

I was speechless and I felt wronged. He was the one who said he wouldn't let a b\*tch like me to bare his child!

I wanted to ask the man in front of me who was already married, "How could you yell at your mistress when you asked your mistress to give birth to your baby and she said no."

I kept myself calm and said calmly, "I don't owe you anything, Lance Mason. Even if this baby is dead! You are the one who owe me, I have done nothing to deserve all of the torture of yours. If God really exists, you will be....."

I knew he wouldn't do anything to me because I was pregnant but I still chose not to finish my sentence. Because I was still afraid of him even though I was pregnant with his baby.

He looked at me coldly and I felt like he had burned a hole on my body with his intense stare, "I will be what?!"

I tilted my head up to look right into his eyes and said, "Do not threaten me with that tone. I am just a b\*tch, I will leave you anyway. If you choose to keep me captive, go ahead then, we shall just die together."

I didn't know who gave me the courage to speak to him this way.

Lance was surprised by my word and said, "You are threatening me?"

"I am not. I just choose not to be weak anymore." I shook my head.

With that, I finished the dumpling in my plate. And he still didn't eat anything.

Just when we were about to leave the restaurant, Lawrence came in, he gave me a lot of help.

I realized that the restaurant is not far from the Mason's Company. So, it wouldn't be weird if we met someone we know. I started to think that Lance brought me here purposely, he wanted to humiliate me, he knew it wasn't appropriate to be seen with him.

I didn't want Lawrence to see me with Lance so I lowered my head down and hid behind Lance and prayed that he didn't see me.

When Lance saw my action, he laughed ironically and pulled me from behind him. He then called out Lawrence's name.

Lawrence tilted his head up when he heard someone call his name. he turned around and saw Lance gripping my arm, and he saw my baby bump. I could see confusion and disgust in his eyes.

Lawrence liked me before but I rejected him, when I went to Mason's

Company to work, he also called me several times but I didn't pick up, so he started to text me. But all of this stopped after I changed my phone number.

I didn't know if Lance knew that Lawrence liked me.

"The breakfast here is very nice. Have a nice meal and this is on me." Lance pulled me with him and walked to Lawrence.

Lawrence is clever, he must have guessed the relationship between me and Lance by now, so I didn't dare to look up.

When I was working at the company, when everyone was guessing my relationship with Lance Mason, Lawrence asked me if I liked Lance or did Lance like me. And I told him that there will never be love between the two of us, only hate and disgust.

But look at me now, pregnant with Lance's baby and being held by Lance.

Lawrence looked at Lance and said, "It's okay, Mr. Mason, I will just grab some bread. Now, excuse me."

I looked up after he left and Lawrence suddenly looked back at me and I could see disgust and disappointment in his eyes.

I saw that before, when Leo found out that I was with his brother. And I was devastated.

Lance looked at me and said, "Are you upset? You shouldn't be looking at another man when you have one in front of you."

With that, he pulled me out of the restaurant.

I pushed his hand away forcefully and looked at the face of the devil, "You are not my man! You have a wife yet you still live with me and even want to have a baby with me! This is disgusting! You are not a good person yourself, at least I was forced to be a bad person, and you are the one who forced me!"

I didn't know if it was because I was triggered by the fact that Lawrence found out I was Lance's mistress or if I was being fearless because I was pregnant. Being pregnant made the fear of Lance disappear.



## Chapter 103 Your Wife Saw Us

"This is the real you, Jennie Gomez."

Lance laughed at me and I didn't give a damn about what he said. I just turned around and walked away towards the busy road. I needed some time alone.

Lance quickly pulled me into his chest.

"Have you gone out of your f\*cking mind? Do you want to kill yourself and the baby?!"

He shouted at me angrily.

I looked at him with my bloodshot eyes and shouted at him, "That will be the best! I am fed up with this life, I have had enough of this! I don't owe you so you better don't treat me that way! I have had a miserable life and why are you making it worse! Do you know how long I haven't smiled? How long I haven't been able to sleep peacefully? I want to kill you even in my dreams! But I don't f\*cking dare because that's who I am! A coward!"

I was devastated and I didn't know why.

I broke down while I was being held against his chest. I just wanted to rush onto the busy road.

When Lance knew my intention, he quickly swept me off the floor and carried me bridal style.

He tucked me in the car when I was still screaming like a maniac.

He was scared that I will hurt the baby so he shouted, "Are you done yet?!"

I wasn't afraid of his scolding anymore, I was just a mistress after all, I had nothing to be afraid of. I needed to let out all the tension that had been building inside me.

I saw a familiar figure from far away that triggered me even more.

I bit Lance's shoulder forcefully and he groaned, but he didn't push me away, he just let me bite him.

I let him go when I saw his white clothes stained by his blood. I felt so much better when he got hurt.

Lance looked at me and said, "Are you done yet?"

I knew that I was being fearless because I was pregnant.

I moved my vision behind Lance and smile ironically, "Your wife is looking at us now, Lance Mason. Why don't you introduce me to your wife? Maybe we could become friends."

Lance's face froze when he heard what I said.

He turned around and saw that Tiffany Abel was glaring at us intensely.

He quickly turned around to look at me and said, "Be good and stay in the car, I need to talk to her."

Lance Mason had treated Tiffany Abel very well and that has been

a talk in between the circle of the riches.

Lance got out of the car and Tiffany Abel walked towards us quickly.

I looked at Tiffany Abel who was walking towards us. I was being shameless.

"What are you doing here, dear?" Tiffany Abel said.

Now that he was her husband, she started to call him 'dear' but her shameless husband was out there wanting to have a baby with his mistress.

Even though I knew that he just didn't want Tiffany Abel to suffer, so he let me give birth to his child but I still pity his wife. The child of his husband wasn't from her, wasn't that enough for me to feel bad for her?

Lance didn't seem happy to see his wife; it didn't seem like he treated her very well like all the rumours.

He was impatient with her.

"Do I need to inform you everywhere I go?" Lance said.

The attitude he had towards his wife confused me.

Tiffany Abel didn't look pleased, she looked at me and I could see hatred in her eyes, of course she hated me, I was the mistress of her husband.

Tiffany Abel looked at my baby bump and said, "It's not like that, dear. I know men like you want to have fun out there and I know you know where your home is. And I know you are taking care of me because I couldn't be pregnant."

## Chapter 104 Your Place

She was acting like she was being understanding towards the situation, she lowered her head down and said, "Thank you for doing this for us and don't worry, Jennie I will treat the baby like my own."

I felt disgusted by her words, unwillingness started to climb its way into my head.

I looked at her trying her best to smile at me and said, "Thank You."

I had a lot of things I wanted to say but I don't have a reason to do so. Tiffany Abel was also a victim too, so I shouldn't hate her, the only person to hate here is Lance Mason.

"I still have things to do now. Mind your own business and know what to say and what not to say." Lance said impatiently at Tiffany Abel.

The way they talked didn't seem like a couple who had just gotten married.

Tiffany Abel looked at Lance with love in her eyes.

Lance didn't talk anymore to Tiffany. He just got into the car and drove away.

I sat in the back seat and looked at Lance who was driving and asked, "Didn't you tell me that you love your wife very much? But the way you talked to her and looked at her, it doesn't make me feel like you love her a bit."

Lance looked at me through the mirror and said, "Is that any of your concern?"

I shrugged and said, "Just asking."

"But you don't treat your wife so nice like what I heard, you don't look at her with love, and you are impatient towards her, and not only impatient but you are disgusted. That's how you looked at me for so many years." I added.

I saw the changes of his face and I assumed that I was right.

I know his face of disgust better than anyone else in this world. But I haven't seen it for a long time now.

Just when I was deep in my thoughts, Lance suddenly spoke, "Who would I love if I don't love my wife?"

I laughed at his words and said, "Why do I feel like you love me?"

But Lance didn't deny for the first time. We fell into a long silence.

Was he admitting that he loves me?

Impossible. There will never be love between us.

I looked into the mirror and said, "Sorry, I was being narcissistic. You, rich Lance Mason, will never love a b\*tch like me."

"But I warned you not to fall in love with me, even if all the men in this world are dead, I won't love you too, I won't even like you." I added.

Lance looked at me looking so pissed.

I just lowered my head down and started to play with my fingers.

He suddenly sped off the car that made me feel a bit dizzy but it was bearable.

When we arrived at the mansion, "Get out of the car." He said coldly.

Just when I was about to step into the house, Lance spoke, "You've been thinking too much, Jennie Gomez, I was being nice to you because you are pregnant with my child, that's all."

"I know, I was just being playful just now." I said.

He knitted his eyebrows together and said, "I'm warning you; you better don't forget who you are."

"I wouldn't forget I was just a mistress to you, the baby in me right now is just an illegitimate child."

He looked at me coldly when the phrase 'illegitimate child' came out from my mouth.

After that, I didn't see him for a long while.

The movement of the baby became more frequent and I had been forcing myself not to place my hand on the baby bump so I wouldn't catch feelings for this baby. I didn't want to catch feelings for this baby because I knew it will kill me when I need to let him go.

I didn't know how Tiffany Abel got my phone number, she asked me to meet her at her house.

How ironic for a mistress to meet the legal wife for a high tea.

## Chapter 105 Meeting Ms Abel

I wasn't scared to meet her; she wouldn't dare to harm the baby.

I wanted to go but my baby bump had gotten bigger and I couldn't get rid of Lance Mason's bodyguard. Hence, I didn't get to meet her.

But I met her in a shopping mall when I went to buy some stuff for the baby. Tiffany had bought a lot of baby stuff for the baby.

She said that it was for the baby and asked me to just take it. She is good at talking and using words.

We found a café. Tiffany Abel was staring at my baby bump and I noticed it, "If you want to touch just do it, this is your baby."

She placed her hand on the bump and I saw that she was envious.

"To be honest, Jennie, I am jealous of you, you have the same blood type with Lance and you can give him a baby. Of course, I know that he wouldn't have let you have this baby if you two doesn't have the same blood type." She said.

I took a sip of my milk tea and said, "Should I feel lucky? Lance told me that if I give birth to this baby, he will let me stay by his side forever. He even told me that he wants more babies with me a few days ago."

Actually, Lance Mason hasn't come back since that day.

If Tiffany Abel really loved Lance, she wouldn't have let her husband have a mistress out there.

I don't think Tiffany Abel was that generous.

"Really? That's not what my husband told me. Just a few days ago, he told me that he doesn't want me to suffer too much so he will make you leave after the baby is born. Jennie, you should know what you are for Lance, don't be so shameless."

Shameless?

I laughed and said, "A few days ago? But he was with me all these days."

Obviously, Tiffany Abel was lying because I knew that Lance didn't like his wife a bit. Their marriage was just all for business.

Tiffany Abel was so angry that she splashed her cup of milk tea on my face.

"You b\*tch!"

When I went back to the mansion, Lance was sitting in the backyard while talking into his phone, "The child will be born soon, I hope everything will go smoothly, I don't want my child to be born as an illegitimate child."

I understand what he was talking about. He once said that he wouldn't let his child be an illegitimate child. Of course, he wouldn't let his and Tiffany Abel's child be an illegitimate child, but what did he mean by he hoped everything would go smoothly?

Was he going to tell everyone that Tiffany Abel was pregnant?

Should I be touched that he was trying so hard to not let my baby be an illegitimate child?

But I couldn't.

I stood behind Lance, and when he felt someone standing behind him, he turned around and saw me. He gave me a smile.

He never smiled at me like this before. I would have smiled at him too back then, but I wasn't in the mood. I didn't know that if it was because of my pregnancy that made me like this. Pregnancy hormones I guess.

I was so frustrated and I even 'wanted' to be angry. I think the little guy in me will be a pain in ass after he was born because his mother was always angry when she was pregnant with him.

Lance stepped closer and saw the stain on my clothes, he knitted his eyebrows and asked, "What happened?"

I was about to say it was me not being careful, but thought about it and told him the truth, "Your wife wasn't happy with me being pregnant with your child so she splashed a cup of milk tea on my face, you wife wasn't happy that I am going to give birth you your child like you told me."

I wanted to cause some conflict between the both of them so that Tiffany Abel will see me as an enemy. I didn't want to be held captive by Lance Mason after I gave birth to the baby.

I just wanted my own life.

I was about to go up the stairs and Lance suddenly pulled me back, "Why would you meet her out there?"

I laughed at his question and asked, "Why can't I meet her? Is it because I am not suitable to meet your wife? Because I am your mistress?"

## Chapter 106 Rape Me Again

Lance didn't get angry because of my words and I saw a glimpse of something else shining through his eyes.

Did he really catch some feelings for me? Or maybe I was just overthinking, he was just worried about the baby, that's why he didn't want to say something ironic to trigger me.

I pushed his hand away and was about to go up the stairs, "Do you really care so much of who you are right now? Are you jealous of Tiffany Abel?" he asked.

I laughed at his words and said, "You're funny, Lance Mason, there are no mistresses who don't care about what they are. You wouldn't see a mistress go and tell people that 'hey, I am a mistress who third wheeled other people's marriage' would you?"

I didn't know what happened to me that I had been getting really good with words.

Lance hasn't gotten used to my changes obviously. He froze on his spot.

I looked at him and turned around to walk up the stairs. Just when I was about to reach the second floor, Lance's voice echoed through the house, "You don't have to care too much of who you are anymore, you wouldn't be one of them soon!"

I was six months pregnant and I would be giving birth in three months. According to the deal I made with him, I will get the money he promised and leave here.

And Lance Mason, he will give my baby to Tiffany Abel after that and the three of them would live happily ever after just like all the fairy tales. And me, I would be able to live my own life.

What he just said made me confirm that he wouldn't break his promise, he would let me go. So, he couldn't be catching feelings for me. That's impossible.

Lance said something that I couldn't hear clearly like Tiffany Abel isn't what I think who she is.

His voice was all muffled by the walls.

I walked out of the bedroom when it was dinner time, and Lance was coming out from his study room. He closed the door and said sarcastically, "You don't have to close the door of your study room, I am just like a joker. I wouldn't know what to do even if you placed all the evidence in front of me."

He didn't give me any response.

We ate in silence and everything was the same, I didn't touch the food that he touched.

I didn't expect Lance to place a slice of fish meat on my plate and said, "It's good for the baby."

I looked at the fish on my plate and I just felt disgusted. I didn't like

anything this man had touched including me, including the baby. I have never thought of bringing the baby with me when I leave but when I imagine my baby calling another woman 'mom' it makes my heart ache. I admit that I had caught feelings for this child, I hope he is a healthy baby.

But I never wanted to kill the baby, I just couldn't face the result of Lance raping me.

I didn't eat the fish he had placed in my plate in the end, and when I was about to leave, Lance spoke, "Do you think I am dirty?"

I smiled at him and said, "I am not clean either."

When I said I wasn't clean either, I was saying that he was dirty indirectly. I had only been intimate with one man in my life, and that's him and if I said I wasn't clean, I was referring to him actually.

I was walking when I was swept off the floor and being carried by Lance suddenly. The baby move inside of me because of the sudden action.

"What are you doing?!" I asked in fear.

I knew what he wanted to do, but I was six months pregnant, I couldn't have sex with him at that moment. I had already done abortion once; I don't want to do it the second time. My body couldn't bear it, I just want to live a healthy and normal life.

I still cared about my health.

Lance stared at me and said, "You said I was dirty, and you aren't clean too, why don't we get dirty together?"

With that, he carried me to the bedroom. Last time we almost lost this baby because he had sex with me so he didn't try to touch since then. Maybe he was afraid that he would hurt the baby so I doubt that he will really have sex with me this time.

But I knew I was wrong when he placed me down on the bed and started to undress himself.

"Have you gone out of your mind?!" I shouted at him.

He was unbuckling his belt when he said, "If I have gone out of my f\*cking mind it was because of you! You heartless woman!"



## Chapter 107 Rumours

Because of me? How ironic.

I was the one who had gone out of my mind because of him! The first thing I will do after I leave here is to find myself a psychologist.

He used his tie to tie my hands up after he finished undressing himself. How sarcastic did he need to be, if he wanted to rape me, he wouldn't have to tie my hands up like I would run away. If I could I wouldn't be lying here.

"I am six months pregnant Lance Mason! Do you want your baby to die?!"

I hope he gets his rational back and thinks before he does anything.

But he didn't, he pulled my skirt up to my belly and reached his hand in my skirt.

"Lance Mason, you f\*cking psycho! You want to rape a pregnant woman?!"

"Psycho? Rape?" He stopped when he heard the words I used.

"Did I say anything wrong?!" I was being brave.

He quickly pulled his hands back and stood up from the bed, "Heartless woman."

He went into the bathroom. My wrists were reddened because of the tie.

Lance Mason doesn't want to untie me so I had to go out and ask for the help of the maid.

There must be many rumours about me after this, saying I was a b\*tch, the maid in this mansion likes to talk behind me, and I knew it, I knew it from the start.

Soon, I was not only the talk of the maids but the internet.

It happened when I was 7 months pregnant, the internet was full of my news. Talking about the marriage of Lance Mason and Tiffany Abel having a crisis, and the reason this happened was because of the mistress of Lance Mason.

All the rich men out there have mistresses and the reporter will use the picture of them and their mistresses to exchange money. But Lance Mason isn't somebody, why would all of this be on the internet.

No one knew who that was mistress on the first day of the news.

I thought that it was just the reporter assuming that Lance had a mistress out there. News like this had been spreading even before Lance Mason got married.

When I woke up the second day, I heard the maids whispering behind me. I knew something had happened. So, I quickly opened my social media and saw my picture everywhere on the internet.

Someone even said that my mother was a prostitute, and they were all cursing me.

The PR of Mason's Company had clarified that the woman who was accused to be the mistress of Lance isn't the mistress of him. He had no mistress out there and his relationship with his wife was strong and stable. The reason why Tiffany Abel hasn't been attending events with Lance was because she was pregnant and was taking rest overseas.

And I had been clarified to be the woman of Niklaus Sands' and not Lance Mason's.

Niklaus wasn't married but he also had a fiancée. Mason's Company made it clear that I wasn't the mistress of Lance but now I suddenly became the mistress of Niklaus.

My hands were shaking non-stop and I wanted to know if it was him who caused all of this. He promised me to let me go after I gave birth!

He said he would give me a big gift these few days to show appreciation for me, for giving birth to his baby. Was this the gift he wanted to give me?

I called him 5 times but no one picked up, my heart slowly turned cold. This was obviously his doing.

He didn't want this child! He wanted to kill both of us!

My abdomen started to hurt and my white skirt was covered with blood.....

## Chapter 108 Gone

I was so in pain that I could feel, myself become unconscious, I closed my eyes, feeling the servants carrying my body into the car. The butler tried to contact Lance but he didn't pick up his phone.

Another servant said, was it because Lance didn't want this kid anymore? The news and tabloids were very clear, who doesn't know this child was Lance's?

The butler said, "This is not what servants should be concerned of. There are two lives here, we should send them to the hospital."

I was lucky that Lance's butler didn't treat me any different even after he heard about the news.

I was so in pain that I started to have problem breathing, I knew if I wasn't sent to the hospital immediately, it would be a one-way ticket for and my child to the afterlife.

At this point, I was really angry. Lance played with my trust once again, he's really forcing me to die, wasn't he?

If I had known this day would come, I would have killed him in his sleep.

I was afraid, but I was also afraid when I tried to kill myself for the first time. A person who nearly died once, would be even terrified of dying. I didn't want to die.

My father crossed my mind. I always thought of him, because whenever my father's face appeared in my mind, at least I know that someone actually loved me for who I am, unconditionally.

I thought about Leo Mason. My love for him still didn't disappear completely even after we hurt each other.

I thought since I was going to die, just let me think and miss him more.

The journey from the mansion to the hospital seemed to be very long, I was so worried that my tears started to form. I wanted to ask the driver if he could speed up, I wanted to live!

But no matter how hard I tried, I couldn't open my mouth and speak! I could only cry. The butler put his hand around me and comforted me. "It's going to be alright, stay strong."

They always say, mothers will love their own children no matter what.

But right at this moment, I couldn't bring myself to love this child. I knew he was very pitiful, his father abandoned him too.

I felt the car stopped moving and someone was moving my body. "Hurry! To the ER, NOW!" someone yelled.

Somebody was asking, "Where's the family? Someone needs to sign....."

I wanted to yell back to the doctor and said, "Save me, I don't want to die!"

I didn't want to die with a 7 months-old baby. But what's the point of me living?

But I just didn't want to die, I was only 24..... it has been a bitter life for me.

I wanted to live a new life, a happy one.

I was pushed into the ER, and soon after that, I lost consciousness.

.....

When I woke up again, it was already a few days after. I opened my eyes and looked around the empty ward, it was quiet. My abdomen was covered with bandages, it was painful.

With shaking hands, I slowly touched my already flat stomach. I knew right at that moment that my baby was gone.....

I brought him to this world, but I wasn't able to give him the chance to see this world with his own eyes.

No matter how hard I tried to convince myself that this was Lance Mason's child, I still couldn't bring myself to not care about him. Yes, I can try to pretend that I didn't love this child, but I did care about him.

He was inside of me for 7 months, and now he's gone. I touched my eyes with my fingers, tears rolling down and wetting my fingers.

Tears were the only thing I could offer this child, to pray for him.

I sincerely hope he reincarnate into a better family.

I cried only for a while. I didn't die, yet I wasn't happy. What am I supposed to do now?

I was already treated like trash by Lance Mason, he kicked me away. I couldn't even stay in California any longer. I had no money, so it was impossible for me to migrate to another place.

There was nothing left that I could do, what should I do?!

The nurses came to check up on me, they came with a doctor. It was a different doctor this time.

She checked my wound and said, "You can eat, it will help you recover quickly."

## Chapter 109 Leaving Once and For All

After the doctor left, another nurse asked me, "Would you like congee? I can buy you chicken soup too."

I asked the nurse a question instead of answering her. I asked her if anyone came to see me.

She said no.

She then told me to just inform her if I needed anything.

The older female servant, who was like an assistant to the male butler came to see me in the afternoon. She handed me my purse, my phone and my personal identification documents.

I took my phone and scrolled through all of the social medias. I wasn't a hot topic anymore, but there were still a lot of people scolding me, calling me a home wrecker, a whore, a slut, a bitch, a lowly animal.....

The female butler, Annie looked at me and said, "Don't look at it, it will upset you."

I shook my head and said, "it will still exist even if I don't read it."

I thought about the man who ruined my life and asked, "What about him? Did he ask anything at all?"

Annie knew who I was asking about.

She shook her head. "Sir came back one time and asked me to give you one thing."

I wanted to kill this man so much every time I thought of him.

I didn't ask Annie what Lance gave me, she handed it to me, "What sir wants to give you is in this bag, took a look. This is my last time visiting you....."

Annie handed me the plastic of stuff and left.

I looked at the bag on the table. I wanted to look at it, but I was also afraid.

Lance still had something to do to me?

I opened the bag eventually, it was a letter, and some documents. My passport, a visa to Switzerland, and a bank card.

I opened the letter and I saw a few short sentences, handwritten.

'You can leave. You don't owe me anymore, and you can't stay in Cali any longer. There's ten million dollars. You promised to give birth to the child, but now he's gone, so this ten million dollars is the most I can offer you. Of course, you can choose to not leave and stay to make sure my life is ruined! This is what you want the most, right?'

Only a few sentences, but each of them were words of humiliation and insults. He knew even if I was so deeply hurt, I couldn't do anything against him.

He also predicted that I would choose to leave, I'm not as strong minded as I thought I am. I really didn't want my future life to be full of

revenge. I was nearly in the palms of the grim reaper for two times, now I appreciate life even more.

I tore the letter into pieces, as if it was Lance Mason himself.

Bad mood influences the speed of recovery, and so I was stuck in the hospital for nearly a month. I didn't have a choice, I had to take care of my body, if not I wouldn't be able to leave and go to Switzerland and start a new life.

I planned to go straight to the airport from the hospital, so I bought a one-way ticket to Switzerland using my own money, I still had around a hundred thousand dollars in my account.

Lance Mason's wife came to see me a day before I was discharged. I didn't know she came to laugh at me or what, because if she wanted to see me as a joke, she should have come when I just woke up a month ago.

Right now, I wanted a new life, so I listened to the doctor and ate healthy food. My face wasn't so pale anymore, but my body hasn't fully recovered.

When Tiffany came, she was dressed in luxurious brands that I would never be able to afford on my own.

She looked at me with arrogance in her eyes and said, "From the start, I already knew this child wouldn't be able to survive. I grew up with Lance, I know everything about the Mason's family, even your relationship with them. Lance is a person who prioritise bloodline very much, no matter if you have the same blood type as him, he wouldn't want your child, because it's dirty."

"And lowly." She added.

She touched her huge diamond wedding ring when she spoke.

Seems like Lance was very generous to his wife.

"Since you know my relationship with Lance Mason, then what's the point of seeing me? I'm not your love enemy. I don't even get why you would treasure a man like him!" I said.

Tiffany gave me a unbelievable look and said, "I won't believe if you tell me you never even feel something for such a successful man!"

I scoffed. "I would die of gross and disgust if I fall for him."

## Chapter 110 What They Did

Tiffany gave me a slight smile and asked, "Still having feelings for Leo?"

The name, Leo Mason, triggered a response from me.

I figured Leo knew everything that I was going through, but he would not save me anymore, just like how he used to when we were younger.

I shook my head and said to Tiffany, "I don't love him anymore. I can't even love anymore. It hurts too much."

These were the feelings I had for Leo at this moment.

Tiffany Abel is a rich man's daughter, of course she wouldn't understand the bitterness of a poor girl like me.

Leo used to be my everything, but one day, he pulled himself out from my life. I could only swallow the pain myself.

"What about your child, he was 7 months old. I asked the nurse, she said you are living by just fine, you don't seem like you care!"

My child, he was inside of me for so many months, if I said I didn't care, it's not true. But I put on a casual look and said, "I never wanted to ask anything from Lance using the baby. Since the child would only suffer if he come to this world, then I would rather him going peacefully, reincarnate into a better family."

"I didn't expect you to be such a cruel person, looking so gentle and soft. No woman can ever be as cruel as you." Tiffany said.

I laughed bitterly, "Ms Abel, you've seen enough of me as a joke, time to leave. I need to rest."

"I actually came to give you a present." She said.

She didn't give me a chance to reply and said, "I will leave it here, remember to take a look."

It was a small rectangular box. I didn't have any good impression for her, maybe because she was one of the Mason's family.

I didn't open the box and didn't plan to bring it with me. The next day, I left the hospital with a small luggage with me, I arrived at the airport shortly. I saw Lance on the news, starting the construction of his project.

There he was, successful rich, while I escape the country like a dog.

The reality hurts, but I needed to accept it. It is how it is!

Going through the body check, the guard checked my bag and asked me if they could open the box.

I didn't even realize the box was with me, the nurse might have put it into my bag when she helped me pack. It was a recording.

I went to the waiting lounge when I was done, I opened the box and listened to the recording.

It was Lance and Leo talking.

Leo: Rumours and gossips will kill a person!

Lance: What? Are you heartbroken for her?

Leo: Are you kidding me? I'm not the kind little boy anymore. She's too complicated, I was wrong to get seduced by her.

Lance: For the reputation of the Mason's, I'll put this all on Niklaus.

Leo: Yea, I agree. You and the company is way more important.

They said some things at the end, but I didn't continue listening to it. I always thought Lance was the only one directing his own drama show, but seems like Leo joined him too.

Leo shouldn't do this! We were once in love, was that love fake? How could he stand with his brother and do this to me? He was once the man who said he loves me.....

I clenched the recording in my hands, I knew Tiffany's intention. She knew I still cared about Leo, so she showed me Leo's true colour.

The speaker started to announce that passengers were ready to board. I stood up, a luggage in my hand, the recording in another. I walked in the crowd of passengers.

When I was near the exit, I felt a pair of eyes staring at my back. It was just a feeling. I turned around and saw Lance Mason in the middle of the crowd, standing there, watching me. He was looking extraordinarily handsome that day. But why was he here? Was it pure coincidence that he turned up in the airport?

I stared at Lance Mason; his eyes seemed to found mine too. Unlike my cold face, his face was full of different emotions, changing rapidly. Lance Mason was my nightmare, and now this nightmare was about to really end.

To me, I didn't want to see his face any longer. He was quickly led away by his men, he must be heading to England.

Let bygones be bygones!



## Chapter 111 Switzerland

I boarded the plane. I looked out of the window when I was high up in the sky, looking at the small buildings, getting tinier and tinier. My heart crumbled into a small piece too, like a piece of crumbled paper.

I was feeling bitter, I had no choice but to go to a completely different country to start a life. I wasn't excited, so I cried silently.

"Hi, gorgeous! Tissue?" a handsome young guy beside me handed me a tissue. He looked like he was younger than me.

I thanked him.

I wiped my tears and didn't look out of the window anymore. It would only upset me further.

"Gorgeous, you look familiar! Have we met?" my heart sank, I was the hot topic a few days ago, he must have seen me on social medias.

I looked down, embarrassed. I didn't answer him.

After a short moment, the guy mumbled to himself, "Sigh, seems like my pick-up line didn't work on you."

I didn't say anything, yet the guy started chit-chatting to me. He was the one speaking all the time, I listened. He said he's half Spanish half Asian, he came to California to visit his relative, then now he's heading to Switzerland for a short trip. He would fly back to Spain after a week or so.

It must be because I was bored in the plane, so I started to talk to him., to kill time.

Arriving in Switzerland, I didn't stay at the house Lance bought for me, it would make me feel like I was still his mistress.

I may looked like I didn't care that people called me mistress, whore or third wheeler, but I know it deep in my heart that I cared more than anyone else? Who doesn't want a normal life? Who wanted to be a secret lover and not the main soulmate?

I rented a small condo myself. I was able to find a job in a restaurant. I planned to continue my studies in Masters here, continue in the interior designing part.

I didn't want to be a cashier all my life, but the money Lance gave me? I donated to a few orphanages. I must have gone mad.....

But never mind, I needed to do some good deeds, so that God can give me a better life in the future.

I planned to marry a guy here in Switzerland, live a good life. I even wanted a child, but I didn't know if I still have the ability or not..... I didn't have much expectation for the future, I just wanted a simple and easy life. Even if I couldn't marry someone, I don't mind living the rest of my life alone, peacefully.

I didn't want anything much. The handsome guy I met on the plane is called Javier Santiago (pronounced as Havier). He came back to Switzerland after a few months from Spain.

We kept in touch, perhaps I was too lonely, so I didn't mind making new friends.

He came to Switzerland and wanted to me to bring him out for a meal. When I finished work, I saw him standing out there waiting for me already.

I smiled at him, "Are you that hungry?"

My hands were holding food and dishes for hotpot. I planned to make him home-made hotpot at my condo. The cost of living in Switzerland is not low, I didn't have too much money to spend.

Javier comes from a middle-class family, I could see it from the way he dressed, not rich or not poor, just normal. He wasn't a picky eater too, so he said okay to my hotpot suggestion.

I helped me take the bags of food and walked beside me.

We walked back, chatting the whole way. He asked me, "Didn't you say you want to go for Masters in Interior Designing?"

I said yeah, but the requirement here is very high, plus the fees were expensive too. I needed to make sure I secured a scholarship first.

Javier said, "Why not follow me to Germany?"

"Germany? For what?" I asked, confused.

"The cost of living there is lower, plus it's easier to get scholarship there. It would be easier for us to work part-time and study at the same time there. And I heard if you stay there long enough you will get the permanent residency of Germany. Didn't you say you won't go back to Cali or Denmark ever again?"

Javier was right. Although Switzerland is rich and all, but we as foreigners don't get too much benefit or welfare here. On the other hand, Germany is more cost-friendly.

I thought for a while and asked, "Then do we need to go back to our own hometowns for the process and visa?"

"No, I know you don't want to go back to either place, I have a friend in Denmark, I'll help you." Javier said.

The first time Javier met me, he already said that I'm someone with a past, but he wasn't the type to pry or ask. This was also why I was willing to be friends with him, I could relax and be myself around him. I could forget about my past.

## Chapter 112 Lance?!

We chatted away while eating hotpot. He told me he recently got a new girlfriend, she's Korean. They had sex on the first day of dating. Then he said the next day when he woke up, he saw his girlfriend's nose lopsided. It was obvious she did plastic surgery. He was terrified for a moment.

Then, after a short time, they broke up. Seems like he didn't care much about sex before or after marriage.

He suddenly stared at me and asked, "Nini, do you think I'm a f\*ckboy?"

When we first introduced ourselves, I told him my name is Jennie Gomez, and that he can call me Jennie. But instead, he called me Nini, my nickname. No doubt this made us seemed closer.

I said, "No, you are all grown adults, this is normal. But one day you are going to get married, you should also stop f\*cking around too much. Your future wife might now like it."

Javier chuckled and said, "It's too soon to talk about marriage, I'm just 22!"

I'm 3 years older than him.

The sky got dark and Javier prepared to go back. It was snowing.

Before he left, patted on the back of my head, and even pinched my face. He gave me a warm smile, I really liked his smile. It was warm like the sun.

"Alright, go in, it's cold out here. Although it's very safe here, but remember to lock the doors when you go to bed."

"Nosy little boy, I know. Go home now, the snow is getting heavier." I smiled.

I waved at him and watched him go until he disappeared from my vision. For now, he was the only true friend I have, so I appreciate this friendship a lot.

When Hailey knew that I was the third wheeler, she came to see me in the hospital. What she gave me were words that cut like knives.

I saw that she commented on the social media posts about me, saying that we shouldn't judge a book by its cover. Someone asked if she knew me, she said no.

I didn't explain anything to her. We've known each other for more than 10 years, she must know very well what type of person I am. But she didn't even ask me if I did that due to some reasons. She just assumed I'm just a person like that. So I had no more reason to explain to her. It's not worth it.

To be honest, I was upset. I didn't expect one of the very few people that I considered as my true friend would choose to believe the tabloids instead of me.

Just when I was about to close the door, a huge palm stopped me.

The person who did this was dressed in black trench coat, he was also wearing a white shirt beneath. I could see his reddened neck, seems like he's waited in the snow for a long time.

I didn't expect to see my nightmare after only 6 months. He came to me.

I pushed the door hard, with all my strength. But with a shove, all my effort become a joke.

I stood there, frozen on the spot. I didn't say anything, he too. We just stood there staring at each other.

I couldn't take the silence and asked, "What do you want?"

Lance's face was as cold as the snow. "I came to do some business, and it's snowing so heavily now. Can I come in?"

'No, leave. Goodbye." I said coldly.

And with that it tried to close the door again, but he pushed back and entered my house easily.

He even closed the door when he came in.

I was angry. "Lance Mason, this is my condo, can you leave? Or else I'm calling the cops."

Lance wasn't even afraid of my threat. Of course he wouldn't be.

"Hotpot? Good thing I'm hungry, let's eat." And with that he picked up a clean fork and started to eat. It was the first time seeing him eat leftovers.

"Lance, what the hell do you want? I don't owe you anything anymore. Can you not ruin my peaceful life?" I asked.

Lance answered me calmly, "I don't plan to ruin your life. I already said, it is snowing too heavily. No matter what, we are still old friends, or family? So you should let me come in. What? Afraid that your little boyfriend would get jealous?"

He must have seen Javier just now and thought that he's my boyfriend. But I didn't think I need to explain anything.

"Are you leaving or not? I really am going to call the cops." I said, again.

Lance continued eating, he didn't care what I was saying.

"Suit yourself, do you think the cops here would care?" he asked.

## Chapter 113 Germany

"Right, you're not leaving huh!" I said. Then I went to the kitchen and took a knife. I pointed it at his face.

Instead of leaving, he squinted his eyes at me and said, "Wow, you're so fierce after 6 months."

I smashed the knife into the hotpot, splashing the red-orange soup onto his white shirt. He stood up and stared at me, but he didn't hit me like I expected him to.

"Don't overthink, you don't owe me, but I owe you. I just came here to handle some business and saw you on the way with your boyfriend. Seeing you and your boyfriend made the stone in my heart disappeared. Seems like you're fine and I do not have to worry about you. I'm going back in a few days."

This was the first time Lance told me that he owed it to me, but these words came too little too late. I didn't want it.

He took out a local credit card for me and said, "There's a huge amount of money here. Rent a nicer condo, and don't catch a cold."

Lance Mason suddenly turned up here, with a change of attitude, said he owed me and even gave me money. I would rather die than believe that he suddenly became kind.

No, I would never believe it.

He looked at my expression and laughed bitterly, "Seems like I did too many horrible things and now it's hard to accept my good deeds?"

He put the card on the table and prepared to leave. Just when he was about to exit the door, I picked up the card and threw it on his face, "Even if I die of starvation, I would not use any of your money. Lance Mason, I don't care why you came here today, by coincidence or on purpose, I need you to know, we do not have any relationship anymore. You are a stranger to me, just like how I am a stranger to you. Don't ever come near me ever again!"

I closed the door, but I heard Lance mumbling, "How could we ever be strangers?"

I sat on the ground and leaned against my closed door. I sighed out in relief. What the hell did he want? I was finally living a peaceful life, why did he have to turn up here? Was he trying to pull me back into his messed-up life?

I calmed myself and called Javier.

"Javier, please ask your friend to help me and let's go to Germany quickly, shall we? I can't stay here any longer! He's back, he came back to see me! I'm afraid!" I cried out to him once he picked up the phone.

"Who? Who came back to see you?!" Javier asked, his voice laced with concern.

Javier came over to my place early in the morning. He saw my pale face and pulled me into his arms, "I never asked you about your past, so

I won't ask too this time. I just want you to know, if you need me just tell me. As your friend, I will do whatever I can to help you."

Javier's words touched me deeply in my heart, tears formed in my eyes.

I was greedy for the warmth he gave me, but I was also afraid, scared that he would turn out to be a second Leo Mason. Leo gave me warmth and love too, but in the end.....

The past was too painful, I didn't want to think about it.

The visa and migration documents were done in about 2 weeks time. during this time, Lance didn't come to see me, so I didn't worry about it much. maybe he really just came for work, maybe he really just realized that he owed it to me and wanted to pay me back for hat he had done to me. Maybe, just maybe.

The quicker I move to Germany, the better.

Although Javier is three years younger than me, we studied our Masters together in the Munich, Germany. He also likes football, so whenever we were free, we would watch matches together.

The time in Germany was pleasant and fun. Javier is a very fun person, he likes to go out and have fun all the time. Sometimes he would bring me along, sometimes I would choose to stay home. He's too crazy when it comes to having fun, I couldn't accept some of his ways of having fun, but I didn't say anything, because everyone has their way of living, we should respect their life choices.

By this time, I was already in Germany for 3 months. I was used to everything here already, except my language. I still couldn't really get the hang of it so I was only able to work in English speaking restaurants.

Everyday, I worked and studied, it was very productive.

A guy from my course confessed to me, he's the same age as me. I wanted to try, because if you think about it, I never really dated. With Leo Mason, it has always been one sided, I was always the one being active, Leo was the passive one. So this was the first time someone said to me, "Jennie Gomez, I like you, can you be my girlfriend?"

I was touched.

The guy was from Hong Kong, so I knew even if I started this relationship with him, it wouldn't last. He would go back to Hong Kong after his studies.

I didn't know how to react, because I didn't really think about it and I couldn't decide. So I asked Javier when he came over to my condo to hang out.

Javier was silent for a moment when he heard me ask. He then said, "Bosco Lin is a nice guy, but he will be going back to Hong Kong, unless you just want it as a fling, and nothing serious."

Reward

400

Comments

4

## Chapter 114 Leo Mason?

I said, "I never thought of marrying him or anything, I just want a school romance. Bosco also know that I won't go to Hong Kong."

Javier chuckled and said, "You already know your answer, and you still asked me. Go rest, I'm heading back yo!"

And with that, Javier went back home without saying anything more. Why did I get the feeling that he's angry?

I got together with Bosco, we ate together, studied together. He sent me home after class, kissed my forehead, kissed me goodnight.

When we were free, we would go hiking, take photographs..... he said I have a nice smile, but he never saw my sincere smile.

Bosco said I'm someone with a past, and he would like to get to know me more. So we started to fight, I wasn't willing to bring up such a dark history.

But Bosco wanted to know, we fought more and more. Each time was even fiercer than the previous. The day I met Leo, I was fighting with Bosco in front of a restaurant. Bosco said I never loved him, and didn't think about out future. I said I already told you I won't follow you back to Hong Kong, and we wouldn't have a forever ever after, Bosco was the one who said he didn't mind, that we should just enjoy ourselves now.....

He was so angry that he broke up with me. But for some reason, I sighed in relief when he dumped me. He was right, I just wanted someone to talk to, I didn't love him.

I thought, maybe I was hurt way too deeply, I would never be able to love again.

After the fight, I squatted down in front of the restaurant and sobbed. I didn't dare sob too loud, as I was in public.

Someone patted on my shoulder. I looked up and saw a familiar face that I haven't see for a long time. He handed me a tissue and said, "Wipe your tears."

I didn't take it, I wanted to run away from him, but when I stood up, my knees gave out due to squatting down for too long. Leo came and caught me before I fell down.

He touched the back of my head and said, "Why do you want to run? I'm not a tiger, I won't bite."

He won't bite, but what he said in the recording, was way scarier than a tiger.

In the restaurant.....

Leo ordered my favourite food, I was surprised he still remembered.

"How are you?" he asked me.

I didn't touch the food on my plate and answered him coldly, "I'm fine."

Leo stared at me, his eyes never left my face. "I came here to see

you."

My heart skipped a beat, I wouldn't believe it if he tells me he still likes me, so he came to see me.

Out of instinct, I thought of Lance Mason.

"Why?" I asked.

Leo sighed. "Jennie, you seem to hate me a lot."

I shook my head. "No, I just don't like you anymore. I don't hate you."

After hearing what I said, Leo's froze for a moment. I suddenly felt like taking revenge again. So it seems like my hatred wasn't gone, my hate towards Leo and Lance, to the Mason's Family.

"You were the one who said you like me the most." Leo said, laughing to himself.

I lifted my gaze and stared at his face, "So I don't like you now. You're sad...hahaha..... I have been humiliating myself for nearly 20 years, I was so low, can't you let live a normal life for once?"

Leo drank his glass of water and said, "I'm sorry, brother is sorry too, the whole Mason's family is sorry to you. I already know what happened, everything, I'm really sorry!"

Leo apologized to me very sincerely, but it was too late. I didn't want it anymore.

"If you're really sorry please don't come see my anymore, leave me alone. I hate each and very one of you from the Mason's Family. I'm fine now, I'm happy. I have a boyfriend too."

I didn't know why I said these things, what if he heard me fighting with Bosco just now?

Leo nodded and said, "Really, good for you then. If you're happy and well, then me and brother would feel less guilty towards you....."

"Hah..... you brothers? Guilty towards me? Funny." I scoffed.

Leo's hand gripped on the glass hard, I could see his knuckles turning white.

Was he angry? That I was acting like this?

"I said I came to see you, don't you want to know why?" Leo asked.

Reward

400

Comments

0



## Chapter 115 Mother Died

I raised an eyebrow. "What? I'm busy."

Leo took in a huge breath and stared at me, "Your mother passed away. Brother and I didn't want to tell you, because we were afraid that it will ruin your life again, but then although you and your mother weren't on good terms, she's still your mother, so we wanted to let you know, her body is still in the funeral parlor. Brother said to wait for you to come back and handle this."

I was frozen in my seat, like what Leo said, no matter how much I hated mom, she's still my mother!

My heart ached, how did she die? She was such a selfish woman, she wouldn't possibly just die like this. I gave her all my money, so she would be able to live a normal life. I even planned to go back and bring her to Germany and stay here for the rest of our lives.....

But, she's dead, how.....?

"Are you.....lying to me?" my voice was shaking.

Leo shook his head. "Why would I lie to you?"

I couldn't accept it, Leo didn't look like he was lying to me. I lowered down my head and let my tears rolled down uncontrollably this time, I really am an orphan.

I suddenly regret. Why did I have to treat her that way? I didn't even bothered to call her during my time overseas.

Now she's dead, only did I realize that I still cared for her. No matter how bad she was as a mother, she's still my mom, the woman that I used to protect.

"How.....did she die?" I asked after a long moment of silence.

"Cancer." Leo answered shortly.

I looked up at him and asked, "You're sure it's not something that your family did?"

Leo knitted his eyebrows together, he seemed to be upset that I spoke like that. "Jennie, we are not that cruel."

I laughed coldly. "Haha.....yea, you guys are not cruel, you and your brother and your grandmother, all of you are good guys. It was me and my mom, we are the bad guys. So we don't deserve a good life, maybe this is God's punishment to us. Because we were too horrible."

"Jennie, I didn't mean that." Leo said while reaching out his hands. He wanted to touch my head, but I slapped his hands away. "You know damn well you mean this!" I yelled.

I was emotionally unstable, I forgot we were in public.

The next day, I followed Leo back to Denmark. A day before, Javier told me he wanted to accompany me back. Ever since I started dating Bosco, me and Javier became distant. He didn't hang out with me anymore, so I didn't call him anymore. Even when we see each other in classes, we just nodded.

But I was in pain when I heard that mom died, and the first person who came to mind was not Bosco, it was this guy, who was 3 years younger than me.

He didn't pick up the phone for a long time and I thought he did it on purpose. Just when I was about to hang up, he picked up the call. "Javier, my mom died, I'm upset."

I heard him zipping his pants on the other side of the phone, I didn't know if he was getting laid by which country's woman.

"Where are you?" he asked.

I told him I was at home. He arrived at my place in minutes and hugged me, letting my cry in his arms.

I cried like there is no tomorrow. He offered to come with me but I rejected. I wanted to settle this as soon as possible and came back to Germany. I never want to go back to Denmark ever again.

The next day, he insisted to send me off, we met Leo in the airport, Javier didn't ask me who Leo was.

I followed Leo into the plane. he sat with me in the economy seat.

In the plane, Leo slept for a while. He woke up and saw my red eyes, he wanted to comfort me but seeing my behaviour, he gave up.

After a long moment, he said, "Brother divorced, did you know?"

"And? What does this have to do with me?" I asked.

"nothing, I just wanted to let you know, you won't see someone you don't like when you get back. Don't worry." He said.

Perhaps, to him, the person that I didn't want to see was Lance's wife, no wait, ex-wife Tiffany Abel. But no, the people that I didn't want to see, was both of them.

After a while, he spoke again, "But you might see another person, someone that you might find hard to accept."

I thought he was talking about Lace or their grandmother.

But I never expected the person he was talking about, was a little kid who was one year old.....

\*\*( Leo's POV: Karen, Jennie's mother, was brought back to the Mason's family during brother's wedding. I thought brother was doing it on purpose. But I was wrong, brother let her come back was one of his way to indirectly pay back Jennie for what he had done. Just before something ugly happened, I had a talk with brother, he asked me if I hated him.

I asked him, why would I hate him.

Brother said: Didn't you like Jennie?

I was careless that time, I didn't notice that he called her Jennie, not Jennie Gomez.

I said: I should thank brother for showing me her true colours. I like clean and innocent women, she's dirty and not clean anymore, plus I know I only liked her, I never loved her. Maybe it was because I grew up

with her. There was no love.

Plus, the person I love the most is my brother, just like how he loved me the most.

But then after a long time, I realized brother had stopped loving me the most a long time ago. I wasn't the one he loved the most anymore.

We were on top of a hill, in a villa, when we talked about this. Brother apologised to me, he said he isn't a good brother. Because he snatched the woman his own brother liked. He even told me about his dreams.

I was stunned, I never expected Jennie to be the woman in my brother's dream for so long. I didn't like Jennie anymore at that time, so brother's sorry meant nothing to me.

Brother told me a lot of stuff that night. The villa had no internet connection, so we talked and talked. With red eyes, brother cried to me and said, "Leo, sorry, I think I really like her, I like her so much, can you stop liking her?"

I said I stopped liking her a long time ago. And I told brother that he shouldn't fall for a woman like her, because she isn't a good woman. I told brother to just live his life with Tiffany, but at that time I didn't know it was an arranged business marriage. When we left the place, the world changed, about the tabloids and the news about Jennie..... Brother went mad and immediately called someone to handle this. Then after that I only got to know that Jennie was pregnant with brother's child. Brother didn't like her, he has already fallen deep in love with her. It was love and only love that made him allow Jennie to bare his child, because I know my brother very well. He would not allow any woman to bare his child no matter what, except for the woman he loves.)

Reward

400

Comments

4

## Chapter 116 Funeral

(Hi readers! I noticed I made a mistake of putting 2 Chapter 101, so the previous chapter should be chapter 115, not 114. Sorry for the mistake, just wrong number, but the chapters are still correct! Thanks for understanding and please forgive me for the small mistake. Enjoy the new chapter! Hope you like this new chapter )

Arriving at the airport of Denmark, the driver who came to pick Leo up wanted to fetch me back too, but I rejected him. I came back for my mother, of course I would only go to the funeral parlor, plus I would not stay in that house.

Leo made a phone call for he quickly turned to me and told me that my mom's body had been moved back to the mansion. I had a feeling that they were using mom to force me back to Denmark.

Was it because they didn't feel good that I didn't die together with mom?

I had no choice but to follow Leo back to their mansion.

In the car, Leo said, "Jennie, let bygones be bygones. Move on, brother I also very sorry towards you. Can you handle your mom's funeral peacefully and not make a scene?"

I knitted my eyebrows, looking at Leo I asked, "Me? Making a scene? Are you sure my mother's death has nothing to do with your family?"

Leo quickly explained to me, "Your mother really died of cancer, she had a medical report. If you don't believe me, you can go check it out yourself, there's no reason for the Mason's to kill a woman."

I laughed coldly, "Didn't you and your brother wish that both me and mom die?"

"Jennie, since when did you become so....."

"I have nothing more to say, I'll check how my mom died."

My mom passed away, at first I was really upset, but now I wasn't as upset anymore. It wasn't because of hate, it's more like my heart is really dead. My mom didn't do what a mother should do, and she also didn't treat the man who loved her so much sincerely.

She died before 50 years old, it was a pity. But she abandoned her own husband, broken up other people's family, why did I get the feeling that it's her karma?

My mom got her karma, so I thought, what about Lance Mason? He did so many horrible things to me, when will his karma come? Although I chose to leave, but I know I never moved on, I never got over it. The hatred in me never disappeared.

Arriving at the mansion, Lance stood in front of the door. My heart started to beat faster. The last time I saw him was in Switzerland, it was half a year ago.

Leo got out of the car first. The driver opened the door for me, I got out and lowered my head, not looking at Lance.

"You're back."

Lance spoke to me first, I was surprised. Two simple words, but it surprised me.

I looked up at him, the hatred in my heart surfaced again. My face turned cold and I asked, "Where's my mother's body?"

"In the living hall."

His face was poker, not a single expression could be seen on his handsome face.

I walked pass him and straight into the living hall. Leo and Lance followed behind me. There's a coffin in the hall. I could feel my knees slowly giving out, I didn't know what I was feeling at that moment. Was it sadness? I don't know anymore.

I slowly walked towards the coffin, forcing myself to see her. This would be the last time I see her in my life. I used to hate her, but now, when I saw her inside the coffin, finally sleeping peacefully, I couldn't bring myself to hate here anymore. She's already gone, what's the point?

She failed both at being a wife and a mother, but me and father really loved her.

"Your mother wanted to see you before she died, she wanted to speak to you. I tried calling you, sending you messages and even emails, I guessed you didn't check your message."

Right now, only Lance and I were left in the hall. I recalled there really was a number from Denmark who called me, but I thought since I don't have many friends, this must not be anyone I know so I hung up. I was actually just scared that Lance would call me.

But it really was him, now I regret not picking up his call.

My mother must have been angry that me, the daughter she didn't love anymore. She must have wanted to tell me that she's wrong, that she's sorry to father and to me. She must have wanted my forgiveness.

I kneeled down beside her coffin, looking at her peaceful face. No tears came out at all. At first when I knew she died, I cried like hell, but now looking at her body in front of me, I couldn't cry.

I touched her face, it was cold. "Mom, I don't hate you anymore, father and I don't hate you, we forgive you. Please treat father well when you see him there, don't bully him, he's a good man, he knew I wasn't his own daughter yet he loved me so much, so you have to treat him well, okay?"

I stayed at the same position, talking to mom, telling her a lot of stuff.

Lance just stood beside me quietly, as if he was looking out for me. I kneeled for too long and he bent down and picked me up. "Get up, you will hurt your knees like that."

I moved my body, I didn't want him to touch me. I stood up myself.

My face remained as poker as ever, "Which hospital did my mom receive treatment?"

"I'll bring you there." Lance said.

"NO need for that, I want to go by myself. I will cremate her tomorrow and bring her ashes with me back to my hometown."

And with that I walked away. I wasn't being selfish or cruel, but since she's dead, there's no point trying to delay the funeral. Why not quickly handle it and be done with it? I didn't want to stay here any longer.

Lance grabbed my wrist, "No, before your mom died, my grandma and father already gave her the status as the Lady Mason alongside my father, she has to be buried in our family's graveyard. We will give her a very formal funeral. Stay here and finish the funeral with us."

Lady Mason? Buried with the Mason's? Wasn't this my mom's wish? I never expected them to grant her her wish!

But, this has got nothing to do with me. The best way I thought was to bury her beside my father.

"Let go." I glared at his face coldly, I felt grossed out the moment he touched me,

"Jennie Gomez, you are her only daughter, aren't you suppose to finish off her funeral!?" Lance didn't let go of me.

I shrugged his hands off hardly and walked towards the door.

Lance chased after me and grabbed my shoulder, "She is your mother, you are not a kid anymore, you should know what you are doing!"

I glared at him, annoyed, "I know what I am doing, I'm going to the hospital to see how she died! Let me go!"

I really didn't want to have anything to do with Lance Mason anymore, I was sick of it.

Why was it so hard to get rid of him from my life?

## Chapter 117 Where Are We Going

"Your mom died of liver cancer, although I really hated her, but when she was diagnosed, I hired the best doctor to treat her. If I want her dead, I wouldn't have waited so long. Jennie Gomez, I'm not so evil as you think....."

"Not so evil? Haha.....you and your brother are really good actors."

I pushed him away and walked out of the mansion. Lance came to stop me again. "There's no cab here, I'll drive."

I walked pass him but he still came to stop me.

"What the hell do you want?" I said, annoyed.

"Jennie, don't make a scene. I'll fetch you, I'll tell you whatever you want to know. I won't lie to you." Lance said. He forced me into his car and suddenly called the driver here. Then he came to sit beside me at the back seat.

I turned away from him, not even willing to look at him.

It was a long way from here to the hospital, Lance kept trying to talk to me.

"How's your studies in Germany?"

I didn't answer him.

He asked again. "Dating a new boyfriend?"

I recalled the times when I was still his mistress, it was always me who tired to initiate a conversation.

I ignored him the whole way there, and he stopped trying in the end. When we reached the hospital, the doctor showed me my mother's medical report. She was already at her last stage of cancer when she was diagnosed, so there was nothing much the hospital could do. He even showed me her private medical report.

I just wanted to quickly bury her and get on with it.

Leaving the hospital, I needed to arrange a cremation for mom and bring her ashes back to my hometown.

Lance wanted me to get in the car, but I refused. "Jennie, what are you doing now? Follow me home first, we need to talk."

I put my hands in my pocket due to the chilly weather and stared at Lance, "Leo told me to not make a scene, so I will not make a scene. I don't want to know anymore how my mom really died. You know why, you know it. And I have already bought a ticket back to Germany two days later. I don't want to stay here any longer. Lance, be kinder, who made me escape to a new country?"

I tried to call the cab but Lance grabbed my wrist hard, "Why are you rushing back so fast? Who is waiting for you in Germany that you have to rush back so quickly? Jennie, your mother just passed away, you should stay here for at least a month."

A month, yeah, the tradition here.

But I didn't care.

I laughed sarcastically and said, "Lance Mason, don't tell me you started to see her as your own mother? Wasn't it your wish to avenge your mother?"

Lance's face turned ugly and he said, "What the hell are you talking about? Karen is Karen, the woman who broke my family apart, I let her get buried here is because of you....."

"Haha.....why did you stop talking? Didn't I break your marriage apart too? Our place is low, we shouldn't try to act like we are a family with the Mason's."

Just when Lance wanted to open his mouth and speak, someone called me. I walked a few steps away and took out my phone. It was Javier.

Javier's voice sounded through the phone loudly, "Nini, I'm on the way to Denmark, I'll be boarding the plane soon."

Javier was coming to see me?

"Why are you coming to Denmark?"

"Stupid, I'm coming to see you. What can a small woman like you do? I'm a man, let me help you. I'll be reaching in a few hours, wait for me. Bye!"

And he hung up the phone. His words, 'stupid' and 'wait for me', moved my heart a little.

Someone was actually willing to help me when I needed help the most, although he is 3 years younger than me and didn't seem to be very matured, but he was willing to sacrifice his studies for a few days, and the beautiful women around him, to come see me.

I was touched.....

I didn't know that I was smiling at that time, and Lance had already come in front of me. His face was dark.

"Your mother just died and here you are, being all lover-dovey."

I put my phone back into my purse and ignored him.

He was angry at my attitude. Suddenly, Lance carried me up and I was stunned. I started to hit his back, yelling, "What the hell are you doing? Put me down!"

Lance didn't care how hard I hit him, he threw me into the car and demanded the driver to start the car.

Reward

400

Comments

7



## Chapter 118 See Someone

My hair was messed up like a mad-woman. "Can you tell me, what are you doing?"

Lance clenched his jaw hard.

"I don't want to do anything, I just want you to follow me back, I have something to tell you."

I yelled at the driver, "Stop the car, or else I'll jump!"

The driver locked the door immediately. What a jerk.

The car wasn't on the way to the mansion, I was confuse . "Where are you bringing me?"

Lane calmed down and said, "I want you to meet someone, you will like her, I guess."

He smiled when he said that. I couldn't believe my own eyes, he looked like he was sincerely happy and very loving when he spoke.

"I will not like anything related to you. Lance, I came back to settle my mom's funeral. I don't know if you think I still owe you, but I don't, don't try to make my life harder anymore."

"What we have between us is a pile of shit. But I know it is me who owe you. You don't owe me anything, it was me who treated you so horribly last time." Lance explained.

I got even more confused when he said that.

Why was he so different from last time?

"if you think you owe me, then please, let me go. I don't want to see you or your family anymore. If you still have a heart, please just, let me go. I don't want to think of the history I had with you, every time I see you, I am reminded by the dark past." I nearly yelled at the last part. I thought he wouldn't see me again, and I thought I would only come back purely for mom's funeral.

What did he want? Can't he allow me to live my life?

"I know I treated you very badly, and I don't want to do that to you anymore. I just want to bring you to someone since you're back. You will like her." Lance was serious.

"I don't want to see anybody, I won't like anyone!" I didn't know where Lance got his confidence, why the hell would I like someone he forced me to see.

The driver stopped his car. We arrived at a mansion, I stayed her before.

Lance tried to carry me in forcefully but I yelled, "Don't touch me I don't want to go in!"

I had no choice but to followed behind him into this place. A puppy rushed towards us when we reached the doorstep. It looked familiar.

Lance bent down and patted the pup, "Nini."

Nini, my nickname, was it the puppy I bought last time? I

remembered when I brought it home, he was even smaller than this. I brought him to the mansion in California, but Lance didn't allow nini to enter because he's allergic to dog fur.

After I left, I didn't see it anymore.

Nini barked at me, it seemed to have forgotten about me.

Lance patted the pup. I thought, was his allergic gone?

Lance looked up at me and asked, his eyes were filled with anticipation, "Do you remember this pup? You bought it."

I nodded, but I didn't have too much feelings for this dog, I only took care of it for a few days. Lane didn't just bring me here to see a dog, right?

"Didn't you say you want me to meet someone? Hurry up, I'm busy." I chased him.

Lance patted the pup one last time and got up. "Let's go, follow me."

I followed him up the stairs and came across a room I once stayed in. Who would I need to meet in a bedroom?

I was a little scared and I put up my guard. Lance was an animal.....

I stopped walking and turned back around to go back down. Lance grabbed my wrists, "What's wrong?" he looked innocent.

I shook his hands off, but his grip was tight. "Lance, what are you going to do to me?"

"Nothing! Don't misunderstand me!" Lance said with an innocent tone.

I scoffed coldly, "Enough, you bring me to a bedroom, who would I meet in a freaking bedroom?"

Lance knitted his eyebrows and said, "You really misunderstood me, I won't touch you, because she is sleeping, I want you to see her quietly, she's very cute, you will love her!"

When Lance said 'she', his face light up..

I had a weird feeling about this.....

"Who is she?" I asked.

"You're already here, so you can trust me. It's either you walk, or I'll carry you." Lance threatened.

I gripped the railing of the stairs tightly. Lance noticed and furrowed his eyebrows. He seems to be getting mad. "Do you think the guards will let you out of the house?"

I glared at him, mad.

"Wait for me downstairs, I'll be done in a minute." He then entered the bedroom. I sat in on the sofa, waiting.

Very quickly, I heard footsteps. I saw Lance carrying a little baby girl in his hands. She was wearing a pin dress.

So the person he wanted me to meet was the baby? Whose baby is this? Is this his daughter?

Chapter 118 See Someone

Who's the mother? Tiffany?

At that time, I never even thought that the child would be related to me.

## Chapter 119 Lexi Mason

I could see it from Lance's face that he loves the baby a lot. He was carrying her like she's a treasure.

He walked towards me and let me see the baby up close. She was adorable. The child was sleeping, her lashes are long. She would definitely grow up to be a gorgeous lady. I noticed that whenever Lance looks at the child, his eyes were so full of love.

Lance reached out and asked, "Do you want to hold her?"

I took a few steps back and said, "I'm not interested. So this is the person you want me to meet? You and Tiffany's child?"

Lance's eyes turned dark when he heard I said Tiffany.

The baby started to cry and Lance quickly comforted her. "There, there, just sleep, my dear."

The look on his face, was like the look my father used to give me when putting me to sleep, so loving and caring.

I've never seen Lance like this.

"Lance Mason, did you expect me to congratulate you that you have such an adorable child?"

Lance took a step towards me with the child in his arms, I stepped back, and he kept stepping towards me, until I was pressed against the wall, "Don't you think the child looks like you?"

My eyes widened in shock, how is that possible?

I lowered down my eyes and observed the little human in his arms, well I didn't think she looks like me, but she does look a little like Lance.

I tried to convince myself that the child didn't look like me, because the child that was inside of me was a boy, and he didn't survive after 7 months.

How was this possible.....

What was Lance planning to do?

"If this is my child, and not yours, do you think I would bring you all the way here just to see her?" Lance's face showed disappointment.

"What do you mean?" I couldn't control my voice anymore.

"Waa....." The child started to cry again. Lance glared at me for a second, as if blaming me for waking up the baby.

He immediately paced around the house, gently shaking the child to sleep, patting her back at the same time.

The maid came over and said, "Sir, it's time for young lady to drink her milk, shall I hold her?"

Lance handed over the baby very carefully to the maid and looked at me. "Come sit, we need to talk about that child."

My palms were sweating, my heart was beating like crazy. I kept telling myself not to overthink. But Lance said, he wouldn't bring me all the way just to see HIS child.....

What did he mean? It's obvious he meant that this child isn't only HIS child, and not other woman's child.....

But didn't Lance tell me my baby was a boy? And he told me he was gone on the 7th month, I had a miscarriage. Why is the child here well and alive now? And a little girl, not boy!

"Her name is Lexi Mason. When she was born after 7 months, the doctor put her in the premature infant incubator. She had gone through 5 operations in total, I was only able to bring her back home last month. The doctor said as long as I take care of her nicely and properly, she will grow up normally and healthily. Ever since she was born, she has gone through many hardships, a her father, it really broke my heart seeing her in the operation room everytime. I swore to raise her up well and give her whatever I can."

Lance stood up from the sofa and approached me. He started into my eyes intensely and said, "Including her lost mother."

At this point, I finally understood everything.

But I refused to believe this, I didn't know why. Perhaps my hate for Lance was too strong, or perhaps I'm just like my mom, selfish.

Lance grabbed my chin and raised my head, "Jennie Gomez, you don't care about your mom, because she wasn't a responsible mother, she didn't love you, RIGHT?!" Lance tried using my mom to provoke me.

"Why do I have to trust you?"

He showed me a child and told me this child is mine, just like that. Did he expect me to just accept this? My child died, and my child was a boy.

"You gave birth to her, this is the truth. I don't believe it if you tell me you don't feel anything when you see her. Or are you really as selfish as your own mother?"

Lance raised his voice, his was emotionally unstable at this point. Just because I didn't believe him that the child is mine, so he got mad?

"Sorry, I don't feel anything when I see her. Do you think I'll just believe you easily?"

When I was pregnant and knew that this baby would leave my side when she's born, I was afraid that I would be upset, so I kept controlling my own emotions, forcing myself not to feel anything for this child. When they told me I miscarried, I thought the child was gone.

Then, out of nowhere, Lance showed me a baby, expecting me to have feelings.

Reward

400

Comments

5

04:13 

My Paranoid Lover

52.9%

## Chapter 120 DNA Test

I was suspicious, part of me believed him, but part of me didn't.

"Hmph, seems like you are just like your mother! At least she accepted you as her daughter, you don't even want to accept your own daughter, are you even human?!"

Lance asked me if I was human, funny. "Ha.....you're a human, so why wouldn't I be? You showed me a baby and tell me she's mine, are you trying to fool me? Didn't you know I lost my child on the 7th month? How can a child survive if born so early?!"

I bled so much that time, and I heard the doctor said that the baby was gone.....

How could he expect me to believe him now?

Lance released my chin and took a few steps back, his looked extremely disappointed. He stared at me with very sorrow eyes and said in a hoarse voice, "I never expected you to be such a cold-blooded woman."

Then he laughed at himself and added, "Yea, I forgot you even aborted a 4 months old baby.....why did I even expect you to like Lexi?"

I didn't know what Lance was planning, but what if, just what if the child is mine?

Although I never wanted a child with him, but since she's already born, I couldn't ignore her. I don't want to be like my mom.

"I want to do a DNA test, if she's mine, I'll accept her. This isn't too much to ask I believe."

Lance glared at me, "You don't believe me?"

"It's not that I don't believe you, it's just that it's very hard for me to believe something you say, if she's really my child, there's nothing wrong with a DNA test right?"

I just finished my sentence, and the next thing I knew was a chair flying across my face, just right beside me. It hit the wall.

I was so shocked that I jumped.

"Leave! GET THE HELL OUT!" Lance yelled. He's mad again.

I turned around and walked out, I wanted to leave here badly.

It's hard to call a cab from here, I wasted around nearly 40 minutes until I saw one. I got in the car and booked a hotel room for Javier. He came all the way to see me, I couldn't just let him stay by the road, right?

I told the driver to drop me at the airport.

Javier would arrive in a short while, I sat at the lounge waiting for him. I kept recalling the look on Lance's face when he held the child.

Could that adorable girl be my child? She's so small, she didn't even look like a one year old girl. Lance said she had gone through 5 operations, could her body take it?

Lance said he was only able to bring her back last month, was it

because of her weak body so that she had to stay in the hospital for so long?

I asked myself again and again, could the child really be mine? Why didn't I feel anything at all? Was I really like mom?

No matter what, I wanted to do a DNA test for sure. If she is, and if Lance allow me to carry out my role as a responsible mother, I wouldn't escape, because I couldn't be like my own mother.

( LANCE'S POV: My little girl was born after 7 months, and she was put into an incubator. When she got older, she started to go through different operations. Every time the doctor handed me the report about the dangers of her health, I panicked.

I paced around the hallway as her surgery went on, thinking if Jennie was here, it would be so much better. I would hug her, and the pain would be handled by two people instead of one, it would feel better. When Lexi went for her fourth operation, my heart broke into a billion pieces, she was just so young, so small..... when she got out of the risky period, I couldn't take it anymore and went to Switzerland.

I saw her with a young man, walking together. I saw her smile, a smile so beautiful and sincere, a smile I have never seen from her. They went in the house and it was really cold. I waited outside, looking inside at them enjoying their hotpot through the window.

I was so jealous, my Lexi was going through all the pain here she was, enjoying her time with another man. I wanted to bust into her house so badly, but who gave the right to? I don't deserve to go in, she didn't owe me, it was me who owe everything to her.

I wanted to give my dear Lexi a healthy family with the love of a father AND a mother, but I know deep in my heart, this was just an excuse for me to use my child's name and pull her back to my side.

I was jealous that she was smiling at another man, and her smile was so beautiful..... )

Reward

400

Comments

6

## Chapter 121

Javier saw me and gave me a big hug. He touched my head, giving me warmth. After all that I have been through, I still didn't learn how to reject the warmth people give me.

No matter if the boy in front of me wasn't a man to me, just a big boy, I still wanted more of his warmth.

"Let's go, let's go settle down in a hotel first, we'll talk later." Javier said while pulling my hands. We left the airport.

Since I had already booked a hotel room for him, we went straight to the hotel. Javier put his luggage and came to my room. I needed someone to speak to.

After some consideration, I still decided not to tell him, he is 3 years younger to me, just like a little brother to me. He came to see me all the long way from Germany, I should be grateful. I couldn't be so greedy. I used to want more of Leo, but.....

I learnt my lesson, even if I like this big guy here, I should not get attached.

Some things are not meant to be spoken out.

In simple words, I explained what happened to him, about mom. But I didn't tell him about Lance, he didn't ask me also.

We ate a simple lunch. Then, Javier said we should get the cremation done soon.

I originally planned to go back to Germany once I'm done here, but now with the baby's issue, I needed to stay for a DNA test. If she is really my child, my peaceful life would be gone, but she's my responsibility, I shouldn't leave her alone if she really is my baby.

We arrived at the centre, Javier was by my side. "It's going to be alright, just breathe."

I looked up at him. "Javier, thank you so much."

He patted my head and said, "No need to be so formal with me."

There was no passion or whatever romantic feelings between us. We clicked the first time we met, just like old friends, I could be myself around him. I could relax and just be me.

"Once your mother's funeral is done, do you need to stay further? My friend told me the people here would stay around one month, it's a tradition or something?" Javier asked.

I didn't even plan to follow the tradition, but since I have another thing to worry about now, I should stay.

"Yeah, you should go back after a few days, don't affect your studies."

Javier put his hands on my shoulder and pulled me into his arms. "The credit hours for this semester is short, so I can stay. It's not safe for a little woman here alone."

Little woman? To him I was a little woman? But I am 3 years older



than him!

"I need to stay for a month, it's a long time, I don't think it's a good idea." I said. I didn't want Javier to stay here for too long. I didn't want him to know about my relationship with Lance and my dirty past. I appreciate the friendship with him, I didn't want him to leave me because I was disgusting to him.

Javier insisted, "This is my decision to make. I just want to travel around here for a month, don't think too much."

We already know each other for a year now, I knew his temper very well. Once he decided on something, it would be hard to change his mind. But sooner or later, he would find out.....

Just when I was lost in my own thoughts, Javier shouted, "CAREFUL!"

I was pressed in his arms, his head hit the ground and started to bleed. We were on the floor. I was so shocked I didn't know what to do.

Javier didn't faint, he stared at the black car driving away from us and said through clenching teeth, "Call the cops."

The speed here is limited, so it was obvious the black car was coming for us.

Javier was just a student, he grew up in Spain and all, so the black car was clearly coming for me, not him. But Javier saved me just in time.

Who would want to hit me with a car in front of a cremation centre? Lance Mason crossed my mind, did he want me dead just because I didn't believe him that Lexi is my daughter?

I didn't think too much and called the ambulance. Javier was sent to the hospital. I was given a check-up also but there was nothing serious on me.

Javier spoke to me with a pale face. "I won't die, bro." he was still holding onto me even at this time, no one ever treated me this way.

I started to cry, Javier saved me life.

How do I ever repay his kindness?

Javier was brought away for treatment. I went to the hallway and tried to call Lance's old number. I already deleted his number, but it was imprinted in my mind, I couldn't forget it.

He picked up the phone and I immediately started to yell, "Lance Mason you are a fcking jerk! Did you hire someone to hit me with a car? HUH, you really wanted me dead?! Karma will get the best of you, you fcking jerk!"

I yelled like a mad woman.

Lance was silent for a moment and said, "Where are you? Are you hurt? I'm coming now."

"Ha.....thanks to you, I didn't die yet. I'm fine. I'm just scared if you come and see me standing here alive you would die of disappointment." I said sarcastically.

"What the hell are you talking about? I will investigate who did this,

for now tell me where you are."

Lance spoke with a very serious voice.

"I don't care if you want me dead, but if you dare put a finger on the people I care about, I will really kill you." And I hung up after that.

## Chapter 122

I went back into the ward to see Javier. "Didn't you say you're going to get me water?" Javier asked.

I smiled awkwardly and said, "Oops, sorry I forgot. I'll get it now."

Javier gestured me to come with his fingers and said, "Nah, come here I need to talk to you."

I sat in front of him, letting him play with my fingers. He asked, "Did that scare you?"

I nodded. "Yeah, you scared me, please don't ever do that again, I don't deserve it."

"Why not? I think you're worth it."

I shook my head. "No, you have parents and friends, if something happens to you, they would be very sad. I have no one, so if I died, nobody would be sad."

Javier hugged me and said, "Don't even think about that, you have me, if you die, I would be very sad."

I couldn't control myself and cried, "Javier, why are you being so nice to me?"

He hugged me tightly and said, "Because if I don't treat you well, nobody would." He said it, the truth. If he didn't be nice to me, there's nobody in this world who would. But we were just friends, does this mean we were slowly crossing the line. Deep down, I wanted to ignore the rules and lines.....

He hugged me, while I hugged him back by his waist. I knew I was being shameless, I knew I shouldn't be like that, but I still refused to reject the warmth this guy gave me.

The door suddenly opened. We looked up and saw a nurse leading a man in. yes, that man was Lance Mason.

When he saw us in each other's arms, his face turned cold, I could even see anger and hatred in his eyes.

This made me even more sure that he was the one who hired someone to hit me.

"Time for meds." The nurse said.

Lance walked in front of us and asked, "Are you and your friend okay?"

Javier stared at me, I was afraid that he might recognize Lance. Lance is a famous businessman.

"Are you dating a few guys at the same time? So open huh." Lance said sarcastically. But it did seem like I was the one hugging Javier first.

"Is this any of your business?" I asked back.

"No, but you are a mother, you shouldn't act this way." He said, I could feel the anger he was trying to keep under control.

"The DNA Test isn't even carried out yet, don't be so soon to

conclude. Even if she is my child, are you a good role model? You had a mistress when you were married and divorced your ex-wife once you're done with her. Oh yea, you even hired someone to murder me." I said, I wasn't afraid of him anymore.

"I will investigate this I promise, if I wanted you dead, I wouldn't use such a stupid way. If I wanted you dead, would I even let you start a new life in Switzerland?" Lance said, bringing up the bad memories.

"So should I thank you for creating rumors about me and still pretended to help me buy sending me out?" I asked. My hands turned to fists. My heart was dead, dead for a man like this.

"I did not create ru....."

"Enough, I don't want to talk about it anymore. Only you know if what happened today is related to you. Karma will come to you." I cut him off. I didn't want to talk to him. Then I went back into the ward and closed the door.

"What happened? Why is your face so ugly?" Javier asked me.

I shook my head and said, "Nothing, I'm just still worried about what happened. Oh yea, you need to go back as soon as possible, I'm going back to hometown in a few days, if you follow around, my grandparents are going to ask a lot of questions." Javier needed to go, I didn't want him to get involved in my shit.

"Nini, I know it very clearly, the car was obviously coming for us. Is that related to the man just now? You should let the cops handle this. Someone clearly wanted you dead." Javier's words made me speechless. Seems like it's getting harder to lie and cover up my background.

"I'm sorry, there are things that I don't want to say. Javier, you should go back after this." I was afraid that Javier would be in danger if Lance decided to really become a living demon.

"What? The man just now, he doesn't look like a normal man." Javier said.

"You know him?" I was lowkey afraid that Javier might find out about me and Lance from the social medias.

"No, but I can see it from his outfit. He looks rich and powerful. And you look so normal, Nini, how do you know a man like this? Can you tell me?" Javier asked.

"Nothing! I don't have anything to do with him! Please don't ask me anymore!" I yelled at Javier.

Lance Mason was the only thing I didn't want to talk about.

"Nini, what is wrong with you?"

I realized that I was out of control and quickly calmed myself. Then I smiled awkwardly at him and said, "Might be my mom's death, I'm a little emotionally unstable. Please don't think too much. I'm going to have some time alone." I left the room immediately after saying that.

## Chapter 123

Lance didn't leave the hospital, he was outside the ward the whole time, as if he was waiting for me.

He saw me and walked towards me in big steps. "We need to talk."

I gave him a poker face and said, "We have nothing to talk about."

But he ignored me and continued, "My men reported back to me about the accident just now,, it was Tiffany Abel. We were on bad terms a while ago, she must have thought that me and you are still close so she wanted to take her revenge of me on you. You and your friend are hurt because of me and for this I apologize."

Lance Mason was apologizing to me, he was saying sorry to me. To me, this wasn't a thing that I have ever expected. In my mind, Lance Mason was always the man up there, above all of us, he would never say sorry.

"You think I would believe you just like this? I never thought Tiffany is a nice person, but you, Lance Mason, you are not anyone nice too."

About what happened between Tiffany and Lance, I read it from the social medias and of course some gossips. But I wasn't sure if it was true or not. At first I thought they were childhood friends so they must have feelings for each other, but then once I left the country, Lance divorced her.

He divorced her just like that, so to a lot of people, their marriage was just for business benefits.

But to me, Lance ruined a woman's golden period on her life.

"I know I was horrible to you, so if you misunderstood me, I can understand. In your eyes, I'm a jerk a bastard, and I don't want to explain or justify myself. I will handle this and give you a valid answer, I will not let you get hurt out of nowhere!" Lance said, he sounded sincere. But I chose to not believe what he said. If this was done by Tiffany, then Lance would be the perfect person to handle this. Deep down, I also knew there was no reason for Lance to kill me, if he wanted me dead, I wouldn't be standing here by now.

"I hope me and my friend wouldn't be in any sort of danger anymore during our time in Denmark. Lance Mason, I will tell you this one more time, I do not owe you, the person who owed it to you is now dead."

"I don't need you to emphasize to me, you don't owe me, I was the one who wronged you. I owe you, so I'm trying to make it up to you as best as I can, I don't want you to just ignore your child like this just because of your hatred to me. She's innocent." Lance said, and turned around. he left. I stared at his back. He's been telling me that he's the one who owed me, he said that many times when I got back here. Did he really want to make it up to me? Why did I feel like it wasn't possible?

"If she really is my child, then I will accept her, but Lance, I have to ask you. If she's innocent, what about me? Am I innocent too?"

Lance stopped in his track when he heard what I said. He didn't look

at me, though.

"There's no point bringing up the past anymore, like I said, I will make it up to you."

"Make it up to me? Who the f\*ck wants that? The hurt you brought me wouldn't be able to just disappear!" I yelled, I was so mad I forgot that this was the hospital.

Lance left the hospital. I couldn't keep myself calm. Javier came out of the ward and touched my shoulder.

"I heard everything, Nini, I know you are a person with a past, I have always known. So I didn't ask you anything because I knew it must be a sad past, I want you to be happy. I don't want to see you living in the past, in sorrow. But right now, I really want to know, are you willing to tell me?"

I couldn't say yes to Javier's request. My past was way too dark, too sorrow for me. It was like a nightmare to me, it's not something I could finish talking about in a few sentences.

"Javier, go back to Germany, really. You staying here would make it even harder for me. I need to handle a lot of stuff, it's MY problem. MY problem." I emphasized on the word 'my'.

"If you don't want to talk about it, fine. I just wanted to be by your side for longer, how do you have to chase me away like that?" Javier sighed.

"I'm sorry, Javier." I apologized.

Javier patted my head and spoke to me with a loving face. "There's no need for apologies and thank you between us. We are friends, but you were never only just a friend to me. I always hoped to be closer, and take one step up in our relationship. But I know you wouldn't want it, you wouldn't want to take things to the next level. I've been giving you time and I have been waiting. But Jennie, you have to know, it's hard to wait for so long, I hope I wouldn't need to wait any further. You know once the perfect timing passes, it would be hard to get together. You are three years older than me, you should know. I'll just be by your side, you handle your problems, I won't do a thing I'll give you your time and space, and I'll be waiting for your answer back in Germany."

My heart started to beat very fast. Was this man, a man three years younger than me, confessing his feelings me? I have always thought that I'm just a good friend to him. I never expected him to have feelings for me. His sudden confession made me lost. I didn't know how to react or response.

He chose to confess at this time, I really couldn't give him an answer.

"Once my mom's funeral is done, go back to Germany. I'll tell you my answer once I'm completely done with the things here."

We are all grown adults, we must let each other know yes or no no matter what.

Javier nodded, "I'll be by your side for a few days until your mother's funeral is over. I won't bother you after that, but I hope you think about

me first before you decide anything, no matter how little I mean to you, at least put me in a place in your heart."

Javier is a very mature person. He would never ask for any repayment from anyone, even if he helped. I know this very well.

But we've been flirting for some time, I guess we know it too but we didn't say anything. when I dated Bosco, Javier became distant with me. Since then, we already knew something was going on between us, we just chose to not say a thing.

I guess Javier must have been angry that I dated Bosco.

Lance wanted my mother's funeral to be held at his mansion, but I refused. I just wanted this to be over with.

I was also quite confused why Lance would agree to my mom's wish of being buried in their family graveyard. To him, my mom was a disgrace, a whore, so why did he agree?

Reward

400

Comments

3

## Chapter 124

Once my mother was cremated, I held her ashes in my hands with Javier beside me. I spoke with an empty voice, "No matter what you say, my mom will be buried in my hometown. I promised father, please don't make it hard for me."

I added, "My mother wasn't a good woman, she wronged my father. I wasn't his real daughter, but only I know how good he was to me. I want my mom to pay to father for how she treated her. He was a good man."

"Brother, let her be." Leo said.

Lance finally nodded his head. "You're her daughter, do what you like, I'll drive you."

"It's fine, I'll come back to see you once this is done." I said.

Javier spoke up. "I'll go with you then, shall I?"

Javier has always been so gentle. No matter what, he would always ask to see if I'm okay with it, he would always get my consent first. He made me feel stability, the only feeling that I would never be able to get from the Mason's.

Lance's hands balled into fists, I could even hear his knuckles cracked.

"No matter what, your mother was in the Mason's for 20 years. Although she didn't get married, but she was my father's wife for a long time. As the master of the family, I have to go." Lance insisted to follow.

I was irritated. I didn't know what Lance was thinking. He never liked my mom, why was he acting all strange now? How fake.

I didn't even see Uncle Mason once. And now his son was trying to help him do his job.

"My father's grave is the only thing to me that's clean and pure, I don't want you anywhere near there." I said.

I could see the bitterness and sadness on Lance's face, but I didn't know why he would feel sad or bitter.

Javier and I rented a car. Javier drove while I sat beside him, carrying mom's ashes.

Javier asked me who else is in my hometown, I said my grandmother.

"Do we need to go see her?" Javier asked.

I shook my head, "No, grandma doesn't like mom. She's old, let's not trigger her in anyway."

I suddenly felt like telling Javier about Lexi. I couldn't escape, he had to know sooner or later.

"Javier, I might have a one-year old daughter."

I waited for Javier to say something, but he didn't say a single word for a long, long time. Then, he said, "I know, I heard you that day, about your daughter. You should take responsibility. I don't think she will affect



us being together."

"Are you sure only the child? Our age, tradition and culture are all different." I said.

"I don't think those are any problem at all!" Javier raised his voice, he seemed to be a little mad. But I was happy that he was brave enough to chase me, to chase someone and the things he like.

If Leo had been braver a little, and helped me, we would be a happy couple now.....

"Javier, how well do you think you know me?" I asked.

"Everything about your past, I know. But I don't mind, because I want to be your future, not your past. Everyone has a past, it might be a dark past to you and to others, but it's already in the past. I don't want to talk about the past with you." Javier's words were like the storm, clouding my heart.

He said: he knew everything about me, the past I tried so hard to cover up, he actually knew.....

## Chapter 125

I have been assuming that Javier had no clue about my past but I was wrong. The rumours about me on the internet was too hot and everyone knew what happened one year ago.

I was fooling myself by acting like an innocent woman in front of him for a year. How would he see me now?

"When did you find it out? Recently or a long time ago?"

I looked out the window and didn't dare look at his facial expression.

"Actually, the time when we met on the plane wasn't the first time we met. I have met you a long time ago, when you were in year four of degree, I was in the second year, I was an exchange student. I knew you by then, but you didn't. I even talked to you at the cafeteria if you remembered."

I was surprised by the words of Javier. He knew me since I was in the last year of degree and he recognized me on the plane. He doesn't feel disgusted by me knowing that I was a mistress and he even helped for so many times.

"You were working back then, so I barely see you around on the campus. I really wanted to get to know you but you had a boyfriend that time so I gave up. It was until one year ago I met you again, I recognized you at first sight and you know it is impossible to not see all the news on the internet but I believe that you would never do something like that, you must have your reasons."

There were times when Leo Mason would come and visit me on campus. Javier must have misunderstood the relationship between me and Leo back then. I liked Leo a lot at that time, I would always stick to him like a koala bear whenever he came to visit me back then.

"Why would you believe me?! You don't even know me!" I couldn't control myself to not shout at Javier.

Javier stopped the car beside the road and held my shoulder, making me face him. He tilted my chin up and looked into my eyes, "You asked me why would I believe you? I am telling you right now that I believe in you because of your eyes. You have no idea how pure your eyes are. You will never be that kind of woman."

Javier stopped for a second before he started to talk again, "I know you don't like that man, Nini. I can tell that you hate him by seeing how you lose control every time you see him. You are not happy with him. But you are happy when you are with me, I can feel it. So, follow your heart, Nini. Stop bottling up all your feelings."

Even though Javier is younger than me, he has taught me a lot of things. He was right, I will lose control every time I see Lance Mason, but he knew my past now, I couldn't be like how we used to be anymore.

"Just drive. Let bygones be bygones, I don't want to talk about this anymore."

I placed his hand that was on my shoulder back to his lap and

turned my head away from him.

Javier didn't say anything anymore, he just sent me to the destination and helped me bury my mother.

When we got in the car, I told Javier to find a hotel to stay in the village for the night.

I would send him to the airport the next morning. How I wanted to leave here, leave all of these behind and just go back with him.

I didn't know that if Lance Mason was really afraid that I would leave with Javier, he didn't follow me back home but he went to the village.

The three of us slept in the same hotel. This was the only hotel in the village and the front desk told them that they only had two rooms left unfortunately. But one of the rooms has a twin bed.

Lance Mason booked a room earlier and there was only a room left. I have stayed in a youth hotel with Javier before, there was CCTV in the room and nothing happened. I believed in Javier. So, I told Javier that we can sleep in one room since this was the only hotel in this town.

The front desk worker smiled at us.

Javier didn't get to say anything because Lance didn't give him the chance to, "You two aren't suitable to sleep in one room, your friend will be sleeping in the same room with me."

With that, Lance turned around and asked Javier, "Mr. Santiago wouldn't mind sleeping in the same room with me, right?"

I felt funny looking at what Lance Mason did, was he afraid that I will do something with Javier? I will do anything and date anyone I want; he doesn't have the right to control me.

"Javier, wouldn't you worry that I will be sleeping alone in a room without a CCTV?" I was actually afraid because this hotel didn't seem safe, and I was afraid that Lance Mason would come into my room and do something to me in the middle of night.

I grabbed the room card and walked up the stairs without sparing a look for Lance Mason.

"Thank you, Mr. Mason, but I will just stay with Nini tonight." Javier said politely.

"Aren't you afraid what people will say about Jennie if you sleep with her in the same room?" Lance said coldly.

I turned around angrily after I heard what he said, "Do I look like I care? I have already been the talk of everyone one year ago!"

"Come up, Javier!" I said.

I saw Javier politely nodded at Lance Mason and followed me upstairs.

## Chapter 126

Lance Mason followed behind us. His room was just opposite of our room and when I pulled Javier into the room, I heard Lance said, "Be careful of getting dumped by Jennie Gomez one day."

Lance Mason must have known everything I did out there, including my relationship with Bosco.

But I broke up with Bosco before I came back. I just let him say whatever he wants. I don't mind anyway.

I heard the sound of things being smashed from the Lance's room after I closed the door.

"I don't want to leave you here alone now, Nini. He was being jealous obviously. I need to stay here to protect you." Javier said.

I laughed at his words and said, "I used to be so stupid like you to think that he likes me, but I was wrong, I was overthinking like you now. How is it possible that he would like me? He hated me since I was 5 when I first moved into his house, he had been treating me like trash for years. I hate him for that and I want revenge, but I couldn't do anything so I ran away, as far as I can and I will never come back again. The thing I regret the most is that I didn't abort the second baby."

I tilted my head up to look at Javier's eyes, "I have been pregnant twice. I was four months pregnant when I did my first abortion. I had the second baby because I have the same special blood type with him, he was afraid that the baby would die because of haemolysis so he let me keep the baby and promised to let me go after I gave birth to his child. This is me, Javier, my body and soul isn't clean anymore, I don't deserve you."

I didn't know what took over me that I started to tell Javier my past.

He wasn't even 23 years old yet, could he take in all of these?

Javier didn't step back but he stepped closer to me. He pressed me against the door and kissed my lips softly and said, "Your soul and you body is the cleanest one I have ever witness in my whole life, you are innocent and all of these have nothing to do with you. So, promised me you will stop bottling up your feelings, okay?"

I cried after he finished his sentences.

I nodded at him and said, "Okay, I will stop doing that, and thank you for not feeling disgusted by me. But I can't give you an answer now. I am sorry, Javier."

He wiped away my tears with his thumb and said, "It's okay, I can wait. I have waited a year for you; I don't mind waiting for another year. But Nini, I won't wait for you too long, if you have me in your heart, you wouldn't make me wait too long."

I nodded, "Okay, wait for me, if the baby is really mine, I will talk to Lance Mason about the custody, and after all of this is done, I will go back to Munich and find you. But, Javier, you need to promise me that you won't stay here with me. I don't want you to witness the bad side of

me, I want to save the good side for you."

I knew I was going to be like a maniac whenever I see Lance Mason, and I didn't want Javier to witness that.

"But I am afraid that....."

I placed my finger on his lips to prevent him from finishing his sentence and said, "The thing you are afraid of wouldn't happen, okay?"

Javier couldn't say much so he just nodded.

We went out to find something to eat after we rested for a bit.

Just when I opened the door, I saw Lance Mason who had just opened the door and was about to leave.

I didn't want Javier to see Lance Mason after he knew everything.

"Are you guys going out for dinner?" Lance asked.

Javier is a gentleman and he was always polite to everyone, but after I told him everything, he couldn't be polite to Lance Mason.

I held Javier's hand purposely and pulled him with me to walk away. Lance Mason followed behind us.

We found a small restaurant beside the hotel. The tables were oily and I noticed the disgusted face of Lance Mason, and I couldn't contain my laughter.

When Lance heard my laughter, he sat down in front of us at the same table.

The three of us ordered some noodles.

And I knew Lance wouldn't like the it.

Javier and I had been starving so we just ate without any complaints, and I saw Lance's judgmental face. This was who he was, the high-class man, while the others were just low-class people to him.

Javier finished his bowl of noodles quickly and asked me, "Do you want another?"

I nodded and said yes.

## Chapter 127

Lance started to speak, "Why would you guys need to eat so much? You wouldn't be using any energy when you sleep or are you guys going to do something dirty tonight?"

I smashed my fork down forcefully and looked at him, "You used to say that I am just a clown, now if I have a mirror, I really want to show you who the clown is right now!"

Lance flipped the bowl of noodles and it stained mine and Javier's clothes.

Javier was quick to pull me away and glared at Lance intensely, "What do you think you are doing! If you like her, you wouldn't hurt her like just now!"

"Hurt her?" Lance laughed coldly at his words and said, "Are you playing dumb or what? Don't you know the relationship between me and her? She's been pregnant twice with my children! Why do you have so much interest in her! There are so many clean women out there yet you chose this woman!"

Javier swung his fist across Lance's nose and his nose started to bleed.

"Are you even a man?! Speaking of the woman who has given birth to your child like that! No wonder she doesn't love you!"

Javier's words triggered Lance. He swung his fist across Javier's face and grabbed his collar, "Love me or not she is still the woman I f\*cked and she even bared my children twice! Who do you think you are!"

Lance talked like that to me so many times that I lost count. But this time, he humiliated me in front of Javier. I have always asked God what I have done to deserve all of this.

A loud bang was heard and the bowl of noodles was banged against Lance Mason's head.

He turned around and looked at me. He didn't faint like how they always do in dramas. He looked at me like he couldn't believe I did that to him.

He then laughed coldly.

Javier quickly rushed to me and asked if I was okay.

Lance Mason took out his phone without minding the blood rushing down from his head and called someone, "Cops? There are people trying to hurt me, the address....."

The cops came and the three of us were being captured because Lance told the cops that it was Javier who banged his head with the bowl but I told them it was me.

Javier pulled me over and told me not to talk anymore. He knew what Lance wanted to do.

Lance Mason made another call and the cops were fast to arrest Javier. Javier could be in the prison for a year if Lance Mason really

wanted to sue him.

I shouted at the cops who arrested Javier and said, "Shouldn't you cops investigate before you arrest someone?! There are fingerprints of mine on the broken bowl! I am the one who hurt Lance Mason! You should arrest me not him!"

I was shouting at the cops like a mad woman but they still brought Javier back with them. I knew all of this was Lance Mason's doing, he was triggered by me and Javier because we acted so sweet in front of him, but I never knew he would do this. I regret it a lot.

"If you have anything you are not happy with, hurt me all you want, Lance Mason! Don't hurt my friend!" I shouted at him.

"Now he has become a friend? So, he isn't your boyfriend then? Have you been sleeping around with all your male friends?"

He was still being him, never stop humiliating me, this was the real Lance Mason.

"That's my business, not yours." I was speechless.

"Do you think I want to mind your business? If you aren't the mother or my child, I wouldn't care about you so much. If you aren't Lexi's mother, I wouldn't care if you become a whore."

This isn't the first time he called me a whore; I just didn't expect that he would still use the worst name to call me after such a long time.

I laughed at him coldly and said, "Yeah, you are right, I am a whore, my mother was a whore and what about my child?"

## Chapter 128

I saw hurt flashed across his eyes. Maybe the baby girl is really my daughter and he cares about her.

I turned around and walked out of the police station. It was very dark out there and I couldn't see a person on the street. I hugged myself and my tears were threatening to fall down my cheek. Why couldn't he just walk out of my life?

Do I need to die to be able to make him leave me?

A drunk man approached me and said, "You don't look familiar, little girl, are you from the city?"

I quickly dodged him and walked another way back to the hotel. What was he going to do to me? I wouldn't be able to escape myself.

Suddenly the man grabbed my arm and said, "Where are you going? Come and have fun with us."

I tried to get out of his grip, "Let me go or I will call the cops!"

The man laughed at my words and said, "Let's have some fun before you call the cops then."

With that, the man pulled me with him, trying to drag me to somewhere.

"Help! Help me!" I shouted loudly.

I was trying to step on the man's feet when I heard a familiar voice, "Let her go."

Lance appeared in the dark with a gauze on his head.

The man looked at Lance and said, "Do you know who I am?"

"Are you deaf? I told you to let her go!" Lance said coldly.

He didn't wait for the man to respond, he pulled me towards him with his big hand and I was leaning on his chest in a second. The man was lying on the floor groaning and Lance kicked his stomach again. He pulled his phone out and called the cops again.

The police officers were soon to arrive and greeted Lance.

Lance looked at the man who was lying on the floor and said, "Arrest this and put him into a jail for eight or ten years."

The cops said yes and quickly brought the man with them. Lance placed his jacket on my shoulder but I stepped back not wanting to use his jacket.

He knitted his eyebrows at me and said, "Just wear it, I don't want you to catch a cold."

Lanced is very tall and his jacket was just like a dress for me.

"Thank you for saving me just now." I said and I saw a hint of happiness flashed across his eyes.

I was overthinking again. The only reason he was willing to save me was because I was his woman before and I even gave birth to his child.

"You are the mother of my child; I won't let anyone hurt you." Lance



said, looking odd.

I suddenly recalled Javier and I gritted my teeth, "Our business doesn't have anything to do with Javier. If you are angry, you can hit my head too if you want and let Javier out."

"I never wanted to arrest him, so, don't worry about him. It will be just one night. I will let him out tomorrow and send him to the airport, even if he has committed any crime he shouldn't be arrested by our cops, he is a foreigner after all."

His last sentence worried me, what crime, what crime had Javier done?! It was her who hurt him!

"What do you mean by your last sentence! What do you want Lance Mason! Are you crazy?! Why do you like to see me suffer so much!"

I couldn't contain my anger so I let it all out. I couldn't control myself every time I saw him.

"You have lived a quiet life for a year, it should end now. You wouldn't be able to go back to Germany, so don't think about it! Your friend wouldn't be able to come here too! I will arrange a DNA test for you and Lexi after we go back. You wouldn't be able to run away by then!"

With that, he pulled me with him and added, "Let's go back to the hotel. You will go back to the city with me tomorrow, and I will make sure your friend will be sent to the airport."

What he meant was he will never let Javier come near to me again.

## Chapter 129

I just let him pull me and when we reached the front desk, the worker looked at me and Lance weirdly.

When we reached our room, Lance looked at me weirdly, he must be thinking why would I was so nice to just let him hold my hand without any protests.

He pulled me into his room without my permission and pressed me against the door. He lowered his head down and kissed me, he licked the bottom of my lips, wanting me to part my lips and let him in, but I didn't.

"Part your lips." He said with lust laced in his voice.

I didn't do as he asked so he just bit and kissed my lips, torturing my lips before he trailed his kisses down my neck.

His hands started roaming my body. I knew what he wanted, I knew it very well.

I looked down at the top of his head and said, "Do you really want to f\*ck a whore like me?"

He stopped his action and tilted his head up. He looked sad, "Shut up! I won't allow you to speak of yourself like this."

I laughed feeling funny and ironic that he could call me names but I couldn't.

"I was never a human to you anyway, I am always the dirty whore, things that you have used....."

He let go of me and stepped back a few steps.

He looked really sad.

"Don't talk like that, I have never wanted to humiliate you, you knew I would say things that I don't mean when I am angry. I didn't mean to....." He explained.

"I'm sorry, Jennie, I apologize for everything I have done to you, I'm sorry!"

He sat on the bed rubbing his face with both his hands looking like he was really in pain.

"Why would you apologize? You want me to forgive you?" I walked towards him and looked down at him.

"Will you forgive me?" He tilted his head up and looked at me.

I laughed and said, "Do you think I will forgive you?"

Lance laughed bitterly and shook his head, "No, you wouldn't. I have done a lot of unforgivable things to you; how would you forgive me? But forgive or not, I was planning to let you go but I couldn't bear to see you fall in love with another man. How could you love another man so easily but you can't love me?"

Was he asking me why I couldn't fall in love with him?

Pathetic.

"Lance Mason, I used to ask you if you like me, but you always said no. Now I ask you one last time, do you like me? Because I can't seem to understand why you wouldn't let me go. Aren't you tired?"

He stood up from the bed and was about to touch me but he put his hand back down.

"You are so clever; you should have known that I have feelings for you. Otherwise you wouldn't be calling Leo Mason's name when you are in my bed. You wouldn't be moaning his name when we have sex. Now tell me, who is torturing who between the both of us."

This is the first time I heard him say Leo's full name, he would always call him Leo because he is the most important person in his life, no one could compete.

With what he told me, I knew that he liked me, but I didn't want to accept this kind of feelings from him.

"Yes, I like you, even more, I love you, and what? You don't love me at all, you will fall in love with every single man in this world but you will never love me. So, I have no choice, I can only make you pregnant with my baby, I thought that you will start to like me a bit because of this baby, maybe saw that I love you at least. But I was wrong, you don't care anything after you gave birth to Lexi, you don't even care if she was alive or not, you just assumed that she was dead, because like that you will have nothing to do with me anymore."

He laughed coldly like a maniac after he finished and held my shoulder, "But I am sorry to let you down. Our baby, she is strong, she can take all the pain from all the five surgery, she is not like you, not heartless like you. She knows that I love her so much and I need her so she takes all the pain and stays alive for me. You see how good our baby is, Jennie? Lexi and I need you in this family, so please don't leave again."

## Chapter 130

His intention was very obvious now, he wanted me to live the life before, he wanted to keep me captive.

I pushed his hands away and shook my head, "You have been torturing me for twenty years, I have been living like a dog with you for twenty years! And now you tell me you love me. Your love is so scary that it devastated me and ruined my life! Is this what you called love! Don't you think that you are being ironic?!"

I laughed like a maniac, "The reason why Lance Mason treated me like that is all because he loves me!"

I was suddenly pulled into Lance's arms, "Jennie, Jennie, I was wrong, I will never treat you like that anymore, I will treat you well and be good to you. Let's forget about the past okay? I will be better to you, and we have a baby girl now, you have no idea how cute she is."

He was crying, Lance Mason was crying.

He was begging for me to be with him, crying.

Can we really forget about the past so easily? I can't.

"Do you still want me to be a mistress, Lance Mason?" I looked at the man who was crying and asked.

Lance quickly shook his head and explained, "No, I will marry you, I will make you my legal wife. The reason why I married Tiffany Abel was because of business. You weren't a mistress, you have never been, you are the mother of my child, the woman I love. I was being an ass before, I won't do it again."

I pushed him away and asked, "Will you really marry me?"

Happiness flashed through his face, he thought that I would feel happy when he said he will marry me and let me be Mrs. Mason.

"Of course I will marry you, I love you, Jennie, I never thought about marrying other people. I will love you and our baby forever and I will never make you cry again."

Lance kissed my eyes, nose and lips happily. He suddenly swept me off the floor and carried me bridal style to the bed, he quickly laid on top of me and tried to pull my pants off.

He was smiling happily.

He pulled my pants off and laid on top of me. He rubbed his hand up and down my thighs hoping I will be in the mood quickly.

He kissed my neck and I didn't protest.

Just when he was about to unclasp my bra, I smiled at him and he smiled happily at me, I have never seen him like this. He was happy like a kid.

"Jennie, I will treat you better, forgive me and stop hating me okay?" He asked.

I nodded my head.

Just when he was about to kiss me again, I looked at his eyes and

said, "Leo.....Leo....."

His eyes suddenly turned into bloodshot and I saw pain across his face. "Shut your f\*cking mouth up, Jennie Gomez!" He shouted.

I have known Lance Mason for twenty years and that face he just showed was the most unforgettable one.

Looking at me, the woman he loves moaning his brother's name when he was on top of me. I hurt and humiliated him.

Lance Mason quickly got up from me and sat on the bed, his hands on his face.

He spoke after a long time of silence, "Why would you do this to me, why?"

"I told you before, you will suffer the same pain as me. This can't be compared to the pain you have given me. The last person you should love in this world is me. And you are right, I will never love you."

I pulled my pants up and left the room without looking at him.

Thinking about the face of him in pain just made me feel a lot better. It was the time I realized I couldn't forget about him.

My mom died suddenly and I knew something was wrong. If Lance Mason didn't want to let me go, he shouldn't blame me if I decide to dig all his secrets out.

## Chapter 131

I still couldn't believe that Lance Mason loves me. I couldn't go to sleep that night. I was afraid that he would frame Javier. But I would appreciate it if he really sent Javier back to Munich. I didn't want him to be in this, he is innocent.

Lance stood in front of my door with dark circles under his eyes and said, "Follow me back now! The child is innocent no matter what, you should take responsibility."

I followed behind.

"I will take the responsibility if she is really my child, but that doesn't mean that I will marry you."

Lance stopped in his tracks and walked again.

He was driving a black Bentley. I opened the door of the back seat and got into the car.

Lance didn't turn on the engine after he got in the car and I thought that he was angry because I was sitting at the backseat of the car and not the passenger seat.

"Whatever, we will just sit in the car forever. I will never sit beside you." I said.

He was really childish.

"You are overthinking, I am not that childish, I am waiting for someone."

After a while, a car stopped in front of his car. And I recalled the person who rushed towards us, it was one of his assistance.

He greeted me.

But I didn't give any response.

He handed two paper bags to Lance Mason and said, "I shall go now, I will send Mr. Santiago to the airport."

Lance nodded at him and said, "Make sure that he went into the plane."

His assistance nodded.

Lance Mason really sent Javier to the airport, I was relieved.

Lance handed me one of those paper bags and said, "Breakfast, the food you like, eat it while it is still warm."

I didn't take the paper bag from him.

He just keeps his hand hanging like that and I saw anger ranging in his eyes but I knew he was trying his best to contain it.

"It is not poisoned, don't worry. There is a construction going on in front so we need to use another way back to the city, we will only arrive at the city around 12 in the noon. Eat something, you didn't get to eat much last night."

I have a big appetite and he knew it.

I didn't get to finish the noodles last night because of the incident.

I couldn't sleep last night because of the fight with Lance and also because of hunger.

The smell of food came out from the paper bag and my stomach started to make funny noises.

I slowly took the paper bag from him and when I did, our finger accidentally touched and I quickly pulled my hand away, feeling disgusted.

He balled his hand into fist knowing what I was thinking. Pain and anger flashed in his eyes.

There were bread in the paper bag, an egg, a bowl of mushroom soup, a banana, an apple and a bottle of fresh juice.

There were a lot of foods but I managed to finish it.

I quickly took the bread out and started to eat.

I was eating too fast that the food choked, Lance quickly handed me a few tissues and said, "No one is going to take your food, eat slowly, drink some juice now."

I took the tissues from him and wiped my mouth with it.

I continued to eat my breakfast and I found out that his breakfast was very simple.

It was just a bottle of water and a sandwich.

When I tilted my head up, I him looking at me through the mirror. I was too lazy to fight with him so I just let him watch me eat.

## Chapter 132

After I finished all the food, I felt sleepy.

But I didn't dare to fall asleep because I didn't know what Lance Mason would do to me.

After he finished his breakfast, he started to drive.

The car fell into silence.

He stopped at a service centre after driving for hours. I thought he wanted to use a washroom.

He came to my side of the door and opened my door.

"Go and use a washroom. You shouldn't be holding it."

My face turned red and said, "Who said I was holding it?"

"You drank a bowl of soup and a bottle of juice." He explained.

He was about to help me out of the seatbelt when I said, "Don't touch me, I will do it myself."

I got out of the car and walked towards the washroom, Lance Mason walking behind me.

"Why are you following me?" I asked.

"I want to use the washroom." He said and walked into the washroom.

I was going to wash my hands after I was done but I saw two women looking at me. And I didn't feel good about that. So, I quickly rushed out of the washroom.

Suddenly one of the women held my shoulder and another one held a cloth against my nose and mouth. I held my breath and tried to get out of their grip.

They have strong arms and they dragged me into a small room in the washroom.

"Help!" I shouted.

I accidentally inhale the clothes in my mouth and nose when I shout. And my knees gave up on me.

They knew my schedule and they were waiting for me in the washroom.

When I woke up, I saw Lance Mason walking in. I wanted to ask him what happened in the washroom, but he was busy with Lexi so I waited for him to be free to talk.

He has already fed the baby, changed the diapers and he was free to answer my questions.

Lance picked the baby up from the bed and said, "Wait for me in the study room, I need to bring Lexi to the nanny."

He carried the baby and walked down the stairs. He asked me to wait for him at his study room, he must have something important to tell me then.

His study room doesn't change much. Lance was quick to come in



with a glass of water, "Drink this."

I took the glass of water from him and drank it.

He sat on his chair and I was sitting opposite him. He looked older recently.

But he still looks good. I couldn't deny the fact that he looks good even though I hated him. I have seen the picture of his mother; she was a beautiful woman like my mom.

Seems like all men like beautiful women.

That's the reason why his father cheated on his mother.

"What happened in the washroom? I don't believe that you will do such things to bring me here, it was extra."

Lance looked at me and tiredness laced in his eyes. He had been driving for hours and I assumed that he hadn't rested since he arrived so he looked tired.

"This is my fault; I didn't protect you properly. I have some conflict with Abel's family. They wanted to keep you captive to threaten me. Luckily, I went into the washroom after waiting for a few minutes and you didn't come out. I promise you this kind of thing won't happen again."

He looked at me apologetically. Maybe he was sorry that he let this kind of things happened to me?

## Chapter 133

"Should I thank you then?"

Lance laughed bitterly and shook his head, "Tiffany Abel has some conflict with me and she knew my weakness."

He looked at me after he said that.

"Tiffany Abel again. You took revenge on me because of the mistake of your father and my mother. The Abels want me to f\*cking die because you have some conflict with Tiffany Abel. And why does she want me dead?! I have nothing to do with your conflict with her! What have I done to make all of you treat me like this?!"

I am not the type to curse and swear but I just couldn't contain myself every time I face Lance Mason.

I couldn't contain my frustration and anger.

"I promise you this will never happen again."

Lance Mason promised me again.

I recalled the time he promised me.

"You said that before, you have nothing to make me trust you anymore, Lance Mason." I said.

I was going to leave the room.

He knew I was going to leave the room so he quickly grabbed my hand across the table and said, "You will be in this mansion!"

"I will be safe if you are far away from me!" I said angrily and pushed his hand away.

I closed the door forcefully after I left. Just when I reached the front door of the mansion, two men stood in front of me and blocked my way out. "We are sorry, Miss Gomez, you can't leave the mansion without the permission of Mr. Mason."

I turned around and looked at Lance Mason who just rushed to me. I pointed at the front door and said, "What now? Keep me captive?"

"I just don't want anything to happen to you again. You will be safe staying with me."

I feel ironic how he said it so easily without thinking who put me in danger in the first place.

"Will I be safer sleeping in the same bed with you at night?"

I said shamelessly in front of his worker.

His face turned red and said, "I wouldn't say no if you insist."

"Stop daydreaming Lance Mason! I don't care what plan you are planning right now, I am telling you I will never love you, let alone be with you!"

I said it loudly and I believe that the guards and maids in this mansion heard me clearly. He must feel humiliated.

Indeed. His eyes were raging with anger.

He stepped closer to me and swept me off the floor, "Stop being like

this and talk to me properly. You shouting at me wouldn't solve any problem."

"Put me down!" I yelled at him.

He was beginning to feel impatient that he smacked my butt and said, "Enough is enough, Jennie Gomez! My patient has limits if you keep shouting at me like this, don't blame me if I do something you don't like!"

"What are you going to do? Hit me? Or send me to another man's bed like what you did before?!"

Lance Mason put me down and he looked like he was in pain.

"I have never thought about sending you to another man's bed! You know how I feel for you and you still choose to misunderstand me. I will never send the woman I love to another man!"

His voice was loud and he didn't care if his workers heard it or not this time.

"Have you forgotten what you have done that day?!"

Reward

400

Comments

5

04:14 

My Paranoid Lover

59.2%

## Chapter 134

He didn't look good.

"What are you talking about? You know nothing! It wasn't like how you saw it; I can explain."

"Explain? I don't need your explanation! What I saw wasn't true? Tell what is true then! Tell me that when I was 5 years old you made me kneel in the snow wasn't true. When I was 6 and you pushed my head into the swimming pool wasn't true. You put a snake in my bed when I was 7 years old wasn't true. You made me a juvenile when I was 12 years old. Tell me that the gangsters who tried to rape me wasn't true! Lance Mason, you tell me, is all of this my imagination of is this true?"

I looked at him tears in my eyes.

He took a few steps back and almost tripped himself.

He didn't dare to look at me so he quickly rushed up the stairs into his study room.

I wouldn't be able to be with him even after I forgive him. I couldn't just forget every bad thing he has done to me easily. I saw what he did every time I saw him. He was my nightmare.

The guards were still standing in front of the door blocking my way.

They couldn't let me out without the permission of Lance Mason.

I just wanted to escape from this place that had so many bad memories. I still wanted to escape even though we have a child.

I started to understand my mom. She wanted a high-quality life and I want a happy and normal life. We are all irresponsible.

But the difference between me and my mom is I will tell myself that I have a responsibility to take whenever I want to escape. The child is innocent and she doesn't deserve to be abandoned.

I squatted down and started to cry.

The female butler, Annie came up to me and said, "Come on in, Miss Gomez, it's cold out here."

When she helped me out, my knees gave up on me and I leaned against her.

She sat me down on the sofa in the living room.

"Miss Gomez, the dinner is ready, you can have dinner now. But Mr. Mason said he doesn't want to eat; he hasn't eaten anything after he came. If you go and call him, he will listen to you."

Annie wanted me to go up there to ask Lance Manson to eat something. Funny that she would ask me this kind of thing. Didn't she hear out fight just now?

I didn't care if he starved to death.

"I am sorry, Annie I can't help you. If he doesn't want to let me go, please arrange another room for me now, I need to rest."

I stood up from the sofa.

Annie looked at me awkwardly and asked, "You don't want to have dinner, Miss Gomez?"

I nodded and said, "I want to rest now, thanks Annie."

Suddenly Lance came out from his study room with bloody eyes and walked down the stairs.

"Where is the dinner?"

Annie quickly walked into the kitchen and ordered the maids to serve the dinner.

He looked at me and said, "You don't have to starve yourself because you hate me. The maids will rest after 9, no one will wake up and cook you food."

He was right.

I don't have to starve myself because of him.

So, I followed him into the dining room.

The maids served all the food and I realized that they were all the food I like.

## Chapter 135

We ate in silence. It was mostly me eating and Lance staring at me, he just drank some soup.

I couldn't eat much with him staring at me so I just simply ate something and asked Annie to arrange a guest room for me.

Annie didn't answer me, she just looked at Lance Mason.

Lance made all of the maids go away and looked at me tiredly, "You should start to learn how to be a mother now, you wouldn't want to be like a mother like your mother right?"

"You want me to sleep with you?"

He just wanted to sleep with me.

"The bed is big enough. I wouldn't touch you."

"We haven't done the DNA test; how would I know if she is my child or not? I will start to learn to be a mother after the DNA test result is out."

I stood up and was about to leave the room.

I walked to the sofa in the living room and laid down.

Lance Mason came and pulled me up from the sofa, he held me against his chest tightly.

"What are you doing!"

I started to stir in his embrace.

I heard his weak voice, "Jennie, can we stop all of this and just be together without conflicts? We have a child to raise, please."

Stop all of this?

Raise the child with him?

Impossible!

"You can't control everything, Lance Mason! Stop threatening me with the child! Don't force me to leave the child behind and leave!"

I could feel his hand on my shoulder balled into fist.

Was he going to punch me?

"What is the difference between you and your mother now." He said coldly.

I thought of my mom and the child.

I squinted my eyes and said, "And what?"

He pushed me away. He must be thinking how unbelievable I was.

"I know you hate me, but I know that you wouldn't leave Lexi behind."

"I will take the responsibility but I won't be with you."

"What if I tell you the only way for you to be with Lexi is to be with me?"

He stared at me and threatened me.

Did he think that I was the old Jennie Gomez who would be

threatened by him?

"Then you are forcing me to leave the child just like my mother. You made me leave her."

I wanted to use this to cover up the fact that I didn't want to take the responsibility of this child.

I will feel better like this, will I?

"Get the f\*ck out! My child doesn't need a mother like you! You don't deserve to be a mother! You are just like your mother!"

He pointed at the front door and shouted at me.

I walked out of the door like I was told and when I reached the door I turned around, "I will meet you at the hospital tomorrow morning. I hope you will bring the baby and do the DNA test."

He kicked at the table and pointed his finger at me, "I will just assume and let her know that her mother is dead! Get the f\*ck out now!"

## Chapter 136

No one stopped me when I walked out the mansion. Maybe the guards heard what Lance Mason shouted at me so they didn't try to stop me.

It was dark out there, the street lights weren't bright enough.

The mansion of Lance Mason is halfway up a hill, I had no car so I had to walk. I didn't know how long I needed to walk to be out of this residence.

Even if I managed to walk out, I wouldn't be able to call a cab this late. And I was afraid that if I walked out of this residence, Abel's men would hurt me.

At least I was safe in Lance Mason's mansion even though I didn't want to admit that. He wouldn't harm me.

It was chilly that night and I wasn't wearing much clothes. Walking in a quiet and dark neighbourhood made me scared and cold.

I turned around to look at Lance Mason's mansion. It still made me think of how cruel Lance Mason was.

I didn't plan to walk down the hill, I just wanted to find a place in this neighbourhood to stay for the night. I didn't care much about my safety in this place because I know all the rich in this residence put their safety in the first place, so the safety here should be good.

At least if I stayed here, I would be in a much safer condition. I wouldn't be caught by Tiffany's men.

I found a place that wasn't too exposed and I sat down on the floor. I hugged my knees and placed my head between my knees.

My tears started to roll down when I recalled what had happened in the past few days.

I don't understand why it was so difficult to live a normal life.

Just when I was deep in my thoughts, a flash light flashed on my face.

"Who are you hiding in there?"

It was a voice of a man.

I tilted my head up and covered my eyes with my hand. I couldn't see clearly because of the light.

I stood up quickly and the man approached me. I was scared.

"Who are you?"

The man used his flashlight to flash on my face.

I was nervous and scared, "I am lost, I just want to stay here for one night. I will leave in the morning."

"Bullshit. People who live here are all rich, the guard wouldn't let a stranger in. Whose house maid are you?"

The man mentioned about maid that made me have an idea, "I am the maid of the 9th mansion, I got kicked out because I accidentally



broke a vase."

The mansions here all had a distant between them and I was nearest to the 9th mansion.

I remembered that Lance's mansion is the 3rd mansion.

"I am the owner of the 9th mansion; I don't remember that I have kicked anyone out today. And I have never hired such a young maid."

Why did he need to know so much, was he too bored?

"Mister, I am not a theft or a terrorist. Just leave me alone."

I was running out of patients because of him.

The stranger man pulled out his phone and I knew he was going to call the guard. I quickly rushed to him and stopped him.

"I came out from the 3rd mansion; I was afraid that I would be in danger if I walked out of this neighbourhood without cars. I just want to stay here for the night, I will leave in the morning. Please."

The man stopped and looked at me.

## Chapter 137

"3rd mansion? What is your relationship with Lance Mason?"

I didn't expect that he knew Lance Mason.

"I am his maid. You don't have to know so much if you aren't a guard or a police officer."

"Quit lying. When did Lance Mason hire such a beauty as a maid?"

The man pulled at my hand and wanted to lure me out.

I tried to get out of his grip and said, "What are you doing?"

The stranger said, "Come out, or I will call the guard."

I was being pulled by him to the front door of the mansion.

I could finally see his face thanks to the light at the doorstep. He looked like a gentleman, and he was wearing glasses. But I knew he wasn't a nice man because of his actions just now.

"Tell me who you are or I will call Lance Mason and ask him myself." He threatened me.

I thought about it for a second and said, "Call him then. He wouldn't care much about me; he is the one who kicked me out."

"What's your relationship with him?"

"I don't have to tell you about that."

The stranger looked at me for a second and was about to call someone. A car appeared in front of us before he made the call. And I knew it was the car Lance drove this morning.

The stranger looked at the car for a while.

Lance Mason got out from the car and the stranger said, "Are you looking for someone, Mr. Mason?"

Lance looked behind him and I knew he was looking at me.

"Why is my wife standing in front of your doorstep,"

He was being rude.

Lance Mason quickly rushed to me and was about to hold my hand but I didn't let him.

He was angry.

The stranger came up to me and smiled at me, "Mrs. Mason, please forgive me if I have offended you just now."

"I am not Mrs. Mason! I have nothing to do with him!" I said.

Lance placed his arm on my shoulder and said, "We had a fight just now, so she came out from the house. Sorry to bother you."

Lance finished his sentence and dragged me with him.

He tucked me in his car and drove away.

I got out from the car and was about to walk in the door when Lance grabbed my arm.

"Get lost!" I said.

Lance didn't pull his hand back and said, "You have already found

yourself a bed partner in a short time I see. You have improved a lot."

I was too lazy to argue, I just let him think whatever he wants.

"Thank you. And you are right, I am good at finding myself a bed partner. You and your brother are one of them too, right?" I said sarcastically.

## Chapter 138

Bed partner. He wouldn't like this phrase.

"Do you know what you are talking about?! You are my woman and the mother of my child! Won't you feel ashamed when you say Leo was your bed partner?" He said angrily.

I shrugged and said, "Why would I feel ashamed? You didn't even feel ashamed when you sleep with your brother's woman."

I didn't mind if Lance Mason didn't want to admit the relationship I had with Leo Mason back then, he is still the one who stole his brother's woman.

I pushed his hand away and walked right into the bedroom.

I opened the bedroom door and I didn't see the baby. He must have let someone else taken her.

I didn't even want to shower; I just went right into the bed and pulled the covers over my head.

Lance walked in after me and stopped in front of me. He sat on the bed and was about to reach his hand out to caress my hair but he didn't.

He knew I hated him.

"Don't try to trigger me with words, I called Leo just now and asked if he had been intimate with you and he said no. You were a virgin before I sleep with you. Stop talking to me like that, it's stupid."

He really didn't know how to spell 'shameful'. How could he call his brother to ask a question so personal like this?

I hated Leo Mason more because he chose to abandon me when he knew I was suffering in his brother's hands.

I sat up in the bed and said, "Are you stupid or am I? Do you think Leo would tell you every detail about what he has done with me? Will he tell you how soft my lips are? Will he tell you what shape is the birthmark I have on my chest? Or do you think that he will tell you that I have a mole on my intimate area?"

I didn't even know I have a mole there. It was Lance who told me about that.

He slapped me in the face.

His eyes were bloodshot and he looked very triggered because of what I said.

He grabbed my neck and gritted his teeth, "Shut up, you b\*tch!"

He pushed me onto the bed and laid on top of me. I knew I shouldn't have triggered him but I just couldn't control myself.

I had to be his mistress when he wanted me to. And now I have to be his wife when he wants? Did he think that every woman on this planet should listen to him? Did he think that every woman will come to him when he asks them to?

There is one woman who would never listen to him and that's me, Jennie Gomez.

"Why! Why do you have to do this to me when I don't hate you anymore!"

He doesn't hate me anymore? Do I need to thank him for that?

Lance Mason let go of his grip on my neck when I almost suffocated. He tore my clothes into pieces and bit on my chest.

I didn't protest a bit. I just let him do what he wanted with me.

When he was about to slide into me after he tore my panties apart, I looked at him and said coldly, "Every man in this world can touch me but you can't. If you do, today will be the day I hold my last breath."

He didn't move and froze on top of me. Tears came out from his bloodshot eyes and hit my lips, chin and chest.

He got off of me and said painfully, "Every man in this world but me. You won, Jennie Gomez. You took the most painful revenge on me and you won without doing anything."

I slowly put my clothes on and laid back on the bed. He stopped because I use death to threaten him, so he wouldn't dare to touch me now.

## Chapter 139

Maybe he really loves me already at that time, but his love was too psychotic and toxic.

"What should I do to make you be nicer to me and even try to love me? What should I do?"

His voice came from behind me.

We were in silence at that moment.

"I need love, so I will easily fall in love if any single man shows me a bit of care. But you, Lance Mason, I will never fall in love with you no matter how good you treat me. You wouldn't hurt the person you love if you really love her, and all I got from you is hurt. You choked me, slapped me and called me names, and all of this has hurt me so much that I don't think I could ever forget. I wouldn't fall in love with you even if you give me your life. So, if you really love me, you would let me go, stop doing all of this to me. And about the custody of the child, I will leave it to the court to decide. We should stop all of these struggles between us, stop wasting our time."

I was extremely calm when I said this.

"You wouldn't be willing to love me even if I give my life to you?"

"Yes, I will never love you."

Lance knitted his eyebrows and said, "If so, I don't have to treat you so well since you wouldn't even try to love me. I will just do whatever I want then."

What did he mean? Was he willing to let me go?

"You like Javier Santiago so much, right?"

"What do you want to do, Lance Mason?" He wouldn't just simply mention him.

He turned and faced me, he caressed my eyebrows and said, "I don't want to do anything. I just want to tell you that it is not safe out there, people have the right to own guns, what if....."

"I will kill you if you touch Javier!"

I yelled loudly at him, he started to laugh.

"It all depends on you. If I can't have your heart, I will have your body then."

He placed his hand on my chest right on my heart and pressed it forcefully, "How many men have you placed inside here? I knew you would place anyone in here except a man whose name is Lance Mason. But that's okay, I don't mind it all, as long as I can control you."

I pushed his hand away from my chest and said, "Do you know why I like Javier?"

He was very angry because I said I like Javier.

"I don't want to know."

I laid on top of him and said, "Don't you think Javier is just like Leo?"

I knew I had the potential to be a bad woman, and I used it wisely.

I knew I didn't have any feelings for Leo anymore, all that was left were just some good memories.

But I can use him to trigger his brother. Lance Mason loves his brother so much that he chose to ignore that fact that I was with his brother once. But how could I let that happen?

If I really became a bad woman, I will need to thank Lance Mason for turning me into one.

He flipped us over and laid on top of me. He looked at me with hatred in his eyes. It was scary, like he was going to consume me whole.

He swung his hand up in the air.

"What? Are you going to slap me again? Do it then, you never hesitate to slap me when we were kids." I said.

I saw his hand hung in the air for a second and he placed his hand back down to his side.

He laughed at himself and said, "I know you don't want to be with me so you are trying to trigger me with these words. But if you really want to find someone who looks like Leo, who do you think look most like him, hmm? So, stop provoking me, Jennie. I don't know what I will do if you keep doing so. I can easily buy someone's life with money."

## Chapter 140

He caressed my face and kissed my forehead softly. With that, he laid down beside me and didn't speak again.

He was threatening me. He would hurt Javier if I kept triggering him.

I couldn't sleep all night because I was in the same bed with a devil.

I fell asleep when it was 4am in the morning.

Lance Mason had already got out of the bed when I woke up.

I saw women's clothes being laid beside the bed and there was also a pair of undergarments.

All of these clothes were branded and expensive. The clothes were familiar, maybe they were the ones he bought me when I was still his mistress.

My luggage wasn't with me so I couldn't change my clothes.

I had been gaining weight in the past one year. I was 165cm tall and my weight was above 45kg.

But all the fats had been going to my breasts, they became a cup bigger since I left here.

And my bra was too small for me, I needed to change another bra. I hadn't changed my clothes in 2 days.

I might be here for a long time so I couldn't just wear the same clothes. I had no choice but to put on the clothes Lance Mason laid beside for me.

When I walked down the stairs, I heard Lance Mason talking gibberish to the baby.

When he saw me, he smiled and said, "You're awake, have some breakfast."

It was early in the morning and I was starving to be honest.

I sat down and had my breakfast.

Lance walked to me with the baby in his arms, he sat in front of me.

He held Lexi's small hand and talked to her, "Lexi, ask your mother to eat more so that she can give you another brother to play with."

Lexi talked gibberish to him and her saliva was leaking from her mouth but Lance didn't mind at all and he used his hand to wipe it off.

I was speechless facing Lance Mason.

"I was almost 49 kilograms before I came back, and now I have been losing weight in the past few days."

I said ironically and lowered my head to keep eating.

"I hired a new chef, and the food is nice, you will gain your weight back in no time."

Lance said shamelessly.

I wiped my mouth after I finished the breakfast, I faced both of them and said, "Stop wasting time and let's go to the hospital to do the test. I don't like children to be honest, especially yours. I will take the



responsibility if I have any biological relationship with her.”

Lexi was standing on her feet on Lance’s lap and she had a fist full of his hair in her tiny hands. His facial expression didn’t look good and I knew it was not because of Lexi, it was because of what I said.

“You are just like your mother.’ Lance said sarcastically.

“You are wrong, I am not like her, I am the result of her and her client, and my father was not disgusted by me. He accepted me and mom but she didn’t appreciate it at all. And you are nothing like my father! You have never treated me well. All you have given me was pain and scars! She is the result of you raping me and couldn’t love her.”

I stood up and the chair was being knocked down to the floor. The sound of it scared the child and she started to cry loudly.

This is what would happen everyday if we live under the same roof.

## Chapter 141

The baby's face turned red because of crying and Annie rushed out, "Mr. Mason, Miss Lexi shouldn't be crying like this, she will suffocate easily."

She isn't a normal baby; she needs to be taken care carefully.

Annie carried the crying baby away.

Lance Mason glared at me and said, "She doesn't understand what you were saying but she is growing up now and she will soon understand what we are talking about. You are still her mother even though you don't want to admit."

He looked sad when he stood up and went upstairs.

I sat on the sofa in the living room and didn't know what to do. And suddenly I thought of Javier thinking he must have arrived in Munich. I needed to call him to make sure that he is safe.

What if Lance Mason did something to him?

I couldn't trust Lance Mason.

My phone was in my bag which was in the bedroom. I walked up the stairs and walked towards the direction of the bedroom. The door wasn't closed and I assumed that Lance Mason must be in his study room now.

When I walked in the bedroom, I saw him standing beside the bed pulling his pants up and shirtless. I remembered that he was more masculine back then, and now he was slimmer and his abs had disappeared.

Why can't he change in the closet?

Lance heard my movement so he turned around and looked at me. And then he continued to put on his clothes, he was wearing a dress shirt inside and a sweater outside, he looked young.

He is 9 years older than me; he should be 34 by now.

But he doesn't look like a man who is 34.

I ignored him and went to the nightstand to get my bag. I got my phone and was going to call Javier after I went out of the bedroom but my phone was out of battery.

I don't have a charger with me; it was in the luggage in the hotel.

I went downstairs to see if I could borrow a charger from one of the maids but there was no one to be seen.

Lance walked down and saw that I was holding my phone, "Run out of battery?"

I nodded and asked, "Can you help me to borrow a charger?"

Lance looked at my phone and said, "My phone is customized, change your phone and use mine."

"It's okay, the maids should have a charger, I will just borrow it from your maids." I said.

Lance looked at his watch and said, "They have gone out to play with Lexi."

"Shouldn't we go to the hospital to do the test?"

He let the maids bring the baby out. He didn't want to take the test obviously, maybe she really isn't my child.

"I have taken your hair and done the test; the result will be out soon."

"How do I know you won't lie to me?" I asked

Lance stared at me and said, "Can't you just try to like her a bit, Jennie? I don't have any reason to lie to you. The reason why I let you go one year ago was because I can't cut down all the rumours on the internet and Lexi was dying, I needed to focus on her, I had no time for other things. The time when I went to Munich wasn't a coincidence, I went to see you purposely because Lexi was having this big surgery and I was afraid and I needed to see you so that I will feel better. And when I saw you so happy with someone else, I thought of letting you go if Lexi died but I can't let you go now. I promised Lexi that I will give her a healthy family. Jennie, I don't mind if you don't love me but you can't choose to not love her, she needed to go through 5 surgeries at such a young age to survive until now. So, I beg you to treat her better."

He was begging me to treat his daughter better and I never thought he would do that ever. He begged me.....

Reward

400

Comments

2

## Chapter 142

"If you think I will lie to you, you can get your own blood and hair to be tested with Lexi's."

To be honest, I would be lying if I said I have no feelings at all for that little girl, I have no pictures of myself when I was the same age as her so I had no idea if she looks like me or not.

But she does look like me if I look closer. The timing was right too and she looks like Lance Mason. I have seen Lexi's medical record and there was her birth date and her blood type is RH blood, just like me and Lance. I couldn't deny straightaway that she isn't mine.

But the reason why I wanted to do a blood test was because I wanted evidence. An evidence that could force me to face my reality, to slap me awake.

I haven't logged in to my Facebook after all of the things that happened with Lance Mason.

I inserted my password and called Javier. Javier picked up and I was relieved to his voice knowing that he was safe. I quickly hung up without speaking any words to him because I was afraid that I would cry like a baby if I did.

I handed the phone to Lance and he asked me, "Why didn't you speak?"

"I heard his voice and I know he is safe, that's enough." I answered.

"That's enough?" he asked, seeming like he couldn't believe what I just said.

"Why? Do you want me to tell him that I am miserable here and ask him to come take me away from here?" I said sarcastically.

Lance knitted his eyebrows together and put his phone back to his pocket.

I walked to the front door and the guards were quick to block my way. Lance Mason was afraid that I would run away so he had guards at every door in this mansion.

"Let me out, Lance Mason, I want to get some fresh air. I won't run away."

I pushed open the door of his study room and saw that he was holding a pencil. He was so focused on the paper in his hand.

I walked closer and saw that he was drawing a little girl whose age was around 5 or 6 years old. His drawing is bad but I knew it was me.

He heard what I said just now but he didn't give any response. Maybe he just wanted me to see what he was drawing. He thought I would be touched by him drawing a younger me?

Didn't he know that all the memories back then are all bad memories. It will just make me remember how he treated me back then.

"I am talking to you, Lance Mason."

He didn't answer me, he just kept drawing. The little girl was

wearing a yellow dress and looked just like a little princess.

I walked towards him and said, "Princess dress?"

Lance nodded slowly.

"I have never worn a dress before." I said sarcastically.

Lance stopped his action for a few seconds and started to draw again, "I'm not drawing you; I am drawing my daughter."

My face turned red in a matter of seconds. Luckily, he wasn't looking at me otherwise he would have embarrassed me, again.

"Let your guard move so that I can go out for a bit, I won't run away."

Lance didn't answer, did he mean that I couldn't even go out of the front door?"

Just when I was about to throw a fit, he spoke, "I don't know how to draw shoes, help me draw one."

Looking at his drawing I knew that he just started to draw not long ago. It was a good drawing if the person who looks at it doesn't know anything about drawing. But for me, someone who knows art, this is a bad drawing. He asked me to help him draw shoes but I wanted to help him modify the whole drawing.

"I will let you out after you finish this."

He stood up and let me sit down.

## Chapter 143

I sat down and looked at all the drawing kits he had on the table. I used the eraser to erase his drawing.

"What are you doing? I have been drawing this for one hour."

I can use 10 minutes to draw something better than this.

"The ratio you drew is wrong, who has got arms like this? It's not a cartoon you are drawing. And the waist you draw, it's not realistic at all. Let alone the eyes and nose." I couldn't stop myself from complaining about his drawing.

"People major in different fields. Drawing is the only thing you are better at than me." He complained.

When I tilted my head up, I saw him smiling.

"You are right, I am only better in drawing and giving birth than you. Or else how would I become a juvenile? Oh, and I almost died when I tried to commit suicide, right?"

I looked at his face and he didn't look pleased.

I kept drawing and I wanted to modify the face so that it doesn't look just like me. I imagined the face of Lexi when she is 5 or 6 years old, and she looks very beautiful in my imagination.

Lance Mason is a very, very handsome man, otherwise Tiffany Able wouldn't want to kill me when she thought that I was going to steal her man.

I have always wanted a pink princess dress when I was young, every little girl would want that. I hope that Lexi gets her pink princess dress one day.

Lance Mason was mean but I couldn't deny that he treats Lexi very well.

She doesn't need a mother because her father treats her like she is his world.

Thinking about that, I looked at Lance and got even more confused.

What should I do with Lexi? Would I be able to give her a better life?

Would I be able to give a better life if I raise her alone?

"Why did you stop? What are you thinking?" Lance spoke from above my head and I was pulled back to reality. I started to draw again.

It didn't take me too much time to finish and I saw a happy little girl on the paper.

I coloured the dress with pink.

"Do you like pink too?"

He asked.

I didn't answer him and just kept colouring.

"I thought that you don't like pink. I gifted you a pink diamond necklace but you never wore it." He said.

I signed and wrote down the date after I finished drawing. It was a

habit of mine.

I stood up from the chair and said, "I'm done, ask your guard to move and let me out."

Lance picked the drawing up and looked at it for a while, "It looks good but this little girl will look prettier if you draw her like her mother, she doesn't look like you or me."

"I want to go out!"

Lance kept the drawing into his safe box carefully. He didn't cover up when he pressed the password. There were a few documents in it.

I memorized his password after that.

When Lance turned around, he saw that I was looking at his safe box.

## Chapter 144

"They are the important things to me. Just like the drawing you drew just now."

He smiled at me after he said that.

I quickly turned around and was about to leave the room but Lance grabbed my hands quickly and had me stuck between him and the wall.

"I don't mind exposing my weakness to you, Jennie. I am being truthful to you."

He tilted my chin up and said. He looked like he wasn't lying, he was sincere.

If I was just any woman that didn't hate Lance at all, I would have fallen in love with him. But I was not.

Just when I was about to push him off of me, he quickly pinned both of my wrists on the wall with his hands.

He smiled while he looked at my angry and nervous face. He lowered his head down slowly and bit on my lips.

"Part your lips."

I shut my mouth tightly not wanting to let his tongue in.

He quickly bites on my chin and I couldn't help but gasped. He took the opportunity to push his tongue in my mouth.

Cunning man.

He licked both my face after that like how a puppy would lick its owner. He licked my nose, eyes and neck.

If he let go of my wrists now, I would slap him without hesitation.

But he didn't look like he would stop any moment soon.

He pressed his forehead on mine and said softly, "You will be the princess if you want, Jennie. You know I can give you a lot of things. There will be no benefits for you to fight against me."

He was persuading and threatening me at the same time.

I looked right into his eyes and smiled, "You are right, there will be no good for me, but I don't want to be your princess. You have never thought about using money to persuade a woman to be with you, have you? Don't you think you are pathetic?"

"Why would I be sad? I have a daughter and the woman I like is right in front of me."

He could get everything he wanted but there was one thing he couldn't get, and that was my heart.

"Are you done? If yes, let go of my wrists now. You are hurting me. Didn't you say that you will treat me better? What are you doing now? You wouldn't care if I was hurt?"

"Why wouldn't I care? I care for you and Lexi the most in this world. I can let you go, but you can't slap me."

Lance knew what I was going to do.



I laughed sarcastically and said, "You know I wouldn't dare slap you."

Lance nodded and said, "Good. Don't trigger me now if you know what is the best for you. I would do anything if you triggered me, for example, kill Javier Santiago, or to dig out your parents' graves. I remembered there was one female friend or yours, right? All of them will be in the prison or die if I want them to. And don't think about killing yourself too, I would have killed some people to accompany you in hell. Don't even think about dragging me down, I am the reason why the economy of this city grows. If I go down, the GDP of this city will be dragged down together with me, there will be hundreds of thousands of people who will lose their job. And I have not committed any crime, I don't care if you have people to investigate my business!"

"Have not committed any crime? Isn't rape a crime?!"

I whispered into his ears.

I know he didn't like the word 'rape', because he didn't want to admit that he has raped me.

"Let me tell you what rape is."

He kissed my forehead after what he said.

Reward

400

Comments

2

## Chapter 145

"You sent me a message and asked me to go to the hotel room and you are the one who opened the door, let's not forget who was the one who hugged me so tight that I couldn't get out of the grip. The recording of the CCTV at the corridor of the hotel is still with me, if you still insist that I have committed a crime, I suggest you show the police the record."

He was still smiling when telling me all of this. He was just like a psychopath.

"You should see a psychologist, Lance."

He pulled my hand and pressed it to his chest, "Is possessive an illness too?"

"You can ask Leo about that." I said coldly.

He placed his finger on my lips and said, "Stop calling other man's name, even though he is my brother, I feel jealous, I will give you time to think about all of these but you know I am impatient, I have many ways to make your life a living hell, so, I suggest you be a good mother and my woman, understand?"

I knew he couldn't be nice to me forever.

And he was showing me the real side of him, he was still the Lance Mason who was mean and cruel.

He was just a devil.

"What will you do other than threatening me?" I said sarcastically.

He acted like he didn't hear what I just said. He roamed his big hand on my chest.

He started to message it forcefully and it hurt me.

He pulled the collar of my shirt down forcefully exposing my black bra.

"What do you want to do, Lance Mason." I knew clearly what he wanted.

He reached his hand behind me under my top and unclasped my bra. I felt more comfortable after he did so because the bra was too tight.

He gripped both my wrists tightly and pressed his long legs with mine and that made it hard for me to move.

"What do you think I am going to do? You are not an innocent girl anymore; you know clearly what I want." He smiled at me and said.

"Don't make me hate you, Lance Mason." I threatened him.

"You have always hated me, don't you? I wouldn't mind if you hate me more."

He carried me in bridal style and laid me down at his desk. He held both my wrists over my head.

He then stared right into eyes.

"I have many ways to have you under my control, Jennie."

With that, he pulled my bra out under my shirt and placed his mouth around my breast.

I curled my toes because of the pleasure I was feeling due to his actions.

He bit on my nipple gently while looking at me.

"Let me go, Lance Mason! What more will you do other than bully me with sex?!" I shouted at him.

He hung my bra on his computer shamelessly.

He licked my birthmark on my breasts and kept kissing it. He likes this birthmark so much.

He used to be like this before.

## Chapter 146

After a few minutes of kissing, he tilted his head up and stroked my hair softly, "You appeared into my dream when I was 18."

I didn't know what he was talking about.

"Let me go!" I struggled under him.

"I will never let you go anymore. If I know who you are earlier, we will be very happy now, unfortunately....."

I really didn't understand what he was talking about.

What did he mean by who I am? Didn't he always know who I am?

He lowered his head down and kissed my lips, "Do you have any idea how long you have been my dream woman? Other women couldn't turn me on like how you always do. It bothers me a lot. How should I punish you because of this?"

He reached his hand into my skirt and looked at me, "How about giving Lexi a little brother?"

His finger curled at the band of my panties.

"I will kill myself if you do this!"

"I told you I will kill the people you care in this world if you die."

Heartless man.

"But the only person I care about is your brother, I have loved him for 20 years now!"

His smiley face changed into an angry one.

"Stop trying to provoke me, the people you care about wouldn't be only Leo."

He pulled my panties off forcefully.

He looked right into my eyes and said, "I will forget everything about the past and accept what I can give if I am you."

With that, he used his belt to tie my wrists together with the table.

He stood up straight and looked down at me. He didn't give me any more time to protest and just slide into me.

It hurts a lot that I have to grit my teeth to endure the pain.

My tears started to roll down. I saw my reflection on the glass light on the ceiling, I saw myself lying on his desk nakedly.

He parted my legs wide and the devil just kept pushing into me forcefully.

I didn't know how long all of this went on, I just knew how many times he had cummed inside of me.

I laid on the desk and felt like all my energy had been used up.

He untied my wrists and made me turn around to lay on my stomach. Then, he came in from behind me.

And my consciousness slowly faded away.

I woke up because of hunger. I was lying on the bed in the bedroom

and I felt a hint of coolness between my legs.

I still felt the pain.

Recalling the incident in his study room made me regret walking into his study room.

I was being stupid to assume that he wouldn't touch me for a period of time.

But he still did.

I sat up on the bed and I saw a present box sitting on the nightstand with a letter under it.

## Chapter 147

'This is a gift for you, open it and see if you like it --- Brother.'

He gave a gift after he raped me. Wow, just wow.

I didn't open the present and I threw the present towards the wall.

And Lance came in, he saw the pink diamond necklace laid on the floor.

He looked at me coldly and squatted down to retrieve the necklace. He slowly approached the bed after that.

He looked like he was going to eat me raw.

He tilted my chin up and said, "You don't like it?"

I pushed his hand away and said, "Lance Mason you asshole, you will be punished one day for doing this! If you don't get the punishment, one day your child will!"

He grabbed a fistful of my hair and said, "You can curse me but you can't curse my child! She is your child too, how could you do this to her! I warn you for the one last time not to do things like this again, otherwise I will do something that would make you regret for the rest of your life!"

I glared at him angrily.

"You asshole!"

He slowly sat down on the bed and let go of my hair. He patted my face a few times and said, "Call me anything you want."

He helped me wear the necklace and threatened me, "Do not take this off, you know what I will do." The necklace laid coldly on my chest.

"You haven't been to the Mason's Company, right? I will bring you to the company after lunch, I will let you meet your old friend."

I pushed Lance away and pulled at the necklace forcefully, it left a red mark on my neck. I pulled the necklace off my neck and threw it onto the floor.

He looked at the necklace and said, "Seems like you don't like the necklace, if you don't like it, don't wear it then. I will bring you to the jewellery shop to choose the one you like next time."

With that, he stepped on the necklace forcefully like he was letting out his anger on it.

I thought he would be shouting at me, but he didn't.

I didn't want to go down so Lance Mason made the maid bring lunch into the room for me. But I didn't want to eat it, so Lance made Annie hold the tray of food and stood there waiting for me to take it.

Lance was using my kindness against me; he knew I wouldn't let old folks stand and wait for me the whole day.

The smell of food made me hungrier.

"Take it down, I will eat it downstairs."

Annie looked at me like I was unbelievable.

"Just take it down, I will be down there after I put on some clothes." I

said impatiently.

"Are you sure, Mrs. Mason?"

"Don't call me that, I am not Mrs. Mason." I yelled at the poor old woman.

"I am sorry, Mrs. Mason. But I am just a maid, I do things as I was told, all the maids in this mansion should call you Mrs. Mason, this is the order of Mr. Mason."

With that, Annie left with the food.

## Chapter 148

I gasped for air while sitting on the bed thinking about yelled at a poor old lady. She was right, she was just a maid.

She just did things as she was told.

Just when I opened the bedroom door, I heard Lance asking Annie, "Didn't she tell you she will come down? Why haven't she? Go and see if she was coming down."

Annie saw I was walking down the stairs, "There you are, Mrs. Mason."

Lance was holding the baby and sitting on the sofa. He got up from the sofa when he saw me.

"Come and eat something, I will bring you and Lexi out later."

I looked at the baby in his arms, she was smiling at me and she had grown some teeth.

Her health wasn't too good and her growth was a lot slower than normal baby.

I have been suspicious if he had just simply brought back a baby girl and told me that she is my baby because she looked so small.

"Lexi, calls mommy." Lance said.

"M-mmo-my." Lexi said.

Lance was very happy because that was her first word. "Jennie, Lexi is calling you mommy."

The baby kept smiling at me. I couldn't bring myself to hate an adorable baby. She reached her hands out for me.

Lance wanted to place the baby in my arm, I haven't held a baby before so I quickly stepped back.

The baby almost fell from Lance's arm and Lance was scared.

"What are you doing?! Do you want to harm her?!" he shouted at her.

"I....."

I wanted to explain myself, I didn't know what happened to me.

I froze in my spot and looked at my arms which were hanging in the air.

I didn't know why I stepped back.

The baby was scared and she started to ball her eyes out. Lance glared at me and walked away with the baby.

Annie then pulled me into the dining room to have lunch.

When Lance returned to the dining room again, the baby wasn't in his arm anymore. He had hired a lot of people to take care of Lexi.

Annie once told me that he will never let other people take care of Lexi if he was home.

Lance looked at my plate of food and said, "Eat more, didn't you use up all your energy this morning?"



I didn't give him any response.

"Oh yeah, I was the one who moved, you just laid there and enjoyed it, right?"

He said I was enjoying it? Was he kidding me?

After lunch, Lance wanted to bring me out for shopping, and I didn't reject. I needed to go out and buy contraceptive pills anyway. I didn't want to get pregnant.

I can't have another baby with Lance anymore.

I sat in the passenger seat while Lance was driving. There was another car following us, they were his bodyguards.

Lance had never been so careful before.

He must have pissed a lot of people off. How would I be able to buy the pills if so many guards were following us?

## Chapter 149

I have been to the Mason's Company main branch, but I was always just crossing by or stopped in front of the entrance, I never went in.

This was my first time entering such a fancy building, it was enormous. It is also the landmark building in Denmark. The space this building took up is really huge.

There is 88 floors in this building, the 20th to 60th floors are office. The Mason's group only used up the 20th and 30th floor, the rest are all other companies who invested in the Mason's or work with them. The 60th floor and above are all fine-dining restaurants, staff's canteen, VIP guest rooms, hotel rooms for VIPs and such.

Below the 20th floor were all famous restaurants and a luxurious shopping mall. This whole building is completely owned by the Mason's. It is their private property.

But in other words, it is Lance Mason's private property. Although Leo is also one of the shareholder, but the majority of the Mason's inheritance, wealth and properties are all under Lance.

Leo Mason never had any intentions for this sort of business.

There is a private entrance and elevator for the staff of the Mason's. there isn't any elevator privately just for Lance, he uses the elevator just like the rest of his staffs.

His office is on the 19th floor. It was during business hours when we arrived, so there wasn't any people using the lift. It was only me and Lance.

He held my hands and led me out of the lift, "I've been wanting to bring you around, to visit my kingdom."

Lance spoke with confidence, yes, he's always been very successful, I've never deny this fact. The Mason's wasn't a famous or successful business when it was still under his father's hands. But it grew into a very powerful and rich company in just a few years after Lance took over. He even started to increase more area of business such as IT and construction.

Since then, Lance became the most famous person in the industry. He was like a prodigy in business!

"My reputation is already so messed up, following you here just proves that I was really your mistress." I said coldly.

His grip on my hand tightened. "Don't worry, nobody hear dares to speak of you, plus, just know that your are not a mistress in my heart, don't care about what people say, right?"

I shrugged my hands off and said, "Of course you don't care, because the one always getting hurt is me, not you."

With a serious voice, Lance promised me, "I will never let you get hurt anymore."

"I'm hurting now." I said. Lance was such a fake person, he knew I

was suffering in his hands, yet he could still make a promise like that.

"You're just trying to make it hard for me, but I don't mind." Lance was acting all gentleman in his building.

On the way to his office, we saw the manager. I knew this guy, he was scouted by Lance from another huge foreign company, he's a genius in IT. His name is Ivan.

Ivan saw Lance and nodded at him. "Hi sir, Mr Sands is here in the meeting office, I'm just about to go see him, do you want to join?"

Lance glanced at me and said, "You go ahead, I'll be there later."

Was this Mr Sands the one living in the same residency as Lance, or was this Niklaus Sands?

"You didn't just bring me here to look around right?"

Lance grabbed both my shoulder and said, "I need to look over some documents, I'll have someone bring you around the malls. You're the lady boss here, you need to know more about your properties." Then, he kissed my cheeks.

I wiped my face with disgust and said, "I'll go myself, go do your thing."

"Sure, after I'm done I'll bring you to the clothing store down there, I'll buy you some clothes."

I nodded, "Okay."

## Chapter 150

The entrance from the offices to the mall is very obvious and it would be impossible not to let the guards see me. Plus the malls wouldn't have a pharmacy.

Just when I was lost, I saw a janitor entering the washroom.

I suddenly had an idea and followed her in.

I stood in front of her and asked awkwardly, "Hi, I'm sorry to be bothering you but can you do me a favour?"

The lady was around 50, she looked at me carefully and asked, "How can I help you?"

I quickly took out a hundred dollars from my purse and handed it to her, "Can you help me..... buy some pills from the pharmacy out there? The money here is for the pills, you can keep the change, deal?"

The old lady immediately smiled and asked me nicely, "Young lady, what kind of pills?"

I put the money in her hands and blushed, "Can you help me get a long-term contraceptive pills?"

The old lady gave me a weird look, she must have thought that I was the type of girl who simply climb into someone else's bed.

But because I gave her extra money, she still agreed to help me. I told her to meet me in the bathroom once she got it.

Once the old lady left, I left the bathroom too. I was afraid that Lance would have installed a CCTV outside of the bathroom. What if he got suspicious of why I was inside so long?

I walked around aimlessly in the huge building and went back to the bathroom after a while. The old lady must be back.

The old lady came back after a few minutes and handed me the pills.

She even said, "These pills are bad for your body, try to not depend on these too much. Ask your man to use a condom."

I smiled bitterly at her.

I quickly swallowed the pills and tore the packaging of the pills off. Then I put the pills back into my purse.

I felt much more relieved after taking the pills.

I got out of the bathroom. Just when I was about to head to Lance's office, I walked pass his assistance's office. I heard both of them talking about me.

"Wow, I didn't expect her to really become his soon-to-be wife. What do you say, is boss really going marry her?"

"Not sure, but I did saw a photo of boss carrying a child in the hospital, must be her child. Was she planning to use the child to get money? Shame!" another one said.

Lance is a very good-looking man, so there's no wonder he had so

many fans.

He had an affair but all his fans were scolding the mistress, not him for being a f\*ckboy.

Unbelievable.

"I think the child is a daughter, from the photo it was kind of obvious. Although it was a back photo, but the child was wearing pink outfit." The assistant said.

I went to his office and sat on his sofa. His laptop was closed, and I also didn't need to check to know that he has a CCTV in his office.

No matter how much I wanted to look at his files, I controlled myself in the end.

I knew very well what would happen if I didn't contain myself.

When he came back to his office, I was nearly asleep on his desk.

He came and patted on my head. "Are you tired? Sorry I took so long."

I got up and shook my head, "I'm fine, you done?"

He lowered down his head and kissed my lips. "It's hard to be done with work, I used to want to work all day all long, but now I understand. Work will never be finished, I want to spend more time on you and our child."

With that, he carried me up and placed me on top of his desk. He then raised my chin and wanted to kiss me.

I pushed his chest and ask angrily, "What the hell? Are you going to have sex in front of the guards?"

I knew very well there is a CCTV room where a guard would be checking the screens.

Lance didn't want my rejection and said, "Don't worry, the CCTV is outside of my office, there's none inside. I just want to kiss you that's all, you're too gorgeous. I can't wait, give me kisses."

But I couldn't believe his words, how could his office not have a CCTV?

"You're such a rich and powerful boss, aren't you afraid that someone might come in and steal your private documents?" I asked.

He scoffed, "Nobody has the guts to do it yet, because they won't be able to face the consequences."

## Chapter 151

And with that, he pushed me onto my back and came on top of me. He pulled my collar and gave me wet kisses all around my neck.

My eyes were looking around, if there really wasn't a CCTV, it would be a good opportunity just now!

But I missed it, but I guess I would have a lot of opportunities to come over right? But if he ever loses anything, he would suspect me immediately.

Because only I was brave enough to go against him.

His kisses came to my eyelids and he asked, "Looking around to frantically huh, are you plotting something?"

I pushed him away and sat up, "What am I to you? You think you can just do this to me whenever and wherever you want?"

The corner of Lance's lips went up. "Well, I treat you as MY woman!"

He carried me away from the desk and sat down, then he pulled me onto his lap.

"Jennie, let me show you something."

He switched on his laptop. His wallpaper was me in my high school uniform. But I rarely take photos of myself.....

"How did you get this photo?" I asked. I remembered that I gave this to Leo Mason.

He pinched my face and stared at me, "You wanna know where I got it?"

"Your dear brother gave it to you?" I scoffed.

He shook his head and smiled, "You won't even believe me if I tell you. I got this photo 3 years ago from the dustbin at home. It must be when Leo threw it out as trash when he was cleaning his room. When I saw it, I picked it up and treated it like a treasure."

It was obvious Lance told me this to let me know that I was the trash that Leo abandoned, and he, Lance Mason, look at me like I'm his treasure. He was telling me to be grateful.

It was exactly 3 years ago when I fought with Leo very hard, he told me at that time that I'm disgusting to him.

So, he threw my photo away like nothing. Although I didn't love him anymore, but it still hurt. I didn't know why but it did.

"You were so beautiful in the photo. I even had one framed in the mansion in England. Jennie, can you smile one for me? Like in the photo, I wanna see."

Like he asked, I did, but my smile was cold and pretentious.

My smile was cold.....

Lance's face turned ugly and he said, "Forget about it, uglier than when you cry."

We shifted our attention back to the screen again. He clicked into a

file. There were a few photos in it. Lance clicked open the photos and they were all photos of wedding dresses.

Wait, was he really planning to marry me?

"Which one do you like? Choose one and I'll have someone custom made for you. We are getting married on Valentine's Day."

His tone was more like informing me, not asking me.

It was December, so there would only be around 1 month plus until the date he said.

"Are you serious?" I asked.

He nodded sternly. "I'm very serious. I wanted to marry you like now, but your mom just passed away, so I had to wait." He was planning everything himself.

"Ha.....didn't you say I shouldn't even think about using a child to try to marry you or get money? Then what is this?" I remembered when Lance warned me last time.

Lance faked a few coughs and said, "What are you saying? I need a son as an heir, you should work harder for a son now, don't speak nonsense."

He must be scared that I thought he was the type that only likes sons instead of daughters and quickly added, "I like daughters too, especially when they look so much like you, but Lexi is not strong. I'm getting old, no one can protect her. The business is huge, it would take a toll on her body. I just want her to be happy and live a normal life, a son would be more suitable to take over the family business."

Lance bit my earlobe, like he was seducing me.

I recalled that an hour ago I just took the pills. And here he was trying for a son, how funny.

## Chapter 152

While softly biting my earlobe, his hands started to roam into my shirt. He pinched my sensitive spot.

I've never really been touched by any man at all, his touch was teasing me, although it really felt good, but I was disgusted by him.

I stopped his hands and yelled, "Lance Mason, if you behave like that, I won't be able to control my hands." And with that, I slapped him hard across his face.

It was a hard slap, his head turned to the other side due to the impact. It felt good.

I got out from his embrace, he glared daggers at me.

I didn't care, and I wasn't even afraid of him too. I adjusted my bra properly.

"JENNIE GOMEZ!" he growled. His voice wasn't loud, but it was filled with anger.

I glared back and said, "What? Hurt your little pride and ego? Haha..... when you treat me like a whore, why didn't you think about me?"

He suddenly reached out his hands and pulled my hair. He pressed me on the table, my back facing him, bent down.

My face was pressed against the cold surface of the desk, and my pants were already at my ankles.

Apart from bullying me sexually, what else did he know?

Suddenly, I felt pain shot through me, ripping me apart. I gritted my teeth, tears forming in my eyes.

My hands balled into fists. He was pounding into me like an animal, while one of his hands pulled my hair so that I could see him from the side of my eyes. He stared right into my eyes, there was anger and arrogance in his eyes. "Why aren't you obeying me? I have been well to you? What the hell do you want? Why don't you know how to be grateful?" he started to yell at me.

I stared back at him with empty eyes, I was like a dead fish.

I didn't even know when he finished pounding me. I just knew, when he stopped, I was like a ragged doll, out of energy. I fell to the ground, feeling the sticky cum on my inner thighs.

He used a tissue paper to clean his d\*ck and buckled his pants and belt up. Then he looked at me from above.

I was on the ground, half naked.

After so long, when everything had changed, the only thing that didn't change was the fact that he would also be the one bullying me.

He bent down and raised my chin with his fingers, "This is your punishment for not obeying me. Smart women know what to do and say. How did it feel just now? Painful? Humiliating? You brought this to yourself."



And with that, he left his office, he even locked the door from outside. I knew he was gone, my tears rolled down, I wanted to cry. But crying is for the weak. I put my hands over my mouth and stopped myself from crying.

After lying on the ground for a long time, I got up. My body wasn't as painful as just now anymore. I wiped my private area with a tissue and wore my pants. Thinking about what happened just now made me so mad.

I took my pills and swallowed one again, I didn't care if I already ate one that day. He was so wild just now, I needed to be careful.

I leaned against his desk, feeling the sore ness down there. He humiliated me twice in a day.

I didn't know how long I was going to endure this. If I don't obey him, this would be my punishment.

I suddenly recalled that Lance said he love me, funny, was this his definition of loving me? What a joke.

My heart skipped a beat when the door opened suddenly, it was Leo, not Lance.

After that I only realized that the door is password protected, Leo could come in whenever h wants.

I looked at him and laughed coldly. Sometimes I wondered if he was the one who actually threw me into this bullshit.

Leo was confused why I was on the ground and knitted his eyebrows. The office reeked of the smell of Lance's cum and our sweat, Leo must have noticed.

He came to me and asked, "What are you doing on the floor?" he knew it yet he still asked.

I looked up at him, my tears rolled down finally. "Brother!" I called out softly.

Leo looked behind him, was he afraid that his brother would barge in?

He squatted down and stared at me, "What..... what happened?"

## Chapter 152

While softly biting my earlobe, his hands started to roam into my shirt. He pinched my sensitive spot.

I've never really been touched by any man at all, his touch was teasing me, although it really felt good, but I was disgusted by him.

I stopped his hands and yelled, "Lance Mason, if you behave like that, I won't be able to control my hands." And with that, I slapped him hard across his face.

It was a hard slap, his head turned to the other side due to the impact. It felt good.

I got out from his embrace, he glared daggers at me.

I didn't care, and I wasn't even afraid of him too. I adjusted my bra properly.

"JENNIE GOMEZ!" he growled. His voice wasn't loud, but it was filled with anger.

I glared back and said, "What? Hurt your little pride and ego? Haha..... when you treat me like a whore, why didn't you think about me?"

He suddenly reached out his hands and pulled my hair. He pressed me on the table, my back facing him, bent down.

My face was pressed against the cold surface of the desk, and my pants were already at my ankles.

Apart from bullying me sexually, what else did he know?

Suddenly, I felt pain shot through me, ripping me apart. I gritted my teeth, tears forming in my eyes.

My hands balled into fists. He was pounding into me like an animal, while one of his hands pulled my hair so that I could see him from the side of my eyes. He stared right into my eyes, there was anger and arrogance in his eyes. "Why aren't you obeying me? I have been well to you? What the hell do you want? Why don't you know how to be grateful?" he started to yell at me.

I stared back at him with empty eyes, I was like a dead fish.

I didn't even know when he finished pounding me. I just knew, when he stopped, I was like a ragged doll, out of energy. I fell to the ground, feeling the sticky cum on my inner thighs.

He used a tissue paper to clean his d\*ck and buckled his pants and belt up. Then he looked at me from above.

I was on the ground, half naked.

After so long, when everything had changed, the only thing that didn't change was the fact that he would also be the one bullying me.

He bent down and raised my chin with his fingers, "This is your punishment for not obeying me. Smart women know what to do and say. How did it feel just now? Painful? Humiliating? You brought this to yourself."

And with that, he left his office, he even locked the door from outside. I knew he was gone, my tears rolled down, I wanted to cry. But crying is for the weak. I put my hands over my mouth and stopped myself from crying.

After lying on the ground for a long time, I got up. My body wasn't as painful as just now anymore. I wiped my private area with a tissue and wore my pants. Thinking about what happened just now made me so mad.

I took my pills and swallowed one again, I didn't care if I already ate one that day. He was so wild just now, I needed to be careful.

I leaned against his desk, feeling the sore ness down there. He humiliated me twice in a day.

I didn't know how long I was going to endure this. If I don't obey him, this would be my punishment.

I suddenly recalled that Lance said he love me, funny, was this his definition of loving me? What a joke.

My heart skipped a beat when the door opened suddenly, it was Leo, not Lance.

After that I only realized that the door is password protected, Leo could come in whenever h wants.

I looked at him and laughed coldly. Sometimes I wondered if he was the one who actually threw me into this bullshit.

Leo was confused why I was on the ground and knitted his eyebrows. The office reeked of the smell of Lance's cum and our sweat, Leo must have noticed.

He came to me and asked, "What are you doing on the floor?" he knew it yet he still asked.

I looked up at him, my tears rolled down finally. "Brother!" I called out softly.

Leo looked behind him, was he afraid that his brother would barge in?

He squatted down and stared at me, "What..... what happened?"

## Chapter 153

I suddenly started bawling my eyes out. I jumped into his embrace and hugged him tightly, "Brother, can you bring me away? Please save me, he's an animal! I will die if this goes on!"

I could see the struggle on his face, he was struggling hard.

I put my hands on his chest area and touched him softly there, "Brother, I don't care if you don't have feelings for me anymore, but we used to be in love, are you really going to let me stay in this pile of shit?"

My tears were wetting his clothes.

Leo reached his hands many times, like he wanted to comfort me, but he didn't.

Haha.....

I knew it, I knew what I meant to him, nothing. To him, his brother is more important.

"Jennie..... brother really likes you a lot, and you even have children together. Be smart and don go against him anymore, he will treat you better, trust me!"

I knew this would happen, but I still didn't want him to leave me here!

I pushed him away, and I pulled up my shirt like a mad woman, revealing my skin.

Leo pressed my hands down, "Jennie, stop! You are brother's woman! You shouldn't do this!"

I cut him off by yelling at his face, "Look at me! Your f\*cking brother did this to me! He raped me again and again, you thought I really wanted to be with him? I was f\*cking forced to be with him!"

My tears were like waterfall at this point, they blurred my vision. "I didn't only dream once for you to save me like a knight in shiny armour, I have waited for so long, but you never came! Why? Do I have to get bullied just because I'm not from a powerful family?!"

I was crying like hell.

Leo came and adjusted my clothes properly. Lance abused me sexually many times today, so there were bruises and scars all over my skin.

Leo squatted in front of me, watching me cry.

He wanted to speak many times, but in the end, he still didn't say anything.

I cried like a cow, and I guessed Leo couldn't stand it anymore and handed me a few tissues. "Stop crying, you were the one who told me brother could give you anything you wanted when I saw you last time, why are you crying now?"

"I was forced, I am still forced by him! You knew, you knew it! Why are you acting like you don't know? Have you really forgotten everything between us?" I yelled, crying still.

He looked at me, speechless. "Jennie, sometimes I really can't understand you. I can't guess what your mind is thinking, and I don't want to guess too."

What do I want? To leave Lance, I never want to see him ever again.

I want a simple life, I want a peaceful life, just like that. Leo said he didn't know what I wanted, but did he really not know? Or did he pretended to not know?

I climbed up from the floor, my knees gave out and I fell into Leo's arms.

Leo caught me out of instinct. I wanted to push him away, but the door was suddenly pushed open.

It was opened very softly, I have been watching the door, but Leo wasn't.

I tipped my toes and gave Leo a puppy face, "Brother, can you hold me in your arms for a while? Just like last time, I'm tired. I'm sick of this."

Leo seemed to be lost in my semi-seduction, he hugged me back on my waist, I raised my head towards him, while he lowered his head towards me.....

Lance came in and saw us like this, as if we were going to kiss.

From the corner of my eyes, I saw Lance rushing towards us angrily.

The next thing I knew, I was ripped apart from Leo's arms.

He separated us from each other.

I could see the anger in his face, but he didn't yell or shout. He just ripped us apart and stood there, glaring at us. Of course, Leo is his brother, he wouldn't do anything to him.

We just stood there, glaring at each other.

Hi dear readers! Sorry for the wait! I have been trying hard to make sure I update the story everyday for all of you! To answer some of your question, I really don't know when I will finish the book, I want to show the development of the main characters, so that all of you know them deeply. This is a story that contains sadness, love, happiness, anger, hope..... I hope all of you love the book!

## Chapter 154

The cries of the baby was heard by the man in the room, Lance opened the door and saw me standing outside, carrying the child. "I never knew you have a habit of eavesdropping. Seems like in this one year of not seeing you, you changed a lot."

With the baby in my arms, I turned around and walked away. I didn't feel like talking to him. He grabbed my wrists, not letting me go. The child saw him and stirred in my arms, she must have wanted her father to hold her. I had no choice but to let him hold her. Lance carried the baby from my arms and patted her softly in his arms.

He let go of me once he held the baby. I quickly went downstairs and he followed behind me.

"Serve the dinner." Lance said to the butler.

The maids started to serve the dishes on the dining table. Lance turned to me and said, "It's late, let's have dinner first, I'll bring you out for shopping later."

My body was still hurting, so I didn't even feel like going out!

His attitude to Leo this morning..... there's a lot for me to think about.

"I'm not feeling well, if you want to go out, you go alone!" I said.

After dinner, I took a bath. My area was so painful that I couldn't even touch it.

When I got out of the bathroom, Lance came into my room and asked, "Are you sure you don't want to go out? I thought all girls like shopping."

I was actually quite impressed with him, he could act like nothing happened after what he's done to me!

We were still fighting like there was no tomorrow this morning, and now he was acting all sweet and nice, asking me if I wanted to go out? I really didn't understand how he could do this!

"I'm tired, I want to sleep!" my tone was cold, Lance wasn't happy with it. He walked towards me and grabbed my waist, "Why aren't you a good girl anymore? Seems like your punishment wasn't enough!"

I knitted my eyebrows and glared at him, "I'm tired right now, my body isn't feeling well, I don't want to go out. If you think this is the definition of not being a good girl, sure, alright. Fine, give me a few minutes to change. I'll go out."

And with that, I pushed his hands away from my waist and turned around to the closet. I changed into a casual outfit with my sneakers and came out. Lance observed me and said, "You're still as beautiful and young as ever, after all these years!"

I wasn't sure what was wrong with him, he suddenly complimented me. But I was never happy when he praised me, no matter if he rarely does, because whenever he did so, all I felt was disgust.

He walked beside me and held my hands. This time, he drove the car himself, and I sat beside him. His guards were following us at the back. But what's the point of living such a rich and good life when all you do everyday is worry if someone is going to harm you.

To m, bringing the guards along feels very restricted. Not everyone can accept this kind of lifestyle.

So, I knew it from the start that me and him were not meant to be.

Lance opened the window while driving, the wind was chilly. I must have gotten sick because I caught a cold after this.

I was sick yet I still had to satisfy Lance.

He parked his car at the VIP parking spot of the shopping mall and pulled me down from the car, he held my hand. Every step I took hurt my body like hell. It was like a burning, sore sensation.

"Let's go to the baby's section to buy Lexi some stuff."

Lance didn't treat me well, but he treats my daughter very well. Everytime when he hadn't seen Lexi for a few hours, he started to nag.

He pulled me up to the baby's section. The stuff sold here are all international brands, Lance started to shop around seriously, he even asked me for opinions.

He saw a hat that is really cute, but he didn't like that it was red so he asked if there was white or pink ones.

I thought Lance must like princesses a lot, he likes it when I wear pink or white, and now he's asking for pink and white for his daughter.

The staff said there wasn't any, so Lance took out his phone and snapped a photo. He then send it to someone, asking the person to custom make it for his baby Lex.

Lance still purchased the red hat, he put it on me and said, "Cute!"

I took the hat off and looked at it, "Yeah, it's cute." I agreed.

## Chapter 155

Lance is really nice and generous to his daughter. He spoiled her like a princess. The butler told me he even has a room at home where it's full of Lexi's toys. She was still very young at this age, and would only eat and sleep, but he still bought a room full of toys for her.

I admit, he would make a great father, but not a great husband.

He heard me agreeing with him and smiled. He touched my face, "Jennie, isn't it nice like this, now? Shopping together, buying our daughter stuff, isn't this the life you want? You don't have to worry about anything, just take care of me and our daughter. We will live a good life, I won't be fierce to you if you just be nice."

I gripped the hat tightly in my hands, recalling what just happened in the day. Did Lance have a memory of a fish? How could he have forgotten what happened?

"The shoe is not bad, let's have a look" I tried to change the topic. The shoe was a little too big, but I wondered if Lexi could wear it, since kids grow up quickly.

Lance didn't hear the answer he was hoping from me and looked disappointed. "Let's buy it then." He then asked me if I brought money, and I said yes.

"Buy it for Lexi then, you never bought anything for her as her mom." The shoe was nearly a thousand dollars, to him it must be cheap.

Although Lexi is Lance's daughter, but I gave birth to her. As her mom, I should really buy her something.

I took out my card and purchased the shoes. I have never bought anything so expensive even for myself.

After that, Lance brought me to a clothing store. He saw a mother-daughter outfit and was excited. "You and Lexi never took any photos together. As her mom, taking a photo with her is not too much to ask from you, right?"

I nodded. "Yeah, no problem!"

He pointed at the outfits and said, "Buy this set of outfits, wear it with baby Lexi to take a photo okay?" I didn't even need to look at the price tag to know the price. It was a branded clothing store, the clothes are mostly over a thousand dollars per full set.

It's not that I didn't want to be a good mom, but I just felt that there was no need to dress a child in such expensive clothes.

Lance saw my unwillingness and insulted me, "Are you any different from your mother? Why aren't you willing to spend on your child?!"

Well, I wasn't the type to take an insult easily and he provoked me, so I paid with my card again.

Lance then told me Lexi's milk powder was going to finish soon. He said I never even fed Lexi with breast milk, so I need to at least buy her milk powder. The milk powder brand Lexi drank was also of imported, so



it was very expensive.

I even bought some toys for her, all using my money. Until the end of our shopping, all that was left in my card was a hundred dollars.

After a long time only did I realized that it was Lance's plan all along. He wanted me to finish using my own money and kept using Lexi as an excuse, so that I wouldn't have enough money to buy a flight ticket out of here.

Why was he so childish? He thought he could keep me under his control like that?

He saw my balance in the card and smiled happily. The guards helped us carry the bags and he brought me to the women's section.

"We're getting married soon, we need a lot of stuff, especially nice clothes for you. As my wife, you shouldn't dress in too plain." Lance said while putting up the dresses and shirts in front of me, seeing if they were suitable. The one he find nice, he made the staff put into bags for him and paid with his black card. He was the one doing all the shopping, I didn't do anything during the whole time.

It was when the mall announced that they were closing that we left.

In the car, Lance asked, "Are you okay with the wedding date? The venue? If you don't like anything, just tell me and I'll arrange." I was more curious about his family's opinion on him marrying me,

"I remember that your father and grandma hate me, how do they look at this wedding?"

He opened his bottle of mineral water and took a sip. "I don't care if they like you or not, as long as I like you. I'm the master of the family, so they can't make me do anything. everybody listen to me, including you, understand?" and he patted me face afterwards.

"Why is your face burning up?" he asked, looking concerned.

I pushed his hands away and said, "Fever, I guess."

He then touched my forehead, "Why didn't you say so? I'm sending you to the hospital now."

## Chapter 156

He looked like he was sincere and not faking it, but no matter what, it didn't mean anything to me.

He brought me to the hospital. I heard him calling someone and telling that person to send me the best doctor available.

How nice it is for the wealthy, they can settle anything with just a phone call.

I was very weak right now, Lance was holding onto me by my waist. I could feel myself slipping into darkness.

"Get me gynaecologist!" I said to Lance.

Lance furrowed his brows and asked, "Aren't you having a fever?"

I'm a woman and I got fever out of nowhere, so I kinda already knew what's wrong with me.

"Thanks to you, I think I have an inflammation and infection down there, that's why it triggered the body response and I got fever." I said, Lance's face turned ugly. "Your down there is painful?"

I wanted to ask him if he was actually kidding me? Who wouldn't hurt down there after getting pounded by a thick and long d\*ck?

"Very, very painful, I have been trying to bear with it. Lance Mason, you succeed in hurting me once again with your punishment, happy now? Every step I take nearly killed me." I saw the look on his face, the hurt, the pain.....It didn't look like he was faking it.

"Why didn't you tell me? I didn't want to force you, but you were acting to goddamn tough!"

He carried me bridal style into the gynaecologist office and made a phone call. In a matter of minutes, a middle-aged woman came in.

She asked, "Who is Lance Mason?"

Lance stood up and said, "I am."

The doctor was a bit burred and asked, "A man?"

Didn't she see me beside him? "My wife." Lance Mason said.

The doctor checked my body and asked, "Where are you feeling pain?"

I blushed and answered her awkwardly, "Um, my vagina, it's burning and sore."

The doctor looked at me then at Lance, she seemed to understand what happened. '

"Follow me, I need to do a further check-up." When I stood up to follow her, Lance spoke.

"She needs to take off her pants? And check, like, down there?" Lance was pulling my hands, not letting me in. He looked like a jealous little boy.

The doctor was speechless. "If you don't let me check her up, how would I diagnose her?"

I shrugged his hands away and said, "Don't worry, he's crazy, I'll follow you in."

No matter how Lance was unwilling to let anyone see my private part, I still had no choice. Thankfully, it was a female doctor that checked me up. If it was a male doctor, Lance would have started a fist fight.

I actually didn't want to see the gynaecologist. When I was still Lance's mistress, I was the regular client here. Opening my legs widely for someone to check, it was quite embarrassing to me.

The doctor checked and I saw her pursing her lips into a thin line, she didn't seem happy. "Why is your labia so torn? Did you have intercourse before you recovered? I know the younger generation is more needy in this area, but please take care of yourself. A lot of women got uterine cancer due to reasons like this." I was quite scared.

"Is it serious?" I asked. She rolled her eyes, she must have thought that I'm a sex addict.

"No sex for a month, and you need dripping to get rid of the inflammation. You also need external medications. Your wounds are getting infection, do you think it's serious enough?" she asked, her tone unfriendly.

Lance rushed in once the doctor left. I was still on the bed, he wanted to carry me down but I spoke in an extremely unfriendly tone, "Can you not touch me? I'm already like this."

"Sorry, I just wanted to carry you down." His voice was weak, he must heard what the doctor said just now.

I put on my pants properly and said, "I've heard too many sorry from you since I came back." I said.

His hands balled into fists. "I didn't want to treat you like this, but you just wouldn't stop provoking me. If you be nice to me, I wouldn't even treat you this way!"

What the hell, did he think this was a valid reason or excuse for treating me like a sex slave?

"Don't make up excuses for not loving and caring for your own wife. Men are always finding excuses when they hurt their woman. Don't wait until your wife gets cancer and regret by then? Do you think your sorry would be any useful when that happens?" The doctor's words sounded from behind us. Women will always understand this.

When Lance heard cancer, his face turned really ugly.

## Chapter 157

I was using an intravenous drip when Lance Mason went out, I didn't know where he went.

Maybe he went to find the doctor to ask about my condition or maybe he went out to smoke.

He came back with a strong smell of cigarettes after a few minutes.

He sat down on the bed beside me, looking at me. He looked like he wanted to say something but didn't know how to say it to me.

He just kept staring at me.

He spoke after a few seconds, "Don't worry, I asked the doctor about your condition. Cervical cancer mostly happens to girls who started their sex life very early and have a lot of sex partner. You have only slept with me and that was when you were 23, not so young anymore, plus I haven't slept with another woman for many years before you. I will be more careful in the future; I won't let you get hurt anymore."

He said that he hasn't slept with another woman for many years before he slept with me and I didn't know if that was true. I have never seen any other woman around him back then, I only knew he had a fiancé.

Lance Mason looked at me with guilt in his eyes and his hands were balled into fists.

Maybe he did go out to find the doctor and asked about my condition. Maybe this way, he wouldn't feel like he has hurt me and even thought that all of this was just him not being gentle enough to me.

Maybe he would feel better after doing so. Perhaps, this was his way of convincing himself.

"How do you know if I have only one sex partner?"

I smiled ironically at him. What he said is true, I have only had sex with him and no other man. I said that purposely to disgust him.

"What do you mean?" He was angry.

I looked at him for a second and said, "You are clever, don't you understand what I just said?"

He reached out his hand and pinched my chin with his long fingers, "I dare you to say that one more time."

His movement was not gentle at all. He touched my hand that was receiving the intravenous drip and the needle was being moved by his movement.

The back of my hand became swollen and that hurt me a lot. Lance Mason didn't see what he had done to me, once again.....

He was still pinching my chin and asked me if I was being honest.

"I will tell you the same thing no matter how many times you ask me. Who am I to you? And who do you think you are! Why would I be loyal to you?"

I thought that Lance was being stupid to think that I would be loyal

for him.

Pathetic.

He looked very angry about what I said.

"Oh yeah, remember to do a DNA test for you and Lexi too, because I am not sure if you are her father. Do you really think I have only slept with you?"

What I meant was, I would not be loyal to Lance Mason.

I would say anything to make Lance Mason upset and angry.

He moved his hand down to my neck and said, "Do you think I wouldn't kill you?!"

He added more force to his grip on my neck and I was starting to feel suffocating but I still laughed.

His grip on my neck was getting tighter and I just closed my eyes and waited for him to choke me to death.

Just when I thought that I was going to die due to lack of oxygen, he let go of my neck and looked at me like he was in pain, "Why do you have to do this to me? Why do you have to be like this after I started to treat you better and decided to not hurt you anymore? What do you really want, Jennie Gomez? Do you really want me to lose control and choke you until you die?"

## Chapter 158

I pulled the needle out of the back of my hand and it started to bleed.

I gasped for air and said, "You either let me go or you kill me. Or we keep doing this, hurting each other. I won't forgive you and forget about the past." I said angrily.

Lance Mason got up from the bed and walked out the room. I knew he didn't want all three of the options I gave, he just wanted to run away from his problem and tell himself that he still could live normally with me, he just kept telling himself that I would forgive him if he started to treat me better.

The only problem was, was he treating me better?

He would start to act like the old him whenever I triggered him. He would start to hurt me.

I pressed the bell on the wall and a nurse came in.

She looked at my swollen hand and the blood on it, she said, "Your husband looks nice, I didn't expect he would do this to you. You should ask for some help."

The nurse was so kind.

I smiled bitterly and shook my head, "No one could help me. Can you please help me put the needle back in again? Thank you."

The nurse put a new needle into the back of my hand and sighed, "We women are always the weak ones, we should think wisely when choosing a husband."

I smiled slightly and said, "Yeah, you are right."

I didn't explain to anyone about my complicated relationship with Lance Mason. I didn't explain much when other people thought that we were husband and wife.

It's not like I didn't want to explain, I was just too lazy to explain too much to other people. What would I say? Say that he wasn't my husband? I was in the gynaecology department because of him, what would other people think about me if I told them he wasn't my husband?

People would think that I was his mistress. I never wanted to hear the word 'mistress' anymore, I felt humiliated.

I was left in the ward alone after the nurse left. The clicking sound of the clock on the wall made me feel so lonely.

People would always look for the person who they rely on most when they are hurt. And the only person I rely on was Javier. I grabbed my phone off the nightstand, wanting to see if I could see any information about him on social media.

I told myself that I just wanted to see if he was safe and what he had been doing, I didn't want to bother his life.

I felt funny that I would rely on a man who is 3 years younger than me.

I logged in to my WhatsApp and wanted to see what he has been doing recently. A lot of messages came in after I logged in to it. They were mostly from Javier and a few from Bosco. I wanted to see what Javier had sent me but I backed off, looking at him caring for me would just make me feel lonelier here, it would just upset me further.

It would only make me weaker and I didn't want to be any weaker at that moment.

But I still opened his messages anyway, he has sent a lot of messages to me. There were also voicemails. At first, he would ask how I was doing, did Lance try anything bad to me. And at the end, he just asked me to reply to his message and don't make him worry.

He told me that he couldn't come here to find me and said that someone was trying to stop him from doing so.

He said that he was very worried about me and told me to reply to his message so that he would know that I was fine, at the very least. He would feel better if I do so.

Even though he couldn't do much for me at that moment, all of his caring words broke me down and I couldn't contain myself anymore. Tears started to roll down my cheeks and I buried my face in my hands, bawling my eyes out for a long time. My fingers were shaking so hard when I typed the message, and sent the message out to him.

'I am fine, don't worry,' I sent.

He was quick to reply to me and asked me when I would be going back to Germany.

Seems like he was waiting for my messages every second to see if I would reply.

## Chapter 159

I was happy when I know someone cared for me, it was also my weakness.

My tears kept rolling down and I typed: Don't worry, I am fine, I won't go back to Germany anymore. I am fine here and I love my child very much, don't worry about me and start your own life now. I owe you an answer last time, now I want to tell you my answer. I am sorry Javier; I want to give my child a complete family. We aren't meant to be, Javier. I believe that you will find a better woman than me. I hope you are safe and I wish you a happy life.

My phone rang after my message was sent; it was Javier.

I didn't pick up the call because I was afraid that I couldn't stop myself from crying like a baby, it would only worry him more. I already owed him a lot in the past one year, he had given me so much love and caring, they were the best memories in my heart, no one could compete.

I sent him another message: Stop calling me, the father of my child is now beside me, I don't want him to think too much. I really want a better life with him.

Javier quickly sent me another voice mail and said, "I don't believe that. You said that you will come back to Germany, you said you will give me your answer after you come back. You told me that you hate him and you never want to be together with him, why would you be together with him now? I don't understand why you would be with a man you hated so much? I don't understand why you would change your mind in such a short time? Is he manipulating you? He threatened you, didn't he? I don't care, I will bring you back no matter what."

He sounded very desperate.

Just when I finished listening to his voice mail, another one came in and he said, "Can you send me a voicemail, I need to hear your voice so that I know you are fine."

Maybe he thought that the one who replied to his message wasn't me so he needed confirmation by hearing my voice.

I patted my chest a few times and inhaled sharply to make sure my voice didn't sound like I had been crying.

"Javier, I am Jennie, I am fine here, and I am happy. Don't worry." I said and sent the voice mail to him.

Javier replied me quickly and said, "If you guys are really happy, why can't I come and visit? Tell me the truth Nini, is he threatening you?"

Javier isn't a fool, he wouldn't believe me.

I didn't want to tell him much because I was scared that I wouldn't be able to control myself, so, I said, "Javier, it's very late here now, I need to go to bed now. Don't worry about me and we can't contact each other too often also. Bye."

I quickly logged out because I didn't want to hear any of his messages anymore, I was going to break down any second. The future



would be more difficult and I didn't even know if I could do it, but I didn't want to drag Javier down with me. He should have a happy life without me, safe and happy.

Lance Mason pushed open the door and walked in, "Are you done texting your ex now?"

He wasn't far from the ward; I should have known that. He must have been eavesdropping. "You are wrong, he is not my ex. I don't like men who are younger than me. My ex has always been Leo, have you forgotten about that?"

He balled his hands into fists after hearing what I said. I knew he hated it when I said I still have feelings for Leo. So, why wouldn't I use that against him? He wouldn't hurt his baby brother.

He always chose to run away when it comes to Leo.

"I asked my men to report to me what you have done in Munich. I will know if you have done anything dirty with another man very soon. You can stop triggering me because I don't need you to tell me the truth."

I wasn't surprised that he did this.

"Whatever."

I looked at Lance's phone and I assumed that he didn't notice that I had downloaded Facebook on his phone, otherwise he wouldn't be so calm.

"You can check my Facebook if you want, I have logged in my account on your phone."

He knitted his eyebrows at me and asked, "See what?"

"You will know what I want to show you after you see it. Didn't you always say that I don't love Leo? You can check if I really love him or not." I said.

## Chapter 160

I thought he would open it and see what I wanted to show him but he didn't. He just deleted the app.

"Do you think you can provoke me by doing this? Childish." Lance Mason said.

I assumed that he wouldn't want to see it because he didn't want to get mad at Leo Mason.

He must be very sorry for slapping Leo Mason earlier. Oh yea, I forgot to mentioned the most interesting part, Lance Mason slapped Leo Mason, his baby brother, for the first time ever.

His brother, whom he loves most in the world.

"Are you avoiding the problem?" I asked sarcastically.

Lance Mason sat down on the sofa beside the bed. He looked very tired.

"When are you going to stop all of these, Jennie?" His voice sounded weak.

I laid on the bed looking at the drip and thought, I wouldn't be here if it wasn't him.

It seems like all the miserable things that happened in my life were because of Lance Mason.

I wouldn't be able to forget something that has hurt me so much easily.

"You are the one who should stop, Lance Mason. Aren't you feeling any guilt for doing all those bad things to me?"

I said and saw him lowered his hand. He ran both his hands through his hair, like he was very frustrated.

Did he feel frustrated because of what I said?

He spoke after a few seconds of pure silence, "I am 34 now and you are not young anymore, Jennie. We don't have much time to waste on these meaningless conversations and behaviours."

"What are things that are meaningful then? Lying under you and spreading my legs for you whenever you want? Is this what you call meaningful?"

I didn't sound like a woman who was in her twenties. I sounded like an old woman who was always mean.

I didn't know if it was Lance who had changed me or was it the time.

I hated myself like this.

"We are husband and wife and that is how a couple's life is. Why do you have to make it so dirty?"

"I am not your wife!"

I shouted at him after hearing what he said.

Let's not forget about the fact that I hadn't even married him. Even if

he forced me to do so, he would never be a husband for me!

I wouldn't accept him as my husband.

"Fine. I don't want to waste our time on arguments."

Lance said and laid his head on the sofa while covering his eyes with his hand.

I was tired too and I didn't have any more energy to argue with him.

So, I laid down and took a rest.

I left with Lance after the third bottle of drip was finished.

I could only follow him because I had no money. Otherwise, I would freeze to death out there.

I got into Lance's car and he just drove in silence.

## Chapter 161

Many things had happened today, what a dramatic day.

When we reached his mansion, he opened the door for me and said, "It's very late now, you should rest. I need to go to the study room and send an email."

I didn't give him any response and just walked upstairs. I went into the bathroom and took a shower. I apply some ointment on my private area after I showered and it hurts a lot.

Lance came into the room after I fell asleep. My back was facing him.

He hugged me from behind and I could feel his breath on my ears. I woke up because of his movement.

"Have you applied the ointment?"

He asked softly into my ears and that made me feel like we were just a normal couple.

"The doctor said the healing period will be one month, what am I going to do now that we can't have sex? You are so fragile. I wouldn't have gone too hard on you if you didn't trigger me, right? Now look at you. Triggering me is no good for you, you should know better."

Was he persuading me?

He said that he wasn't being hard on me? He gripped my side so hard that he left fingerprints on my skin and he kept sliding in and out of me even though my tears were forming in my eyes. He saw that I was crying and in pain but he didn't stop.

He acted like he hated me a lot.

A thought popped up in my mind that maybe Lance Mason had not accepted me because of my mother and he wanted to torture me for that.

He didn't act like he loves me. This is not what love looks like. My father still loves my mother even though she was a bad woman, everyone wanted my mother to die and my father was the only one who wanted mom to live a good and happy life.

Lance Mason said that he loves me but I wasn't happy whenever he was around.

He would feel hurt because I said something that he didn't want to hear. That's not love.

I didn't give him any response.

Lance Mason turned on the lamp on the nightstand, and I closed my eyes shut.

His hand slid into my nightgown, he pulled my nightgown up to my stomach and his finger curled at the band of my panties.

I asked him coldly while my eyes remained closed, "You want to do it?"

Lance pulled his hand away.

"I just wanted to see if you are okay. How does it feel now?"

He asked while pulling my nightgown down.

He laid beside me and lay on top of him. He made me lay my head on his chest.

His hand slid into the front of my nightgown and touched my breast. He likes to play with my breasts. He would grab on it so hard whenever he had sex with me that it hurt so much when I was his mistress.

"You have lost some weight; your breasts are smaller now."

He flipped us over and had me under him. He pulled his hand out and caressed my face, "Don't worry, I won't have sex with you today, I just want to kiss you."

He lowered his head down and kissed me, he traced the shape of my lips with his tongue.

He was so into the kiss that made me feel like he really loves me, but that's not true. He wouldn't make me suffer from pain if he loves me.

So, Lance Mason didn't love me and I didn't love him too.

After he was done kissing me, he rubbed my nose with his and smiled at me, "You look so pretty."

"I want to sleep now."

I reached out my hand to push him away from me but he suddenly put all his weight on me. He is very heavy.

## Chapter 162

He grabbed my hand and stared at me with lust while smirking. He pushed his tongue out and licked my fingers one by one.

That made me feel disgusted.

After he kissed all my fingers, he suddenly pulled the covers off of me and he slowly moved his body down.

I grabbed his hair and pulled his head up, "What are you doing?!"

Lance Mason smiled at me and said, "Stay still and be good. I just want to kiss you so that I will feel like you are mine."

He pulled my nightgown up again and I quickly shut my thighs together. I was afraid.

He didn't pull my panties off, he just kept kissing my inner thighs and pushed my thighs apart with his big hands. He started to kiss at the very inner part of my thigh.

I have only been intimate with him and he had never kissed my thighs before.

He started to lower his kiss down to my knees. He showered me with kisses there and that turned my face red. It felt good, but I didn't want to accept that Lance was pleasuring me.

I thought that he wouldn't get any lower but he did. He kissed my feet and my toes.

I couldn't accept that.

How could he do that, I thought he was a very hygienic person?

He came up to me and pinched my chin in between his fingers. He was about to kiss my lips with his lips that just kissed my toes, I quickly covered his mouth and said, "You just kissed my toes and now you want to kiss my lips? That's gross."

He pulled my hand away and started to laugh, "You feel disgusted by yourself?"

He lowered his head down to kiss me.

I pushed him away forcefully and kept wiping my mouth with the back of my hand, "You are so gross!"

He was in a good mood, he pulled me into his embrace. He didn't plan to sleep even though it was 2 in the morning.

"See, isn't this good, Jennie?" He said, full of thoughts.

I wanted to curse at him so much.

"Just sleep, it's very late now. It's not good for my health if I don't sleep early."

Lance hugged me tightly and pointed at his cheek, "Give me a goodnight kiss and I will let you sleep."

I wanted to bite his face so much when he said that, but I wasn't brave enough.

We were like in a competition and I never learned from my mistake

## Chapter 167

"You're not afraid that I will kill you?"

"Why would I be afraid? We have been sleeping in the same bed for countless nights, you could have made a move already."

He was right, I could have killed him in his sleep and died with him.

But I didn't want to die so young and I couldn't imagine Lexi's life without the both of us.

The most important thing was we both know that killing each other wasn't the best plan for revenge.

I put the gun down and threw it back to him, "Don't let me hold this thing anymore, I'm scared that I will accidentally kill you."

"My pleasure." He put the gun back to the drawer.

He reached his hand up and pinched my cheek.

I pushed his hand away and said, "Focus while you drive, I don't want to die so young."

"That will be very romantic for both of us to die together."

Who would want to die with him?

After we reached the Mason's mansion, the old chamberlain quickly rushed out to greet Lance, "You're back, Mr. Mason."

Lance nodded and pointed at me, "This is Mrs. Mason."

This old chamberlain didn't like me at all, the chamberlain was very loyal towards the old woman.

Lance glared at the chamberlain, so the chamberlain greeted me unwillingly, "Mrs. Mason."

Lance pulled me into the living room, feeling pleased with himself.

There were many people in the dining room when we walked in, including Leo.

Leo Mason had been back to Denmark for a while. Lance Mason loves his brother very much that he built him a lab and hired the best assistance for him.

"Grandma, Dad, Uncles, Aunties." Lance greeted them.

He pinched my side softly signalling me to be polite and greet them.

Lance's grandmother hit the floor with her walking stick and said, "What a shame!"

Lance Mason's grandmother hated me.

She wouldn't change her mindset about me just because Lance wanted to marry me. It would only make her hate me more, because she thought that I don't deserve her perfect grandson.

Lance wasn't pleased with his grandmother's attitude, "Grandma!"

The old woman turned her head to the other side and didn't want to see me. All his uncles and aunties never liked me since back then, they would just hate me more now that I was going to marry Lance Mason.

## Chapter 163

He looked very happy because I just kissed him. He looked like he was really happy and I couldn't make out if he was acting or not.

I slept uncomfortably that night.

It was because Lance was hugging me too tight.

It was already 10 in the morning when I woke up.

Lance woke up earlier than me and when he saw I opened my eyes, he asked, "Morning. Did you sleep well?"

He was about to kiss me and I quickly covered his mouth with my hand, "Morning breath."

He smiled and he looked good when he smiles, not kidding.

"It's okay."

He wanted to pull my hand away and I said, "I don't feel okay with it!"

He stopped smiling and he looked like he was hurt because of what I said.

If we were just a normal couple, we would be fine with this whole incident.

But we weren't, I couldn't say that I don't feel okay when I am with him, he would feel like I hate him very much.

And indeed, I hate him.

"Get up now." He let go of me and walked into the bathroom.

I didn't want to brush my teeth in the same room with him so I stayed in bed for a while.

He walked out of the washroom and said, "Get up now, aren't you hungry?"

I nodded. I was really hungry.

I got out of bed and walked to the bathroom.

I saw a glass of water and a toothbrush which had toothpaste on it.

Was he trying to be nice to me?

I walked downstairs and saw Lance waiting for me.

I sat down in front of him and asked, "Where is Lexi?"

He looked at me and seemed very pleased with my question, "You are starting to sound like a mother now."

"I will be responsible if she really is my daughter."

"You will be a good mother, right?"

He wanted me to make a promise to be a good mother. And being a good mother for Lexi means I would have to listen to every order he makes.

He was overthinking.

After breakfast, Lance attended an internet meeting in his study room.



He agreed to let me walk around in the neighbourhood. And he warned me to not go out of this neighbourhood.

I wouldn't be able to go out of this neighbourhood. The guards wouldn't let me out.

Just when I was in deep thought, someone patted my shoulder.

I turned around and saw the owner of the 9th mansion, the stranger I met after I was kicked out by Lance that night. Lance once told me that his last name is Smith. At first I still thought he last name was Sands, like Niklaus.

"Walking around alone, Mrs. Mason?"

## Chapter 164

"I am not Mrs. Mason, Mr. Smith."

"You know my last name, Mrs. Mason?" He was surprised that I knew his last name.

I couldn't be polite to him after I recalled what happened that night.

I rolled my eyes at him and said impatiently, "I told you I am not Mrs. Mason!"

"Mr. Mason has already divorced for a long period now. I heard some rumours saying that he was going to marry his mistress. Is that you?"

This man was so nosy and I wanted to hit him so much.

I didn't want to talk to him so I turned around and prepared to leave.

But he didn't let me, he stood in front of me, blocking my way, "I was just joking."

I looked at him coldly and said, "It's not funny at all."

I wanted to walk away but he blocked me again, "I am Anthony Smith."

He introduced himself and reached out his hand, waiting for me to shake it.

I didn't want to get to know him so I looked at his hand feeling frustrated and asked, "What do you want from me?"

He looked at me for a while and smiled, "I just want to get to know you. I told you my name, why don't you tell me yours?"

"I am not interested in making a male friend now, please excuse me." I said.

He still stood in front of me, not moving at all.

"It wouldn't harm you to make some friend, Miss Gomez."

I tilted my head up and asked, "How did you know my last name?"

Lance didn't tell him my name, did he?

"You were quite the talk of the town back then." Anthony Smith laughed.

I balled my hands into fists. Seems like I was really famous huh.

"What do you want to say? I don't have much time to waste. You know Lance Mason isn't some kind man, do you think he will let you live your life happily after he saw you here trying to be friends with me?"

I wanted to scare Anthony Smith.

But he didn't look like he was afraid of Lance, "How could you describe your own man as a bad man? Does Mr. Mason know about this?"

"He is not my man! Stop talking nonsense." I was annoyed.

"Okay, fine. Seems like what I thought is right, you two hate each other."

"You talk too much."

"You are something else, aren't you? Lance Mason has a good taste in choosing women. Can I get your number? We can contact each other in the future."

He took his phone out and asked me to do so. I can't trust anyone, Niklaus Sands was one of the examples.

Even though they have some conflicts with Lance Mason, they would quickly abandon me for some other benefits.

I had nothing they want; all they want was to collaborate with Lance Mason. I was just their one-way ticket to approach him.

## Chapter 165

"Just make some friends. Don't be so cautious."

He laughed while saying.

I thought for a second and thought that he was right. I was just making some friends. So, I handed him my phone.

"There are a lot of unread messages." Anthony points at Javier's name.

I rolled my eyes at him and said, "Just be quick."

"Call me when you need to." He said.

"Why would I need to call you?"

"You will know."

After I walked away from Anthony Smith, I looked at all the messages Javier had sent and thought that I would need to do this alone from now on. So, I deleted his contact.

I tilted my head up and looked up at the sky and sighed. I had never been able to live happily since I was 5.

I slowly walked back to Lance's Mansion and Lance walked out just when I reached his doorstep. He knitted his eyebrows together and said, "Where have you been? It has been a long time since you went out."

I met Anthony Smith half way and we talked at a corner where the CCTV couldn't reach. But that didn't take much time.

"It's not that long."

He held his wrist up and looked at his watch, "It has been an hour."

He reached his wrist out towards me and let me look at his watch, "See, it's 11 now."

The watch he was wearing seemed familiar to me, and Lance noticed my expression.

He smiled at me and said, "You have a good taste back then, this watch looks good on me. You left yours at the Pavilion Residence, we can go there to take it back tomorrow. It is a couple watch; we should wear it together."

He said happily. He sounded like he was in a good mood.

I remembered this watch; it was the couple watch I bought.

He didn't like it back then.

"Really? I don't remember that." I shrugged and said.

He didn't look pleased but he still smiled anyway after a few seconds and said, "Memories will get messed up after you give birth, it's normal that you don't remember the watches."

He put his hand on the small of my back and said, "Follow me back to the Mason's Company, we will have lunch there. Grandma wants to meet you too."

That old woman wanted to meet me?

I didn't believe it at all.

What was Lance Mason planning now?

"You will need to meet her anyway; you will be my wife soon."

He said while lowering his head down to peck my lips, "I know you don't like it there but we still need to go back there, so bear with it a bit. The three of us will live in this house in the future, no one will be hard on you."

"I'll just do as you said." I nodded.

He caressed my face and asked, "Why are you being so good today?"

I laughed coldly and said, "How would I dare to not listen to you?"

## Chapter 166

His smiley face changed to an angry one.

I pushed his hand away and said, "Wait for a second, I need to wash my face."

I walked into the mansion and went to the washroom. I washed my face and looked at my reflection on the mirror. I used to look good back then, and now I looked so soulless.

I didn't want to see the Mason's mansion, his father, his grandma and also Leo, but I need to face my problems.

I tilted my head up and tried to show him my best smile.

Lance walked into the washroom and said, "What is taking you so long?"

I smiled at him and said, "I don't look good so I wanted to apply some light make-up. I need to take care of my image since your grandma doesn't like me."

"Grandma is older now; she might be hard on you but please just try to bear with her." Lance said.

I nodded and said, "I know."

He caressed the top of my head and said, "I will reward you if you listen to me."

"What reward? Will you let me go?" I asked without thinking.

His face turned into an angry one in a matter of seconds.

I quickly said, "I was joking, where would I go? We have a child to raise."

He looked at me seriously and said, "Do you really think so?"

I shrugged and said, "What could I do more?"

I was being honest; he knew that I would have left if I could..

I didn't have to act like I like him, my acting skills are too bad, he would have known that I was fooling him.

"I don't want to hear words like that anymore. You will only be happier when you are with me."

He said and led me out of the washroom.

I will be happier staying with him? I didn't think I will.

Lance drove his own car and there were no guards following us. He wasn't afraid that someone would try to harm us?

He opened the drawer in front of the passenger seat and pulled a gun out of it. He has a gun.

Lance Mason noticed my expression and he threw the gun on my lap. I was terrified by his action.

"People like me holding a gun is normal. It's not illegal either."

I picked the gun up bravely and looked at it closely.

"Do you have a bullet in it?" I asked.

Lance looked at me for a second and smiled, "Of course, you can take a try."

He arched his eyebrow.

I looked at that gun in my hand and I pointed it at his head.

Lance Mason was not afraid; he just kept driving and smirked. It made me feel like I was just holding a toy gun.

"Is this gun even real?" I asked him. I didn't believe he wasn't afraid that I would lose my mind and kill him.

He moved his face closer to me and said, "You can try."

## Chapter 167

"You're not afraid that I will kill you?"

"Why would I be afraid? We have been sleeping in the same bed for countless nights, you could have made a move already."

He was right, I could have killed him in his sleep and died with him.

But I didn't want to die so young and I couldn't imagine Lexi's life without the both of us.

The most important thing was we both know that killing each other wasn't the best plan for revenge.

I put the gun down and threw it back to him, "Don't let me hold this thing anymore, I'm scared that I will accidentally kill you."

"My pleasure." He put the gun back to the drawer.

He reached his hand up and pinched my cheek.

I pushed his hand away and said, "Focus while you drive, I don't want to die so young."

"That will be very romantic for both of us to die together."

Who would want to die with him?

After we reached the Mason's mansion, the old chamberlain quickly rushed out to greet Lance, "You're back, Mr. Mason."

Lance nodded and pointed at me, "This is Mrs. Mason."

This old chamberlain didn't like me at all, the chamberlain was very loyal towards the old woman.

Lance glared at the chamberlain, so the chamberlain greeted me unwillingly, "Mrs. Mason."

Lance pulled me into the living room, feeling pleased with himself.

There were many people in the dining room when we walked in, including Leo.

Leo Mason had been back to Denmark for a while. Lance Mason loves his brother very much that he built him a lab and hired the best assistance for him.

"Grandma, Dad, Uncles, Aunties." Lance greeted them.

He pinched my side softly signalling me to be polite and greet them.

Lance's grandmother hit the floor with her walking stick and said, "What a shame!"

Lance Mason's grandmother hated me.

She wouldn't change her mindset about me just because Lance wanted to marry me. It would only make her hate me more, because she thought that I don't deserve her perfect grandson.

Lance wasn't pleased with his grandmother's attitude, "Grandma!"

The old woman turned her head to the other side and didn't want to see me. All his uncles and aunties never liked me since back then, they would just hate me more now that I was going to marry Lance Mason.



## Chapter 167

"You're not afraid that I will kill you?"

"Why would I be afraid? We have been sleeping in the same bed for countless nights, you could have made a move already."

He was right, I could have killed him in his sleep and died with him.

But I didn't want to die so young and I couldn't imagine Lexi's life without the both of us.

The most important thing was we both know that killing each other wasn't the best plan for revenge.

I put the gun down and threw it back to him, "Don't let me hold this thing anymore, I'm scared that I will accidentally kill you."

"My pleasure." He put the gun back to the drawer.

He reached his hand up and pinched my cheek.

I pushed his hand away and said, "Focus while you drive, I don't want to die so young."

"That will be very romantic for both of us to die together."

Who would want to die with him?

After we reached the Mason's mansion, the old chamberlain quickly rushed out to greet Lance, "You're back, Mr. Mason."

Lance nodded and pointed at me, "This is Mrs. Mason."

This old chamberlain didn't like me at all, the chamberlain was very loyal towards the old woman.

Lance glared at the chamberlain, so the chamberlain greeted me unwillingly, "Mrs. Mason."

Lance pulled me into the living room, feeling pleased with himself.

There were many people in the dining room when we walked in, including Leo.

Leo Mason had been back to Denmark for a while. Lance Mason loves his brother very much that he built him a lab and hired the best assistance for him.

"Grandma, Dad, Uncles, Aunties." Lance greeted them.

He pinched my side softly signalling me to be polite and greet them.

Lance's grandmother hit the floor with her walking stick and said, "What a shame!"

Lance Mason's grandmother hated me.

She wouldn't change her mindset about me just because Lance wanted to marry me. It would only make her hate me more, because she thought that I don't deserve her perfect grandson.

Lance wasn't pleased with his grandmother's attitude, "Grandma!"

The old woman turned her head to the other side and didn't want to see me. All his uncles and aunties never liked me since back then, they would just hate me more now that I was going to marry Lance Mason.

Uncle Mason would hate me even more because my mother was his mistress, and I was his son's mistress. My mother had been waiting for her whole life for a legal title and I was going to get it soon.

Uncle Mason would be the one who doesn't agree with this marriage the most.

Lance's aunt and his grandma had been talking bad things about me and my mother.

Lance just pulled at my shirt and signalled me not to talk. He didn't help me when they said something bad about me.

I knew he didn't love me for real, if he loves me, he would have helped me.

When they heard that I made some noises when drinking my soup, his aunt said, "Shameful that she doesn't know any table manners."

His grandma then said, "Just like her mother! I don't understand why you would marry a woman like this, Lance."

Lance knitted his eyebrows and said, "I know what I am doing, grandma."

## Chapter 168

I made the noise louder on purpose and his grandma started to talk again, "You are just like your mother! Shameful!"

"Mrs. Mason, you are almost 90 years old now, you should be more kind now or else you wouldn't be able to go to heaven. Oh yeah, and be careful in the night, my momma loved you and Uncle Mason so much when she was alive, I am afraid that she will come and find you. Be careful."

His grandmother was already 88 years old and she was still afraid of death.

"You.....You bastard!"

She placed her hand on her chest and gasped for air.

Lance and Leo were fast to rush to her side and smoothed her back.

His aunt looked at me angrily and said, "Apologise!"

I placed my spoon down and said, "You guys can say something bad about me and I can't?"

"Look at your woman, Lance! She dares to speak this way to your grandma! Your mother died because of her mother too! Do you really want to marry this woman?"

Lance told me not to protest when his family said something when we first arrived.

I said yes but now I couldn't just sit there and let them humiliate me anymore.

"Want me to apologise? You are thinking too much!"

His grandmother almost fainted because of what I said. I didn't like that old woman anyway. I remember when I was 10, she framed me and said I broke her vase when she knew it was Lance's cousin who did it.

The old chamberlain caned me after that. I was just a 10-year-old girl and that old woman wanted me dead.

I always thought that a woman at her age would be nicer but I was wrong.

The Mason's family did raise me but they treated me like a maid. I had to wash all the plates, mop the floor when I was just 5.

They used to hit me when I was young.

When I was in my teenage years, I ran away from the Mason's mansion and lived in the hostel.

That was when I was free from all the hitting and cursing. I felt happy.

Lance grabbed my wrist when I was about to leave the dining room and said, "Apologise!"

I looked at him coldly and said, "What if I don't?"

He looked at me coldly and said, "You have to."

"She and her mother were sent to our family to harm all of us! Her

being in the same space. If Leo didn't follow us to California, then my plan couldn't go as planned..... Leo was part of my plan, he didn't turn up, so this would mess up my plan. I wanted Lance to be our audience, but now the main character wasn't here.....

After we landed, I needed to quickly contact Niklaus, to let him know our plan couldn't go as planned, and to inform him that he should not make any move yet. We should at least confirm Leo wouldn't turn up. Yes, Niklaus and I worked together again.

There are no friends forever, and no enemies forever, but he needed me at that time, so I became his friend temporarily. Lance had been expanding his business from Denmark, to California and the rest of the United States, and even France, the place I used to work in. this upset a lot of local entrepreneurs, including the Sands. Therefore, I didn't mind working with them on this.

After getting down from the plane, I followed Lance into his company's car. We were in the car and I heard Lance making a call, he said, "Prepare for a ball tonight, you are coming with me. There are a lot of people in the biotechnology sector attending this ball and it would greatly help us in expanding our business into this area. You need to come with me, because I need a professional in this area to speak with the businessmen."

Although Lance accepted a huge project in California, he was also planning to expand his business in the eco-biotechnology area.

He was always the first one to jump and find new ways for profit. He knew property wouldn't always be a profitable business, so he expanded into IT, and now he was one of the first few entrepreneurs to bravely invest in the eco-biotechnology sector.

From this, it cannot be denied that he's not a genius, but maybe the reason why he was so twisted and evil was because is just way too smart.

No one ever knows what he is thinking, he might act like this but do another thing. He was just complicated and very, very mysterious.

His tone suddenly turned cold and said, "You are not young anymore, you need to carry some burden of the family, and I didn't even ask you to do anything complicated. You are well known in this area, so you should speak to them, they would trust you more than me in this area." And with that, he hung up.

He then looked at me and said, "I need to attend a ball tonight. Since you are not feeling well, you should rest at home, the maids will serve you. I'll be back once I'm done." By home he meant his residence. Pavilion Residence, that's his house, not mine.

It was already 5pm when we arrived at his mansion. He was tired and plus he had a ball to attend at night, after taking a shower, he napped for a while on his bed.

He asked me if I was tired and if I wanted to nap, I said since I wouldn't have any plans for the night, I'll just sleep at night.

mother killed your mother and now she wants to kill your grandma! Didn't you hear what she said?"

When Lance's mother died, I heard some maids say that my mom would always trigger her with words.

Lance's mother got even more ill after my mom came into this family. But I never knew if my mom had really killed her or not.

The Mason has tortured me for my whole life now, wasn't that enough?

Couldn't I protest a bit even when his grandma and aunt humiliated me?

His aunt kept using his mother's death to trigger him.

I felt like my wrist was going to break any second because of Lance's tight grip.

"I said apologise!"

"Impossible!" I said stubbornly.

He swung his hand up and threatened me, "Apologise!"

I looked at him fearlessly and said, "Never! I wish that she was dead because she disgusts me!"

I said that purposely to trigger him.

## Chapter 169

With that, he slapped me.

He slapped me forcefully.

He used a lot of strength to slap me, I felt my face getting swollen in a second. I was very stubborn that I moved the other side of my cheek towards him and said, "Slap me again if you dare!"

"She wants me dead, Lance. She and her mother are just whores!"

His grandma said and Uncle Mason just sat there watching me getting hit by his son.

This wasn't the first time he slapped me. He would always hit me when he felt like he was losing control over me.

Lance swung his hand up again and just when his hand was about to touch my skin, a person came up and stopped him.

"Enough, brother!" Didn't you see that it was aunt and grandma who started all of this? No one would want to be humiliated."

"Do you know what you are talking about, Leo? This woman was cursing your grandma! Why wouldn't you let your brother punish her? Do you still have feelings for her?"

Lance looked at his brother with anger raging in his eyes after he heard what his aunt said. He pushed Leo's hand away and dragged me up the stairs.

He brought me to his bedroom and threw me on the bed. He looked down at me and said, "What did you promise me before we came in here? What do you want? You want me to slap you so you said that on purpose?"

I touched my swollen face and laughed.

"Do you need any reason to hit me? I promised you I wouldn't say anything mean to your family but that doesn't mean I will be quiet when your family says something mean to me! Just like what Leo said, no one will want to be humiliated."

My face hurt a lot.

I couldn't control myself from gasping because of pain. He balled his hands into fists looking at my swollen face. He stepped a few steps back and shook his head, "Why couldn't you just listen to me? I just wanted you to apologise, I didn't want to hit you. They will be your family too; it was wrong to talk to an elder like this."

I nodded seriously and said, "Yes, it's not suitable. So, you hit me, just like how you always do."

I touched my swollen face and said, "And it hurts a lot."

Lance Mason suddenly squatted down and buried his head in between his knees. He grabbed his hairs.

"I didn't want to hit you, why do you have to be like this? You knew how hard I tried not to hate and to love you, why do you have to mention my mother?" He sounds like he was in pain.

When did I mention his dead mother? It was his aunt and grandmother who mentioned her.

Lance stood up from the floor and walked out of the room.

I went into the bathroom and washed my face.

I looked at my swollen face and I thought that I should let Leo see this.

I walked out of Lance Mason's bedroom and walked downstairs.

When I reached downstairs, I heard two maid's chit chatting.

One of the maids said, "Mr. Mason was so angry just now, he even kicked out his aunt and uncle, and warned them not to come here again. The old Mrs. Mason was also so angry at Mr. Mason."

Maid A said, "I saw Mr. Mason sit in the backyard and stared at his own hand for a long time. Does he regret hitting Jennie Gomez?"

Maid B said, "I heard the maid who start to work at here earlier than us said that Mr. Mason hated Jennie Gomez a lot, he even made someone rape her."

Maid A said, "Well, was she?"

Maid B said, "I heard that young master Leo saved her. Do you think the rumours about their relationship were real?"

Maid A said, "I think so. I heard that when Jennie Gomez was young, Mr. Leo would always help her when she got hit. She must be good in bed if Mr. Mason wants to marry him no matter how much he hated her before."

I was too lazy to argue so I just let them say whatever they wanted.

## Chapter 170

The most important thing right now was to find Leo before Lance found out.

I knocked on his study room's door a few times.

But no one responded.

I was disappointed. I was about to leave but Leo suddenly appeared and asked, "Are you looking for me, Jennie?"

I showed him the smile I practiced earlier.

"I just want to see you, Leo. But I didn't mean to bother you, I will leave now."

I said and lowered my head to walk away but he suddenly held my shoulder to stop me. It hurts a lot that I couldn't stop myself from gasping.

"What happened?" He asked.

"It hurts."

He quickly pulled my shirt down and revealed the fingerprints on my shoulder. It was Lance's fingerprints, he left it when we had a make-out session the night before.

"What happened?"

He asked loudly and let go of me. He is an adult; he knew what happened.

But he is a gentleman; I believed that he wouldn't do this to a woman.

I quickly shushed him and shook my head, "It's okay. I am used to it now."

Leo Mason looked at my swollen face and he looked sorry.

"Does it hurt?"

"It doesn't hurt at all! I am used to it." I smiled.

I wanted him to know that this wasn't the first time his brother hit me, I needed to let him know that Lance hit me habitually.

He balled his hands into fists and his head was lowered. I couldn't see his facial expression.

Suddenly, he reached his hand out and pulled me with him.

"What are you doing, Leo?" I tried to get out of his grip.

"If you don't like him ask him to let you go then. I'll bring you to talk to him." He said.

I smiled bitterly and shook my head, "It's useless, Leo. You know how he is; you don't have any power in the Mason's family, he wouldn't listen to you."

He looked at me and I realized that what I just said wasn't nice.

He let go of my hand and said, "I believe that if you are good, brother will treat you better, Jennie. You shouldn't have talked to grandma like that just now. I know you are a clever woman. You know



what is good for you. Brother wouldn't want to marry you if he doesn't care about you. He wouldn't have hit you if you listened to him."

I didn't expect Leo Mason to say this.

I nodded while smiling bitterly, "You are right, it's all my fault then. I deserved to be hit. I shouldn't have said anything when people were humiliating me. I know where my place is in this family."

He knitted his eyebrows together and said, "I didn't mean it that way, Jennie."

I wanted to shout at him so badly. What would he mean if it wasn't like that?

I smiled anyway and said, "I knew you didn't mean it like that. I will remember what you said, I won't be like that anymore."

I turned around and left. The smile on my face disappeared in a matter of seconds. I balled my hands into fists.

I walked back to Lance Mason's bedroom. That was not what I expected.

I needed to think of another way.

Lance Mason would be going to California tomorrow and Leo will be following.

I still kept my things in the apartment back there, they were mostly Leo's things.

## Chapter 171

I needed to do something.

Lance Mason walked in with an ointment in his hand. He sat beside me in silence and applied it on my swollen face.

I gasped because of the pain and I noticed that he became softer with his action.

After that, he got up and pulled me with him, "Let's go back, I have called the doctor, she is on the way now. You need to do intravenous drip today."

He held my hand tight.

"Did you tell the doctor to add some medicine for swelling? People will think that I went through domestic violence because of you." I said while smiling.

His grip on my hand got tighter.

When we almost arrived at his mansion, he said, "I didn't mean to hit you, it was because you made me angry. Don't do that again."

"I know. Do I need to say sorry to you for hitting me? Your hand must hurt."

"Enough of that. Do not mention this again. I won't let you go there again if not necessary."

He said and got out of the car angrily.

I shrugged speechlessly.

He walked straight to his study room.

The doctor hadn't arrived yet. I saw Annie and two maids playing with Lexi in the living room.

I wanted to see the child, she was looking more and more like me as days went by.

Annie saw my face and stared at it for a while but she didn't say anything.

One of the maids asked, "What happened to your face, Mrs. Mason?"

"My face? Oh, Mr. Mason slapped me just now." I said.

One of the maids signalled me to look up the stairs. And I did, Lance Mason was looking down at us.

My voice wasn't small, I wanted him to hear what I said.

"Have you guys seen a movie? It is about a man who said that he loves the woman but he will hit her if he has nothing more to do, what is the movie name again?....."

One of the maids said, "Oh I remembered that I haven't washed the clothes, I need to go now, Mrs. Mason."

The maids and Annie quickly ran away.

I tilted my head up and smiled at Lance Mason.

I followed Annie and said, "Let me hold her."

Annie passed Lexi to me and said, "I know I am a maid and I shouldn't say the things I am going to say now. But please listen to me, Mr. Mason isn't the man you said, he treats me very well. Maybe he was too angry that he accidentally hit you? And you have slapped Mr. Mason a few times back then. You both should be even now. And Miss Lexi will remember things after she is 2 or 3 years old, you wouldn't want her to see the both of you like that, right?"

What she meant was I shouldn't go around telling everyone that Lance Mason hit me.

I looked at Lexi who was in my arms, I don't want her to live in a family like this.

"Kids remember things after they are 2 or 3?" I asked Annie.

Annie nodded and said, "They will start to remember things after 3 years old."

I looked at Lexi, she was already one now, I don't have much time.

Would I be able to bring Lexi away with me after all of these?

I didn't want Lexi to remember any bad memories, including her father. She would either have a mother or a father, it would be the best for her to live in a family like that rather than living with parents who had a toxic relationship.

Reward

400

Comments

0

## Chapter 172

It's me again! I saw some feedback regarding boring story, or toxic relationship..... but this is how Jennie's and Lance's life was, but no worries, right now I am focusing more on the child, there will be a surprise plot and storyline soon! Ill try to make it more interesting! I'm also trying to bring out that there are really toxic relationship in the real world too, not only in stories, so girls please do be careful when choosing a partner, and boys, stop being so mean. Please stay tuned! Thanks for the support!

Lance wanted to head to California tomorrow morning for a ceremony, but because of my dripping appointment, he delayed and pushed down the timing to noon.

After what happened in the Mason's Mansion, Lance didn't speak to me for 2 days. Of course if he didn't speak to me, I wouldn't go look for him to talk to him too. We were like perfect strangers living under the same roof. When we slept at night, there was a huge gap between us. Maybe he didn't feel good when he heard me telling the maids that he domestically abused me.

Men are all the same, they don't care if they abused their partners, they will never admit it. Women can be fake and pretentious, but men too.

The society is always trying to judge us women, and I wasn't even a feminist, but sometimes I just wanted to speak for the women. There are just too many things in life that we cannot control, so sometimes the choices women make are not the decision they could choose, they might be forced to do something they don't like! Why are men always able to get away with horrible things that they did, while women have to accept criticism, judgments and punishments? Why is the world so unfair?

Just like one year ago, when I was the talk of the town, why was I the only one getting criticized? Lance was at fault too, as a married man he shouldn't even have a mistress, but why wasn't he judged?

Yes, I admit that the relationship I had with him that tome was not right, it was dirty, so I don't blame anyone for scolding me. But wasn't Lance's behavior wrong too? Why didn't he get any extremely criticism or judgements? Just because he is rich, powerful, and extremely goodlooking? The world is sick.

I never think that they wronged me, because I was really his mistress, but don't they know that it takes two to tango? He was wrong too!

Every time when I saw people judging me online, I had no problem with it. The only issue I had was why were they only criticising me?

This is a very realistic world, and the world seems to favour the men.

The next day during noon, me and Lance boarded his private plane and departed. I didn't see Leo in the plane. I was wondering if Leo cancelled his trip because Lance was very bothered about me and Leo

being in the same space. If Leo didn't follow us to California, then my plan couldn't go as planned..... Leo was part of my plan, he didn't turn up, so this would mess up my plan. I wanted Lance to be our audience, but now the main character wasn't here.....

After we landed, I needed to quickly contact Niklaus, to let him know our plan couldn't go as planned, and to inform him that he should not make any move yet. We should at least confirm Leo wouldn't turn up. Yes, Niklaus and I worked together again.

There are no friends forever, and no enemies forever, but he needed me at that time, so I became his friend temporarily. Lance had been expanding his business from Denmark, to California and the rest of the United States, and even France, the place I used to work in. this upset a lot of local entrepreneurs, including the Sands. Therefore, I didn't mind working with them on this.

After getting down from the plane, I followed Lance into his company's car. We were in the car and I heard Lance making a call, he said, "Prepare for a ball tonight, you are coming with me. There are a lot of people in the biotechnology sector attending this ball and it would greatly help us in expanding our business into this area. You need to come with me, because I need a professional in this area to speak with the businessmen."

Although Lance accepted a huge project in California, he was also planning to expand his business in the eco-biotechnology area.

He was always the first one to jump and find new ways for profit. He knew property wouldn't always be a profitable business, so he expanded into IT, and now he was one of the first few entrepreneurs to bravely invest in the eco-biotechnology sector.

From this, it cannot be denied that he's not a genius, but maybe the reason why he was so twisted and evil was because is just way too smart.

No one ever knows what he is thinking, he might act like this but do another thing. He was just complicated and very, very mysterious.

His tone suddenly turned cold and said, "You are not young anymore, you need to carry some burden of the family, and I didn't even ask you to do anything complicated. You are well known in this area, so you should speak to them, they would trust you more than me in this area." And with that, he hung up.

He then looked at me and said, "I need to attend a ball tonight. Since you are not feeling well, you should rest at home, the maids will serve you. I'll be back once I'm done." By home he meant his residence. Pavilion Residence, that's his house, not mine.

It was already 5pm when we arrived at his mansion. He was tired and plus he had a ball to attend at night, after taking a shower, he napped for a while on his bed.

He asked me if I was tired and if I wanted to nap, I said since I wouldn't have any plans for the night, I'll just sleep at night.

being in the same space. If Leo didn't follow us to California, then my plan couldn't go as planned..... Leo was part of my plan, he didn't turn up, so this would mess up my plan. I wanted Lance to be our audience, but now the main character wasn't here.....

After we landed, I needed to quickly contact Niklaus, to let him know our plan couldn't go as planned, and to inform him that he should not make any move yet. We should at least confirm Leo wouldn't turn up. Yes, Niklaus and I worked together again.

There are no friends forever, and no enemies forever, but he needed me at that time, so I became his friend temporarily. Lance had been expanding his business from Denmark, to California and the rest of the United States, and even France, the place I used to work in. this upset a lot of local entrepreneurs, including the Sands. Therefore, I didn't mind working with them on this.

After getting down from the plane, I followed Lance into his company's car. We were in the car and I heard Lance making a call, he said, "Prepare for a ball tonight, you are coming with me. There are a lot of people in the biotechnology sector attending this ball and it would greatly help us in expanding our business into this area. You need to come with me, because I need a professional in this area to speak with the businessmen."

Although Lance accepted a huge project in California, he was also planning to expand his business in the eco-biotechnology area.

He was always the first one to jump and find new ways for profit. He knew property wouldn't always be a profitable business, so he expanded into IT, and now he was one of the first few entrepreneurs to bravely invest in the eco-biotechnology sector.

From this, it cannot be denied that he's not a genius, but maybe the reason why he was so twisted and evil was because is just way too smart.

No one ever knows what he is thinking, he might act like this but do another thing. He was just complicated and very, very mysterious.

His tone suddenly turned cold and said, "You are not young anymore, you need to carry some burden of the family, and I didn't even ask you to do anything complicated. You are well known in this area, so you should speak to them, they would trust you more than me in this area." And with that, he hung up.

He then looked at me and said, "I need to attend a ball tonight. Since you are not feeling well, you should rest at home, the maids will serve you. I'll be back once I'm done." By home he meant his residence. Pavilion Residence, that's his house, not mine.

It was already 5pm when we arrived at his mansion. He was tired and plus he had a ball to attend at night, after taking a shower, he napped for a while on his bed.

He asked me if I was tired and if I wanted to nap, I said since I wouldn't have any plans for the night, I'll just sleep at night.

He let me go downstairs to watch the TV, he wanted to take a good nap.

I nodded and left the room, I even closed the door for him.

Then I texted Niklaus, telling him to not do anything until I signal him.

I knew about Lance's schedule tomorrow. He would be attending a ceremony with Leo, and would be having around 4 more meetings and meals with important people. If he can finish all his meetings before night time, he would fly back to Denmark.

## Chapter 173

I needed to squeeze out the time in between and bring Leo back to the little condo I used to stay in California.

I wanted to show him something, I wanted to lead him into those memories, hoping that he could feel something.....

When Lance woke up again later, it was already 6pm, he planned to go to the ball at 7.30pm.

He stood at top of the stairs and shouted for me, "Jennie, come up here!"

I went up and entered the room, "What?"

He went to his closet and took out a navy blue tie.

"Help me tie this, you should learn, you're going to be my wife soon. I hope this isn't too much to ask from you." He said, while handing me the tie. It looks very expensive.

"Lower down your head." I was obedient that day, so I agreed to tie for him. It was just a tie, he wouldn't think too much and thought I have feelings for him, right?

He was very happy when I tied his tie for him willingly. He smiled and touched my face softly, "Look at you, isn't this nice? If you remain like this in the future, we will live a happy and peaceful life."

I smiled back slightly, "Really? If you insist, then I shall just do as you say." I pulled the tie hard, wanting so badly to suffocate him.

"Why did you became naughty again after hearing my praise? Women should be smart and know what to do and what not to do." Lance pulled my hands away gently and adjusted his own tie.

I scoffed, "I remembered when I was still young, I was obedient, but I suffered even more."

He put on his suit and glanced at me, "I didn't know you have this bad habit."

"What?" I asked. I didn't notice if I had any bad habits. To him, I should be having many, many flaws right?

"You like to bring up past and bad memories and talk about it. Women like this won't be loved." He said.

Speaking of bringing up past memories, I could do this all day with him. "Don't you think we have so many dark past between us? If I really like to do this, I could do it with you for 24 hours and still wouldn't been able to finish."

Lance rolled his eyes at me and scoffed, "Hmph, women are the same. I'm a man, I won't be bothered by this." Wow, was he trying to pretend that he's a gentleman with good temper? What a joke! Sometimes I really couldn't describe him in words. He was just too much.

If Lance was really a gentleman and kind, we wouldn't be in this situation right now, and I wouldn't have goon through this pile of bullshit. I suffered in his hands since I was a kid, that was why the hatred



between us grew heavier and heavier as years passed by.

"Hmph, if you were THAT nice of a man, we wouldn't be fighting." I said.

Lance ignored me and rolled his eyes again. He must have forgotten that we were fighting and the next thing he did was kissed my lips. He was just in front of me, so I didn't wipe my mouth.

He said, "I don't want to argue with a little woman, I'll see you at night, don't miss me too much!" Miss him? I would rather kiss the toilet seat than miss him. It would be best if he didn't come back at all.

I noticed every time I face Lance Mason, I always hoped for the worst to happen to him.

After Lance Mason left, I was bored so I took a shower and went to lie around and chill in bed, hoping that my plan would go smoothly tomorrow.

I was actually quite nervous, what if Niklaus didn't follow as I had instructed, what if he had other intentions? If so, I would be the unlucky brat tomorrow.

I accidentally fell asleep afterwards. I didn't sleep well though, and when I woke up the room was dimly lit, the main lights were off. I opened my eyes and saw Lance Mason in front of me.

He reeked of wine, and his tongue was attacking my mouth and lips the next second.

His hands started roaming under my night gown, fingers hooking on the side of my panties.....

As a woman who already gave birth to a child, I knew exactly what was going to happen next, but my body couldn't take it, the doctor warned me not to have sex for a month!

I wanted to live, I don't want cancer.

"Lance Mason are you out of your goddamn mind? The doctor warned us! Can you stop? You call this loving me? Are you going to make sure I suffer everyday until the day I die?" I yelled.

Lance bit the bottom of my lips and mumbled in between kisses, "Then do you even believe in my love for you? Do you even believe when I say I love you?"

To be honest, I didn't believe him. I used to doubt him, but his behaviour and actions proved me wrong.

## Chapter 174

"Does it matter? What matters is what are you going to do to me?" my hands were on his chest, pushing him hard. But he was heavy, and to him I am just a little woman, weak. How could I ever move him away from me with bare hands?

With a swift move, he grabbed both my wrist with only a hand, and brought y hands to his lips. He started kissing each and every one of my fingertips.

"Jennie, I don't care if you believe me or not, I don't want to hurt you, but why are you always making things hard for me? What do you want? Let bygones be bygones, as I have always said, and let's forget about the past. Why are you always bringing up the past, can't you just forget about it and live happily with our child?" the smell of alcohol from him was strong, seems like he had a lot of wine. He could be speaking nonsense, of he could be speaking what he really thought.

"What do I want? This is what I wanna ask you! What the hell do YOU want from me? You have already ruined my life and I didn't even have a chance to say anything. and now you're here, asking me what I want? Who gives you the right to expect me to be with you, just because you simply said you like me? I cannot just forget about the past; my past was a tragedy!"

Lance was drunk, so he might forget what I said and did tonight. Recalling the time when he slapped me in his family mansion, I slapped him back right now. Since he used violence against me, then so be it, I will be violent back. The cops can't do anything to a powerful man like him, so I decided to take things into my own hands!

I didn't expect Lance to just went limp beside me after I slapped him hard. I was stunned, he wasn't responding? Was I too hard? Did I kill him accidentally? I started to panic but then I heard his soft snores, then I realized that he was just too drunk and fell asleep.

I pinched him really, really hard on the waist, saying, "You're a bastard! A JERK!"

He used to treat me this way too, so I'm doing this back.

I didn't dare to slap him too much, so after a few more slaps, I stopped. If he wake up suddenly, it'll be my death.

Lance has always been a very hygienic person, this was my first time seeing him sleep without taking a bath before. Plus he reeked of alcohol.

I already didn't like sleeping with him on the same bed, now the smell of alcohol made me even more grossed out, so I slept on the sofa in the corner of his bedroom.

In the middle of the night, he kept calling out for me to bring him water.

"Jennie..... Jennie! I'm thirsty....." He said a few times with husky voice.

I wanted to ignore him but he kept going on and on and it annoyed the hell out of me.

I went down to fill a bottle of water for him. While I was in the kitchen, I saw some onions, so I put one small piece inside the water.

When he drank it, he asked sleepily, "Why does this water taste like shit? Jennie, I want clean water....."

I ignored him and went back to the sofa to sleep.

The next day when I woke up, he was still sound asleep. I went to wash up and brush my teeth. When I got out of the bathroom, he was already sitting on the bed. He was touching his face, giving me weird looks.

I was actually a bit guilty, because he has always got sensitive skin, a few hard slaps from me showed very obviously on his skin, my fingerprints were all over his face. If he look at himself in the mirror, he would know someone touched him while he was asleep.

The servants were not allowed upstairs, so it was obvious I was the one ho slapped him. I wonder what he would do to me once he finds out?

"Why is my face so painful?" he asked, he looked confused.

I pretended to not hear him and walked towards the door.

"Wait a minute! Stop!" Lance called out. I ignored him but he came and grabbed my wrists very quickly.

"You, woman, are obviously guilty. What did you do?" he pulled me to the bathroom while asking. Well, there goes my life. "You were drunk yesterday and wanted to f\*ck me, but I couldn't so I slapped you a few times to stop you."

He stared at himself in the mirror, touching his face. He looked very unhappy.

"You know very hard a drunk man cannot get hard, don't try to bullshit with me. Wow, Jennie, you really are harsh!" he gritted his teeth and raised his hands.

I thought he wanted to slap me so I flinched. But he didn't, he softly slapped the back of my head.

"Borrow me your concealer." He suddenly said.

"Huh? What are you going to do?" I didn't get what he wanted to do.

He pointed at his face and rolled his eyes, "Do you think I can attend meetings looking like this?" his tone was filled with irritation. But serves him right!

I got what he meant and handed him my foundation and concealer. "Use these."

He lowered down his head nearer to my face and said, "You do it for me. I'm a man, I don't know how these things work. Just cover up the finger prints."

## Chapter 175

I started to pat his face with the makeup sponge, I wasn't soft or gentle while doing it. "What the hell, Jennie? You slapped me and now you're doing this to me?"

I ignored him and continued my work. When I was done, he looked at himself in the mirror and said, "My skin looks so fake!"

"Well, this is how foundation and concealer works." I explained.

He patted his face a little, brushing off some excess makeup I put on his face, making his skin look a little more natural.

He glared at me, "Well, how was it, slapping the hell out of me when I was asleep and drunk? Hm, feeling any better?"

I wanted to yell, "Better my ass!" but I didn't.

"I didn't do it on purpose, the doctor already warned us but you were still getting it on. So I had to." Lance didn't seem to agree with me and rolled his eyes. Then he went out for business.

After he left, I had the driver send me to my old condo. I already informed Lance that I wanted to go back to clean it up and pack some stuff.

When we arrived, I went up to my condo while the bodyguards waited for me downstairs. If they wait for me down there, it would be hard for me to carry out my plan.

I sent Niklaus a message, telling him to distract the bodyguards for some time. Then, I texted Leo Mason.

I told him to meet me here, that I needed to pass him some stuff. But Leo replied: Just pass the stuff to brother's bodyguard, I will get it from him.

I didn't expect Leo to be avoiding me like this, we used to have feeling for each other, and now he's treating me this way.

I felt unsatisfied and called him. He didn't pickup until the fifth call.

"Brother, I don't mean anything, why are you avoiding me? What can a woman like me do to you? I just want you to come and get some stuff, they are all your stuff that I kept over the years. I just want a closure on our relationship. Just come!" and with that I hung up on him, not giving him a chance to say anything.

I didn't know if he would come, it was a gamble I made.

He didn't turn up after a long time. I peeped down through the window and saw that the guards were not there anymore, Niklaus must have distracted them away, but I knew they wouldn't be gone for too long.

Just when I was about to give up, Leo turned up. He knocked on the door and I let him in quickly.

"Brother, I knew you would come." I smiled and said softly.

Leo looked nervous and awkward. I knew he didn't want to come, he was afraid of getting too close with me. He didn't want to anger his

brother anymore.

"Brother, don't worry I'm not planning to do anything, these are the things that I wanted to give you, I'm marrying your brother soon, I need to bid farewell to our good memories....." I went into the store room and took out a huge box of stuff, they were all his stuff.

I took out a red jacket and asked, "Brother, do you remember this jacket?" I asked. He stared at the jacket, and both of us got lost in our past memories. I reminisced with him, one by one showing him the stuff I kept.....

By the time I pulled myself back to reality, my face was already soaked with tears. I was crying, I wasn't sure if it was just be being a good actress, or if I was sincerely sad.

I looked at Leo and saw him with his head low, his eyes teary, I knew he must have felt something at the very least.

I put everything back into the box and said, "Here you go, you can do whatever you want with them, keep it or throw it, your choice."

Leo took the box and stood up. He turned around and headed to the door. He didn't even plan to speak to me, I guessed he never really loved me huh.

Just when he was about to leave, I rushed towards him and hugged him from the back. I cried out, "I used to think Lance's torture is the worst feeling in the world, but I was wrong. The worst feeling in the world is when the man I loved so much never really loved me."

This time, I was speaking the truth, I wasn't acting anymore. I felt bitterness spreading in my heart.

Leo didn't move, he just stood there, letting me hug him.

After a long moment, he finally spoke, "I'm sorry Jennie, please, forgive my selfishness."

And with that, he left. Yeah, he was right, he is selfish. His love is only for his family, his brother and no one else.

He was obviously telling me, no matter how Lance Mason treated me, as long as he is happy, Leo wouldn't do anything.

When Leo reached downstairs, I texted to Niklaus: it's time.

I slapped my face and tried to calm myself.

I followed behind him, he didn't know I was following him, he was never the careful one. I saw him nearly walking into the walls a few times, seems like my words really did affected him a little.

## Chapter 176

Just when he was about to cross the road, a car drove towards him in a very high speed. Leo wasn't able to react and I yelled, "BROTHER, WATCH OUT!"

I pushed him with all my might, out of the car's way.

With a loud bang, my body hit the floor. In a moment of seconds, I was lying in a pool of blood in the middle of the road, slowly slipping out of consciousness.

Leo finally understood what just happened and rushed towards me. Looking at me, who was covered with blood, he didn't even know how to speak anymore. The expression on his face.....it was my first time seeing him so scared.

"Jen.....Jennie..... you....." he stuttered.

I struggled to speak my last sentence before fainting, "Send me to the hospital, brother! I don't want to die!"

Someone called the emergency number. Leo carried me up softly, he didn't dare to touch my head, it was very bloody.

I forced myself to stay awake, I wanted to attack his heart, to bury myself deep into his heart, to soften his heart using this chance.

In the ambulance, he spoke to me with teary eyes, "Why are you such a fool!?"

I struggled to put my hands on his face and said, "Brother, I'm afraid of dying, but I'm more afraid of you dying!"

I was sent to the hospital quickly, and when I woke up again, it was Lance Mason beside me, not Leo.

He looked really worried, but also angry and cold at the same time.

"Do you want to speak to Leo?" he asked coldly. "He is just outside." He added.

I wondered why he was so nice to allow me and Leo to see each other. Oh yea, I saved his baby brother's life. Although it was planned, but I still saved his brother's life.

"Yes." I said weakly.

"I will talk to you after that." He said and walked out of the ward.

Leo came in and sat beside my bed. "Why? Why did you risk your life for me?"

"I told you, the worst feeling is the man I love never really loved me, but when I saw you about to get hit by a car, I couldn't control myself." I said.

I admit I was being a b\*tch for using Leo Mason and planning all of this, I even got hurt myself, but Leo, he was the one who wronged me too. I still recalled his voice in the recording.....

"Never ever do that again, alright?" Leo said, his eyes telling me he literally wanted me to promise him. I remained silent.

"Jennie, just so we are clear, we can't go back to how things used to be anymore." Leo said suddenly. I looked at him, but I didn't say anything.

"You are going to be my brother's wife, and you and him even have a child already. It's impossible. We, are impossible." He added.

I scoffed, "Yeah, right. Talk as if you really loved me sincerely. You pitied me, you never loved me."

Leo stared at me with sorrow eyes and sighed. "I'll leave you with brother then, rest well, I'll come visit you again. Thanks again for saving my life, but never do that ever again."

And with that, he stood up to leave. Before he exited the ward, he added, "Take care, Jennie Gomez."

"You too, brother. Take care of yourself, drink less coffee and eat less sugary food." I said, trying to make him feel something, but he just nodded and left.

Lance came in afterwards and said, "Don't let me find out this accident is somehow related to you. That didn't seem like an accident at all." He said, he was straightforward and cold.

But I trusted Niklaus, I knew he would have a way to make this all onto Tiffany Abel. As long as Niklaus did a good job and I never admit, everything would be on Tiffany's head.

"The same thing happened in front of the cremation centre, remember? Tiffany Abel did that to me. Who knows if she hired someone in California to target me too?" I said.

"I will investigate this." Lance answered shortly, he already knew Tiffany targeted me, so I didn't think it would be a problem for me.

He left after that. I stayed in the hospital for 3 more days and I was brought back to the mansion by his bodyguards on the forth day. He was too busy to come pick me up himself.

When I reached the mansion, I saw Lexi. Seems like Lance ordered someone to fly his child here to us. She's much bigger now and she looks even more like me and Lance. To be honest, this child is really pretty.

When Lance came back, he tossed me a document and I opened it, it was our DNA test. Sure enough, I really am Lexi Mason's mother. I kind of already expected it so I didn't have any huge reaction.

"I will be responsible and be a good mother to Lexi. Don't worry." I said to Lance.

## Chapter 177

He nodded and said, "Good. Since this is confirmed, I would like to move our wedding date up. I want to get married as soon as possible."

"Anything you say." I nodded.

Lance glanced at me with a raised eyebrow, "Somebody seems to be a good girl today."

"Didn't you say you like obedient women?" I asked.

"Hm, true." Lance nodded and shrugged.

I knew Lance wouldn't try to scam me using this child, I know him very well. He wouldn't love a random child this much, so Lexi is really our daughter. The love and care he gave her, and the way he spoils her, it all seemed too real and natural. It didn't seem fake or pretentious at all.

I didn't know why, but Lance had been very cold towards me since the accident, it has been half a month. He used to want to kiss or touch me when he gets home, but now he would just do his own thing and ignore me.

Might be because he heard me and Leo's conversation. Well, it didn't harm me in any way so I didn't care.

Niklaus texted me: Remember Rupert Robinson?

Me: Yes

I remembered he was thrown into jail, why was Niklaus bringing him up?

Niklaus: He's out, someone bailed him out. Do you know anyone named Anthony Smith?

Anthony Smith, Lance's neighbour who added me on social media too.

Me: Yes, Lance's neighbour in Denmark. Why?

Niklaus: He was the one who bailed Rupert out.

I was confused, what the hell did Anthony want? Why did he bail Rupert out?

Niklaus: You can ask Anthony why he did it when you see him. Now, the thing you promised me, how is it?

We agreed on a deal. Niklaus would help me fake an accident, while I will try to sneak some data from Leo's lab.

Lance had been expanding in this area, and Leo is a scientist, and he is really, really good with his job.

Niklaus wanted the information, so that he could profit and get some benefits too, plus he also wanted Lance to fail.

So, we found each other and agreed on a deal.

I wanted to meet Leo, but he had been avoiding me, plus it would be very difficult for me to steal from Lance!

Me: Help me do one more thing.

Niklaus: Shoot.



Me: I want details and information of Anthony Smith.

Niklaus: Deal.

I needed to make some time for myself to get the information, so I asked Niklaus to check about Anthony for me. I didn't really trust Nik fully, he tried to betray me once, so I had to be extra careful this time.

I deleted out chat history from WhatsApp and put my phone aside.

Lance came back in the evening and tossed me a paper bag. There was a dress in it.

I took out the dress. It was stunning, a little revealing yet formal enough. Just like how Lance like it.

"What's this?" I asked, confused.

"You are coming with me to a dinner tonight." Lance said.

"I don't think I am suitable for that." I said.

Lance raised an eyebrow. I explained, "I'm not Mrs Mason and people might think I'm still the mistress."

Lance knitted his eyebrows together and said, "Don't talk nonsense, go put it on and put on some makeup."

I put on some light makeup and the dress. When I came out of the closet, Lance stared at me and said, "Your eyebrow looks weird."

What the hell, what does he know about makeup?

I rolled my eyes. He came to me and said, "The shape of your face isn't suitable for straight brows, I think arched-brows would be better."

## Chapter 178

He went to the room and took my eyebrow pencil. Then he came back to me.

Wait, what was he going to do?

"Hold the phone like that, I want to refer." He said, once he found an example picture of an arched-eyebrow.

I did as he said and he helped me redraw my eyebrows. If nobody knew about our relationship, people would think that we were a nice couple.

Wait, what was I thinking? Nice couple?

After a few minutes, he was done with my brows. He looked very satisfied with it.

I stared at myself in the mirror, hmm, true enough, I really looked better with arched brows.

Without further wasting any time, he took out his smart phone and placed the camera in front of us. Was he trying to take a selfie with me?

I didn't have time to ask and I stared into the camera, he snapped the photo. Our first selfie together, finally.

He looked at the photo and said, "Wow, I look too good beside you." He was being full of himself.

Well, I am considered beautiful, but not as gorgeous as celebrities and Lance really does look devilishly handsome. "If you think you are too good looking for me, you can choose to let me go, nobody is forcing you." I said sarcastically.

He ignored my remarks and together, we headed to the dinner. It was at a fancy hotel. The dinner started at 7pm in the evening, there were a lot of guests. Although there were many people that I didn't know, I still recognised some familiar faces such as Niklaus Sands, Anthony Smith and Leo. Leo had been avoiding me for some time now, he didn't even want to look me in the eye.

Lance saw Niklaus and went up to him. "Long time no see, Mr Sands." Lance raised his glass of wine at Niklaus.

Niklaus did the same and smiled politely, "Yeah, long time no see. Mr Mason has been getting more and more successful, both in business and in love."

Then, Niklaus looked at me and said, "Ms Gomez, we haven't seen each other for more than a year, you are getting as gorgeous as ever! Seems like you have been receiving a lot of love and care from Mr Mason! I'm so envious!"

Love and care from Lance Mason? Wow, Niklaus was getting better at bullshitting.

Lance put down his hands and held mine, our fingers entwined. He purposely shook our hands in front of Niklaus, showing that him and I were a thing.

"Not Ms Gomez, she is Mrs Mason." His voice was not low, so a lot of people around us heard him.

They all came forward to congratulate him, "Congratulations, Mr Mason, remember to invite us to the wedding!"

"Thank you, the invitation card will be sent out to all of you soon!" Lance said happily.

My gaze was distant, and it landed on Leo Mason, he was looking on the floor and I couldn't see his face. But I could feel that he was not happy, or was I just overthinking?

Leo didn't care about me, right? He did not care about me at all!

I pulled my gaze back to the guests around us and smiled at them politely, u had no more choice but to say, "Thank you!"

Then I heard Lance announcing, "Our wedding will be next month, in Royal Park Hotel, Denmark."

The guests were all congratulating Lance, but the smile on his face was hurting me.

It was as if he really was happy and excited about this wedding.

"Mr Gomez doesn't seem very natural. Your smile I mean." It was Anthony Smith who spoke.

I shifted my gaze on him. I didn't even had the chance to speak, Lance had already spoken before me, "Mr Smith, this is my wife, you can call her Mrs Mason." Lance was introducing me very formally, but I could sense the possessiveness in his tone.

"Oh? Mrs Mason? But you guys are not married yet, isn't it too early to call you Mrs Mason? Of course I will greet her as Mrs Mason once you officially marry her!" Anthony said. He was obviously provoking Lance, but then he also indirectly pushed me into an ugly spot. It was as if he was not willing to call me Mrs Mason because we had something between us.

But I never even spoken to him more than 3 times! I was a little provoked too. What if Leo Mason heard and thought that I and Anthony had been flirting? It wasn't easy for me to make Leo not hate me and see me with disgust anymore, I could not let Anthony just ruin that!

"Mr Smith, I respect you but can you at least think before you speak? I don't really know you, you are just my neighbour and we never really see each other at all, don't you think they way you spoke just now was a little inappropriate? It will cause a misunderstanding, and what if cause me and my family to have an issue? Won't you feel guilty? Don't you feel like you have been speaking very informally and inappropriate?" my tone was a little forceful, but I couldn't take it if any gossips start up again.

## Chapter 179

Lance was giving me a 'I'm amused and confused at the same time' look, he must never thought that I would speak for myself so forcefully in public.

Anthony Smith must not have expected this response from me too as he was standing there in shock.

"If I have somehow caused a misunderstanding to Ms Gomez and Mr Mason, I hereby apologise. I should have think before I spoke, I'm sorry. Don't take it to heart." Anthony apologised and gave us a slight nod. And of course, I was in public, so I couldn't do anything else but to say it's fine.

"I wasn't trying to make it hard for you, but I just want to remind Mr Smith to always filter and think before you speak, that's all." My tone was powerful, as if I was the queen.

From the corner of my eyes, I saw Lance smirked. He must be very satisfied with my behaviour. What about Leo? Was he satisfied with me?

I went to the washroom after that, and when I got out, Lance blocked me from the door and pushed me into the washroom stall again.

"Lance Mason, what are you doing?! This is a public washroom!" I gasped.

He ignored me and put his hands on the back of my head, kissing me like a man mad in love.

His tongue was all over my lips, he then slid his tongue into my mouth, conquering me,

My hands were on his chest pushing him, but he didn't even move at all! I started to punch him, but it was like nothing to him.

I glared at him and spoke in between the kisses, "Are you crazy? Can you at least choose a more suitable place to get horny?"

"Do you mean, I can get horny whenever I want if it's a suitable venue?" he asked back, smirking. His voice was filled with lust and longing. I rolled my eyes, I was speechless.

"Just let go of me! You're sick!" Lance stopped kissing me already, but one of his hands were still around me, hugging me tightly.

"Yeah, I'm sick and you are my medicine!" he said. He didn't let go of me still, and his hands suddenly slide beneath my skirt. He placed his hands on top of my panties and I gasped.

I quickly closed my mouth with one hand, my eyes widened in horror. What was he going to do? I could feel that this time, he was different. He wasn't forcing me, yet he wasn't being gentle to me either.

Lance put his thumb on my very sensitive spot and started to apply pressure on it, moving his thumb in a clockwise motion. Pleasure shot through my body and I wanted to moan so badly, but I couldn't! I was disgusted by the fact that he was touching me this way in a public toilet, yet I was also feeling very, very good.

His motion became faster and faster, I could feel myself getting wetter down there. He suddenly whispered into my ears, "Do you like it?" his whisper was very sexy. Wait, what was I thinking?!

"Ah..." I moaned out softly and I could see Lance smirking. He turned my body, my back facing him and he pressed himself against me. I could feel something hard poking my butt. I was immediately disgusted; how could he get so horny? But then, I was also getting turned on by his action, so I didn't say anything. In my heart, I felt gross, but my body was enjoying it too much.

He kept on teasing me, touching my sensitive spot. Then, he started to move his body against me, grinding his d\*ck on my butt. I really wanted him to stop. "Don't.....please ahh.....stop!" I moaned out.

"Don't stop?" he smirked.

Oh no, what I really wanted to say was, "Don't! Please stop." But Lance took it the other way.

He slowly pushed my panties aside and touched me raw down there. He must have felt the moisture down there because he whispered into my ears from behind me, "Why are you so wet, Jennie?"

I blushed embarrassingly and squeezed my legs shut. "Stop, we should get out now. The people would wonder where we are!" I said.

"Let them wonder, I'm not done yet." And with that, he pushed my legs open and slowly inserted one finger into me. The doctor said we couldn't have sex, but this man right here, he didn't care at all. He put in one finger and started to thrust his finger in and out of me, while his thumb still teasing my sensitive spot.

Thankfully, he remembered the doctor's words and didn't insert anymore fingers. At this point, I was feeling a rush of pleasure in my body. I was angry at him for doing this to me, but my body was being too honest. I could feel myself reaching climax and I moaned out loudly, "Oh gosh, I think I'm coming!"

Lance seemed to be very experience in this, he didn't stop and increased his finger's thrusting, and soon, my body was shaking. After a few seconds, I came. I couldn't believe I just had an orgasm, in a washroom. And I couldn't accept the fact that Lance was the man to give me an orgasm. I was disgusted! Why was my body enjoying it so much?!

I sighed and adjusted my panties. Lance let go of me and turned me back around, facing him. "Did you enjoy it?" he asked and smirked. I glared at him with angry eyes and ignored him. Then I said, "Shame on you."

"Well, you were actually enjoying it a lot a minute ago." He grinned like an idiot.

Reward

400

Comments

1

## Chapter 180

"Excuse me, even if I don't like you, the way you touched me will scientifically trigger a response from my body!" I scoffed and rolled my eyes.

He lowered down his lips and bit mine, "Call me husband. And the way you spoke to Anthony just now turned me on, so dominant." He whispered. His voice was so masculine and husky, full of hormones. It made me blush for no reason.

"Haha.....husband? I'm not used to calling you that." I said.

He pinched my ticklish spot beside my waist and asked one more time, "Hmmm?"

"No!" I shouted. He started tickling me and I couldn't take it so I said, "Husband!"

"Wait, call me babe, not husband," he changed his mind.

"Babe." I forced myself to call him that just so he could stop tickling me. Sure enough, he stopped and smiled at me happily.

"I know you weren't being sincere, but I'm still happy you called me your babe." He grinned. He seemed different; he never spoke to me like this. Why did I feel like he was speaking to someone he cares and loves a lot? Why did this though even cross my mind?

Then he took my hands and led me out of the washroom.

When he walked out, we came face to face with Anthony Smith. He smiled at Lance, but that smile seemed to aimed at me. Lance's grip on my hand became tighter.

After we were far from him I asked, "Can you let me go, you are hurting me."

Lance furrowed his brows and soften his grip, "I didn't realize, sorry. Still hurting?"

I shook my head, "it's fine now."

He suddenly stopped walking. I was confused and stared at him.

He suddenly grabbed my shoulder and said, "Jennie, you're mine!"

What the hell? Why was he suddenly acting so strangely in public?

"What?" I asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Nothing, I just want you to know, you will always be my woman. You are also Lexi's mother. Don't ever interact with other man, alright? You know my temper." He said.

The passionate and gentle man in the washroom disappeared, now Lance turned back to the cold one.

"What are you talking about? Who did I interact with?" he must have noticed the smirk Anthony gave us just now and thought that I interacted with him before, but I didn't!

"Nothing, I'm just telling you, I want you to know, that YOU ARE MINE." He emphasized once again. Wow, possessive much?

We continued our way back to the hall. Leo came rushing to Lance and whispered something in his ears.

Lance looked annoyed and said, "Ask the security guard to chase her out! Do not allow her back in."

Leo replied, "Nobody was able to stop her, she's already in, heading towards you."

Lance knitted his eyebrows together and said to me, "Stay here, don't go anywhere. Me and Leo need to handle something."

The hall was huge, the brothers left and I stood beside, eating.

Suddenly, a man appeared beside me. It was Anthony.

"You were convincing, I nearly thought you are really in love with Lance Mason." He said.

"What makes you think I don't?" I asked back.

"Well, you know it very well yourself." Why was his smile giving me goose bumps?

"But, I really want to be friends with you, Ms Gomez." He added.

I recalled Niklaus' words and shook his hands, "Right, nice to meet you, new friend." I said.

"Thank god, I was getting worried if you would ignore me feelings for you." He said.

I gave him a weird look and said, "Feelings? Don't speak nonsense, Mr Smith."

"Everybody has the right to chase the girl or boy they like. I like you, can't I tell you my feelings?" Anthony asked seriously.

I was stunned, never in the world did I expected such a out-of-nowhere confession from a man I barely know.

"Mr Smith, you must be drunk, I'll be leaving then." I said and left in a hurry.

I went to the centre of the hall and saw the crowd. A woman was making a scene.

## Chapter 181

"Lance Mason, why the f\*ck did you bring that whore to an event like this?!"

Lance Mason's whore? She was obviously speaking of me. Wait, her voice sounded extremely familiar.....

(LANCE'S POV: We were in a hotel hall, she turned me on so badly in public. The way she warned and spoke to Anthony was so damn sexy. She was like the lady boss, I couldn't take it anymore and pleased her in the washroom.

I realized that my love for her was getting even deeper. I knew if I didn't change my attitude, she would leave me no matter what, it's only a matter of time. So this time, I didn't force her. I didn't rape her. Raping her was a mistake, but I couldn't control myself every time.

She always made me angry, the reason why I also f\*ck her when she made me angry was because I didn't know what else to do. I always controlled myself, telling myself I shouldn't hit her, but if I don't hit her, there was no way for me to let my anger out. So, I chose to f\*ck her.

Whenever she spoke back to me and try to provoke me, her fierce eyes, her pouty lips, her tone.....it all made her look even more sexy and gorgeous. Yet, she made me angry, but at the same time she seemed to always turn me on easily without even knowing.

I know I couldn't use this as an excuse to cover up the fact that I f\*cked her without her permission, but then I still wasn't able to control myself until today, in the washroom. I realized that I have to be gentler to her, I never wanted to hurt her.

When I saw how much her body was enjoying my touch, my teasing, I was so happy and turned on. I wanted so badly to take here right there, but I couldn't, the doctor warned us. So instead of pleasuring myself, I chose to pleasure her. She didn't want to admit that she felt good, but her moans and expression showed it all. I could also actually feel the change of attitude towards me.

She was still cold and cruel to me, but she was changing slightly, I knew she was softening her heart. I wasn't sure if she noticed it, but I could sense it. And I didn't ask or tell her, I would give her more time. I was horrible to her, so now I want to repay her. I would give her the time she needed to forgive me and learn to love me.

I'm sure I was already deeply in love with her, but the problem with me was, I used to be a very twisted person, it was hard for me to learn to love like a normal man. Ever since I was young, everyone listened to me and I had control over everyone, so when Jennie go against me and didn't do as she was told, that made me angry and crazy. But I'm trying, I'm trying to change for her, to love her in a gentle way.....)

Back at the mansion, we were sleeping on the bed. I couldn't sleep and kept turning around, my swollen face hurt. Lance was woken up by me and he pulled me into his arms, "Why are you not sleeping?"



I shook my head in his arms and said, "No, my face hurts." Well, it was obvious enough what happened in the hall. His ex-wife slapped me very hard. Now, it was swollen.

Lance reached out his hands and switched on the table lamp beside our bed. He touched my face softly and spoke in a low voice, "Sorry I wasn't able to stop her."

I pushed his chest away, wanting some distance between us. "I can't sleep, I want to watch some shows downstairs, you go to sleep!"

There's also a TV in the room, but if I watch it here, he wouldn't be able to sleep.

Lance took the remote control of the TV in his room and asked me what I wanted to watch, he said he would watch it with me.

"No it's fine, you have work tomorrow, just go to bed. I'll be fine." I said.

Lance sat up from his bed and carried me into his lap. He hugged me from behind and rested his chin on my head

"It's alright, I can survive on only a few hours of sleep. I'll watch it with you, we have never watched a movie together."

I didn't really want to watch movie, I just wanted to go get some fresh air in the garden. But if I told him, he would think that I was trying to avoid him on purpose.

Sometimes I felt like I had already make it very obvious, so I didn't know if Lance really didn't notice, or if he pretended to not know.

He switched the channels aimlessly, asking me what I wanted to watch. Then we agreed on a French movie, it was a semi-romantic movie.

Halfway through the movie, Lance's face turned dark. I knew why, because the movie was about a man who raped a girl, at first she didn't care because she was in love with him, but then after some time of sweet and romantic period together, the girl finally realized that she had to get justice. So she sued him to court no matter how much she used to love him, because what he did to her was too painful.

Lance must have recalled when he raped me, or else he wouldn't be looking so annoyed right now.

He switched off the TV and said, "Let's just sleep."

"Why? I want to finish the movie!" I sighed and pouted.

He turned his back facing me and said, "This movie is very boring."

I sighed and said, "Fine, I'm going to get some water. I'll be right back."

Lance nodded and closed his eyes.

## Chapter 182

I went down and I saw a packet of cigarettes on the living hall table. It must be Lance's. Although he said he would try to reduce smoking for Lexi, but I knew it was going to be hard for him. He liked to smoke and drink.

After drinking the water, I sat on the sofa and picked up the cigarettes. Then I lighted one.

I know I shouldn't due to my condition, but then I still did. Looking at my reflection on the glass window, I saw myself dressed in this sexy night gown it was lacey and a little revealing. With a cigarette in my hand, dressed in this and messy bed hair, I looked really seductive, and a little like a bad woman.

Lance must now have liked my messy hair like this, I thought he preferred when I looked innocent like last time.

But of course, he didn't say anything. But I could slowly feel him treating me A LITTLE better. He has been trying to let me do what I wanted as long as I didn't step over the line.

"What are you doing?" a cold voice sounded from behind me.

I turned around and stared at Lance with seductive eyes, "Smoking. Your cigarette is nice, wanna try?"

He knitted his eyebrow together and said, "Good women don't smoke."

"Well, as you can see I am not a good woman. I've done all the things a bad woman would do. And who told you woman can't smoke?" I smiled.

Lance came near me and snatched the cigarette from my hands. To be honest, I only smoked once, the cigarette was still kind of new. He threw it away, not forgetting to put it out. "I don't care if other women smoke, but you can't, don't forget you have mild chronic bronchitis."

"But you've always made me a bad woman." I argued.

"Jennie, are you trying to fight with me out of nowhere? Since when did I ask you to be a bad woman?"

"You said you and Tiffany were never real husband and wife, but to the world, she is your ex wife. You two had such a huge wedding, yet you told the world yesterday that I am Mrs Mason. They congratulated you, but do you know what they really think of me? A woman who appeared when you were married and even gave birth to your child! What is this if not a bad woman? When your ex wife slapped me this evening, I didn't say anything, because I know I was wrong to be a mistress. This is the truth, you can't just try to sugar coat it and cover it up, acting like nothing happened!"

"Me and Tiffany never even got engaged. We just had a wedding dinner. We were never legally wed." Lance spoke up after a moment of pause.

"What did you say?" I thought I was hallucinating.

"Tiffany and I were never husband and wife, you were never a mistress. This is the truth, I wasn't trying to cover up anything." Lance stared at me while saying this, he looked serious.

"How.....how is that possible?" I didn't believe him.

Tiffany is not from a normal family, she's one of the Abel, so how did Lance fool her around like a kid?

But even if he didn't legally wed her, who knew about this? Only a few of us, the rest of the world still thinks I was the mistress.

"How is it not possible? I will never let you be the mistress, and I will also never marry a woman I do not love. Me and Tiffany agreed on this deal, but in the end she wanted to break the deal. I didn't want to create too much problem with her family, so I paid my price and got out from her family. But now I regret even doing it, I regret listening to grandma and the directors in the company." Lance looked like he really did regret his decision.

Perhaps he knew, even if he didn't legally wed Tiffany, even if it was all just a lie, for some business benefit, it still didn't stop the world from spreading the fact that I was his mistress.

"You didn't legally wed her, what does it have to do with me, I don't care." I said weakly.

Lance nodded his head disappointedly and said, "I know you wouldn't care, because it's me, Lance Mason, so you don't care about me."

Lance then turned around and went up. When he was on the stairs, he stopped and said, "Can you not touch the cigarettes ever again? It's bad for your body. I will also quit. Let's not smoke ever again, hm?"

## Chapter 183

He sounded like he was begging me, pleasing me.....

His sudden soft attitude must have softened my heart for a moment too because the harsh words I was about to throw at him went back down into my throat. I couldn't bring myself to speak those words to him at that moment.

At this moment, I realized we have changed. Lance was different, I was also different. We were not the same anymore.....

I didn't say a single word and he went back up the stairs. I followed behind him and we got on the bed.

I was always impressed by how both of us were able to sleep on the same bed, since we were always mad at each other.

"Lance, can I ask you something?"

"What?"

In the bedroom, it was dim, the yellow lights made the room felt soft and warm.

But the two people in the room were very cold. Heart was cold.

"Last time, when we also slept on the same bed, did you want to choke me to death all the time?"

He used to choke me or pull my hair all the time back then. We were like cats and dogs, always fighting.

He turned to face me and asked, "I should be asking you the same question, did you want to choke me to death? You slapped me like hell yesterday, how did it feel?"

Seems like he was still a little conscious, seeing that he knew I slapped him.

"Not bad, feels good. So you want revenge?" I asked, winking.

He pinched my nose and smiled, "I don't want revenge. You're the type to hold a grudge, I don't want you going around telling people that I abuse you."

"Oh, so you admit that you abuse me?" I asked.

He laid on his back and entwined our fingers together, his thumb softly circling on top of my hands. I remember reading a book which says if a man loves you, he would do things such as entwining your fingers together, play with you hair.....

Yes, I admit Lance had been constantly showing his affection to me through words, telling me that he loves me, but I still didn't feel anything for him at that time.

"Jennie, this is double standard, why can you hit me and I can't hit you? We are even now." Lance said.

What the hell? Even? I don't think so!

"I don't want to talk to you anymore, you always find a way to make everything seem fine in your way." I said.

## Chapter 183

He sounded like he was begging me, pleasing me.....

His sudden soft attitude must have softened my heart for a moment too because the harsh words I was about to throw at him went back down into my throat. I couldn't bring myself to speak those words to him at that moment.

At this moment, I realized we have changed. Lance was different, I was also different. We were not the same anymore.....

I didn't say a single word and he went back up the stairs. I followed behind him and we got on the bed.

I was always impressed by how both of us were able to sleep on the same bed, since we were always mad at each other.

"Lance, can I ask you something?"

"What?"

In the bedroom, it was dim, the yellow lights made the room felt soft and warm.

But the two people in the room were very cold. Heart was cold.

"Last time, when we also slept on the same bed, did you want to choke me to death all the time?"

He used to choke me or pull my hair all the time back then. We were like cats and dogs, always fighting.

He turned to face me and asked, "I should be asking you the same question, did you want to choke me to death? You slapped me like hell yesterday, how did it feel?"

Seems like he was still a little conscious, seeing that he knew I slapped him.

"Not bad, feels good. So you want revenge?" I asked, winking.

He pinched my nose and smiled, "I don't want revenge. You're the type to hold a grudge, I don't want you going around telling people that I abuse you."

"Oh, so you admit that you abuse me?" I asked.

He laid on his back and entwined our fingers together, his thumb softly circling on top of my hands. I remember reading a book which says if a man loves you, he would do things such as entwining your fingers together, play with you hair.....

Yes, I admit Lance had been constantly showing his affection to me through words, telling me that he loves me, but I still didn't feel anything for him at that time.

"Jennie, this is double standard, why can you hit me and I can't hit you? We are even now." Lance said.

What the hell? Even? I don't think so!

"I don't want to talk to you anymore, you always find a way to make everything seem fine in your way." I said.

Lance ignored what I said and pulled me into him further, then he lowered his head on my neck and gave me wet kisses all over.

Every time he kisses me, he looked at me like I was the most beautiful girl in the world, seriously?

His lips slowly moved up to mine and bit my bottom lips, his lifted his gaze and stared at me with lust in his eyes. But to be honest, he has very beautiful eyes.

He bit my lips harder and I gasped in pain, he then shoved his tongue into my mouth and started to conquer my mouth. He knew I would bite him, so he would not put his tongue too deep into my mouth.

He couldn't have sex with me, but this pervert man thought of a new way to satisfy his own sexual needs. So he closed my legs together and raised it up, he made me a "L" position. Then instead of putting himself into me, he thrust in and out of my closed legs, in between my thighs.

The only man who would do this in the middle of the night instead of sleeping is Lance.

The next day when I woke up, Lance Mason was already out, Lexi woke up too.

Whenever Lexi saw me nowadays, she would reach out her hands to me, asking me to carry her. I would say, "Kiss me." And she would kiss my cheeks so that I would carry her, so adorable.

After breakfast, I carried Lexi around, I'm her mother, I should carry and interact with her more.

I was in the playroom with Lexi, playing with her, when the butler came in and handed me my phone, "Mrs Mason, your phone is ringing."

I thanked her and took the phone. It was a stranger's number. It rang for a long time.

I didn't pick up, but it continued ringing. After a long time, I decided to answer the call. A female voice sounded through the phone, she sounded familiar.

"Ms Gomez, do you know who I am?"

Haha.....of course, the woman who slapped me so hard in public. She sounded exceptionally calm today.

"Are you going to apologise?" I asked. I knew she wouldn't, but I still asked anyway.

Tiffany scoffed and said, "Wait for a thousand years for me to apologize, joke."

Crazy bitch.

"Did you call me just to scold me?" I asked.

## Chapter 184

She continued laughing coldly and said, "Nah, I just want to tell you to prepare your own coffin, you're dying soon."

What the hell was she talking about? Was she trying to kill me again? But I have bodyguards around with me wherever I go.

But I still had a bad feeling.

"Tiffany, just shoot whatever you want to say." I was quite panicked, I was afraid. I felt like I was unaware of anything at all.

"Am I not obvious enough? I mean, you are going to die soon. Just in a few days."

And with that, Tiffany hung up her phone. I stared at the screen, feeling terrified. Everyone is afraid of dying, of course I was too.

Tiffany must be plotting something against me, evil enough to kill me.

And I didn't know anything about it at all.

I calmed down and told myself to not go out at all these few days.

I didn't believe Tiffany would be able to touch me.

(Later, I realized it was Lance who wanted me dead, not Tiffany.....)

Niklaus had been chasing for the data he wanted. He was in a hurry.

I went into Lance's study room when he was out. There is a safe box here, it was the same as the one in his other mansion, but then I didn't know if the password was the same. I tried the password but it was wrong.

Then I recalled what Lance Mason told me before: Jennie Gomez, I exposed all of me to you.

I thought about the people he loves the most, his grandma, Leo and Lexi. The password of the safe box is a 6 digit password, so I tried putting their age number accordingly.

I took a deep breath and keyed in the password, the safe box opened with a loud thud and I was so happy. I was right!

I opened it and saw a document. It was the data Niklaus wanted. I didn't know if it was the real one or not, I just snapped and sent it to Niklaus.

Then I put it back into the safe box. I quickly locked it back and went out of the room. I was really scared that he might come back suddenly.

Lance wanted to show me that he really treats me like family, he took out the CCTV from the room.

Of course if I didn't know, I wouldn't have stolen his data. I checked the room very thoroughly already.

I sent it to Niklaus and told him I wasn't sure if it was the real data.

He replied me: Thanks!

Lance invested a lot of money into this project, I figured this would

really make him go mad.

After doing such a thing, I actually felt no remorse. But when Lexi came and asked for a hug, I started to feel guilty. Looking at her beautiful face, I felt like I was the one who was ruining her family.

I carried her up and kissed her cheeks repeatedly. "Baby, trust mommy, I will always be by your side and love you!"

"You're sentimental today." Lance said, while taking off his coat and throwing it on the sofa. He then walked towards us.

Thankfully I was quick, or else I wouldn't have the chance to steal the data.

My heart was beating like crazy, must be because I just did something bad.

I looked up at him and acted innocent, "Why are back so early?"

Lance bent down and kissed me on my cheek. Then he gave Lexi a kiss too. "I miss you two."

Lexi was very happy and excited to see Lance. she put out her hands, signalling Lance to carry her. It was obvious this little girl preferred her father more. But it made sense, Lance was the one who raised her, and he spent way more time with her.

Lance hold onto her and spoke in a baby's voice, "Lexi, call mommy. Ma-miiiiii."

Lexi followed her father's pronunciation and tried, "Mo..... mmy."

Lance was excited and shouted, "Jennie! She called you mommy! Quickly praise her!"

I smiled, it was the first time she called my mommy. "Lexi, you're such a smart little girl come here, let mommy carry you, huh?"

"Mommy!" Lexi seemed to be excited that she learnt a new word. She kept calling me mommy.

Three of us went to her playroom, Lance sat down on the floor covered with carpet and started to look at his phone. He must have a lot of things to do.

I sat down with Lexi in my arms and started to play with her. I taught her some basic ABCs and taught her to call me mommy, and call Lance daddy.

After a while, Lance kept his phone in his pocket and said, "Lexi, come give daddy a kiss!"

Lexi ignored him and played with me. I smirked and scoffed at Lance. Lance rolled his eyes and went to take a shower. It was quite a peaceful day with him, excluding the part when I stole his data..



## Chapter 185

I told Lance Mason that I was really bored at home.

He knitted his eyebrows and asked me, "What are you planning again?"

His expressions were like as if I was going to plot something stupid again.

"I'm just bored! I have nothing to do, I want to go work. I can't just stay at home everyday like that!" I explained.

Lance immediately rejected my request without hesitation. I actually predicted his response, so I wasn't surprised.

"I'm just informing you, not asking for your permission." I rolled my eyes.

Lance gave me an irritated look and said, "I said no, means no. we are getting married soon, don't go out anymore. It's dangerous for you out there, and you know it!"

Lance was always acting like a dictator, if he said no, I had to obey him. But too bad I wasn't the old me anymore.

"Your opinion doesn't matter to me. I don't care."

After a long pause, he surrendered, "Fine, but you have to work beside me, that's the maximum I can allow. Don't force me to do anything you will regret."

It was my intention to work beside him, I wasn't that brave to work alone, I was scared for my own life too.

I acted like I wasn't very satisfied and gave him a small response after a short pause, "Well, fine."

Lance scoffed, "You don't seem very satisfied with my decision?"

I rolled my eyes at him and said, "Do you need me to be thankful? Since when was I ever satisfied after coming into your family?"

Lance glared at me and said, "Don't forget who raised you and gave you everything you needed to grow up!"

Strange, why was Lance acting so riled up today? Normally, he would try to be soft to me, to show me that he loves me, but why was he acting so fierce today?

Then, I finally realized when we started to have breakfast.

When we were eating our own meals, the TV in his dining hall was showing the news. The news reporter was excitingly reporting about the new project that the Sands' Company started, they invented a new type of eco friendly biotechnology, and it would be released to the market the next day.

I took a peek at Lance's face. It was obvious that the data I sent to Niklaus was right, and Niklaus was very quick to make a move. He was one step quicker than Lance.

I lowered down my head and stared at my own food, forcing myself to eat. From the corner of my eyes, I saw Lance threw down his fork and

spoon onto the table.

"Are you happy now?" Lance's tone was cold. Very, very cold.

I pretended to be calm and cool and looked up at his face. "What are you talking about?"

I didn't want to admit, what can he do? He knew very well what I did, but as long as I don't admit, he can't do anything to me, since he said he 'loves' me.

He stared at me with clouded eyes and said, "I won't be going to work this morning, we have the whole morning until noon time for you to explain to me how you guessed my safe box password. Leo used to tell me you are a smart woman, I didn't believe him. Seems like I underestimated you huh. Don't judge a book by its cover, they say."

Of course I wouldn't admit that I stole his data no matter what, his password was way too easy to guess, but I kept that thought to myself.

I continued my innocent act, "What are you saying? I don't understand at all, what password?"

Lance laughed coldly. "Don't try to deny."

He stood up and grabbed my wrists. "What are you doing?!" I exclaimed.

"To check the CCTV in the study room!" he yelled.

## Chapter 186

And with that, he pulled me up the stairs. I started to panic. I was sure there wasn't any CCTV in the room! Or did he install a small one? Oh no.....

"I really have no idea what you are talking about! Are you going to blame again, like the time when your grandma said I pushed her down the stairs? Are you going to send me to jail again? For something that I didn't do? I don't care anymore. You said you love me, well your love is bull f\*cking shit!" I yelled, trying to act angry, but deep down I was afraid.

Lance gave me a doubting look, but he couldn't do anything. I knew he was just trying to scare me into admitting, I knew there isn't any CCTV at all. Of course I wouldn't admit anything! I didn't want to go to jail again!

Lance's hands balled into fists. Suddenly, I could feel the airflow beside my ear. He punched the wall beside me. It scared the hell out of me.

Lance gritted his teeth and forced these words out of his clenched jaw, "Jennie Gomez, didn't you know this was all Leo's blood sweat and tears?! Didn't you say you love him? Is that how you show your love to him?!"

Yea, I knew it, he didn't have any evidence. He was trying to bluff me about the CCTV.

Haha..... why did I feel so good for doing this? He's done so many terrible things to me, this is only the thing I did to him. I did only ONE thing to him.

"Lance, why are you blaming innocent people! What did I ever do to you? Show me the evidence!"

I knew I sounded like a bitch for speaking like that, but who the hell cares? His grandma wronged me, his family wronged me, Leo wronged me, he wronged me! I had the right to be this way!

I couldn't forget everything, how could anyone? After all that I've been through, the last thing I could do was to forgive and forget until I make them pay for what they did to me!

I always thought one day Leo was going to save me, but what I got was: Jennie, please stop and listen to brother, I'm disappointed in you.

So who cares if this was Leo's blood sweat and tears? Not me!

Lance reached out his hands and wanted to choke me again. I said it before and I'll say it again, we would only hurt each other if we stay by each other's side.

"I'll dare you to choke me to death Lance Mason! I didn't do it! Even if you kill me, I still won't admit!" I shouted at him before he could touch me.

Without any proof, I would not admit!

He put down his hands and sighed, "Jennie, you win."

What?

Then, he turned around and went into his room. Did I win? Haha.....

After a few days I only realized that he lost a lot of money because of what I did.

But he's still rich, right?

It has been a month at this point, since I started to recover my body, the doctor said we couldn't have sex for a month, and by this time, it was already over a month.

Lance let out his anger all onto me sexually.

The next day when I wanted to go work, it was hard for me to even walk. This time, Lance was smart, he knew to prevent inflammation due to his hardcore intercourse, he remembered to apply ointment on me after sex.

Yesterday night, he wanted one more time, but I couldn't take it anymore and said, "You aren't young anymore, you need to hold up and take some rest."

I was very tired too, he had been f\*cking me for the past few days non-stop!

Lance smirked and said, "I don't care, I'm still healthy and full of energy." And with that, he slid himself into me with one push, stretching me down there.

When would this life stop, I always wondered.

He always worked long hours, going to different offices and sites, how could he be so full of energy at night? He always wanted more than 2 times!

There was one time when he was extremely horny and we did it 7 times per night!

"Lance, enough. My legs are sore already!" I said to him when he wanted to go for the 8th time. It was already near 6am in the morning.

Lance must have realized the time too, plus the amount of times he did me, so he stopped and put a pillow under my butt.

"What are you doing?" I was confused.

He explained, "I don't want to waste my semen, or else it would have been a waste of my energy!"

I understood after he explained. He wanted me to get pregnant. "Huh, waste of effort."

## Chapter 187

I accidentally blurted it out. I had been taking contraceptive pills, of course I wouldn't get pregnant, but I shouldn't have said it.....

"What do you mean?" Lance asked, raising an eyebrow.

I regret not thinking before I spoke.

"Nothing, my body isn't as healthy as it used to be, so I won't be able to get pregnant easily anymore. That's why I said it would be a waste of effort."

My heart was beating very fast, I was afraid he would be suspicious of me.

He laid beside me, and put his arms underneath my neck. I never understood why girls would like it when boys do this, it doesn't feel comfortable at all!

"I would be free after 2 days, let's go to get a body check-up. I want you to get pregnant with my son. I don't want my son to suffer like Lexi, so I need to make sure you are healthy."

Lance wanted to bring me to the hospital, but that would mean they would know I was taking the pills!

I was worried, but I wasn't scared of what he would do to me, because he didn't punish me like abusing me after he knew what I did with Leo's data for the eco-biotechnology. I was just afraid that he would keep me captive in the house and try to make me pregnant with his son. He would make sure I stop taking the pills if he found out. Lexi was a surprise for me, I didn't want anymore kids.

"What check-up, I don't want to go! I hate going to the hospital. Lance, don't blame me for treating you this way. You were the one who disrespected me first, so this is the best way I can treat you." I said.

Lance sat up from the bed and stared at me. He smirked, "Treat me this way? You stole my data, worked with my opponent company, and even flirted with my neighbour. Are you trying to cheat on me next?"

Lance said I flirted with his neighbour? So, to him, smiling and saying hi to his neighbour means flirting? How jealous can a man get? I was just saying hi to Anthony because I brought Lexi out for a walk, he greeted me. Of course I should greet back right? Is this Lance's definition of flirting?

Pathetic.

"You're spitting nonsense again. You don't even know who actually stole your data, you should work harder to find the thief and stop blaming me." I laughed and said.

Then, I put on an innocent face.

Lance pinched my chin with his fingers and scoffed, "Not bad, you're becoming more like an actress day by day. Don't blame me when one day my love for you vanishes, you're giving me no choice!"

"Wow, so it seems Mr Mason still has love for me. If you didn't say,

judging from your actions I still thought your feelings for me vanished long time ago."

I moved his hand away from me turned around, my back facing him. My thighs were sticky, my body was sticky with sweat too, but I didn't want to even take a shower. I'm dirty anyways.

Lance has always been a very clean person. He got up and went to take a shower.

He was done in a few minutes time, seems like he just went to took a quick shower. He pulled the covers away from me, revealing my naked body. He then carried me up bridal style and brought me to the bathroom.

He put me into the bathtub and said, "Take a bath, dirty ass."

Wow, so I was a dirty ass to him.

He sat down inside the bathtub behind me and hugged me from the back. The water was now splashing onto both of us. He rested his chin on top of my head and said, "Jennie, I want to live a peaceful life with you, you know?"

I wasn't blind, of course I knew he had been trying to live a peaceful life with me, but I just couldn't, with him, it's a no.

Marriage involves 2 people, it cannot be one sided.

"Oh, okay." I answered shortly.

He turned my body around to face me and raised my chin so that my eyes met his. He spoke emotionally, "Look at your gorgeous eyes, it's not as bright as it used to be anymore. Actually, I went to your university to see you when you were 18."

"What?!" Lance said he came to see me when I was 18, it was during my first year of university. He flew all the way to come see me?

Why did he come to see me? For what?

"Nothing, ignore it." Lance shook his head and said. Then we got out of the tub and went to sleep. It has been a long day.

I recalled the day when Leo came to see me, he said he might have seen his brother around, but he didn't know for sure. I still laughed at Leo and told him he brother wouldn't fly all the way here to see us, even if he knew Leo was coming to see me.

(LANCE POV: Looking at the sleeping woman beside me, I couldn't sleep at all. Jennie, you wouldn't believe it too, because I couldn't believe I actually flew to your university to see you. I thought I was going crazy. I didn't know why I went there, I didn't know who do took for when I arrived.

## Chapter 188

I walked around the campus aimlessly, then I saw you. You and Leo. I saw your smile, it was such an innocent and bright smile. I could see Leo Mason reflected in your eyes. I was jealous, I was so envious of Leo. I thought, if only you had smiled at me so warmly once in all these years, maybe, just maybe I wouldn't have treated you so badly. If you had smiled at me once, maybe I would have softened my heart towards you, I wouldn't have been so cold blooded.

I started to be like a stalker, following you and Leo all the time in secret. Leo found out and I went back from your campus.

After many years later, I only realized why I did something so strange, it was because, there was always a voice in my heart, telling me it was your birthday, telling me that the day I went to see you was the day you officially became an adult. A poor looking girl finally grew into a beautiful, gorgeous young lady. I thought, why not go and have a look at her.....

And so, I flew to your campus. After seeing you that day perhaps I didn't want to admit or remember why I did this, I forgot about it totally,

I forgot temporarily about the things that I did.

I was very sure it was you who stole the data from my safebox. Leo told me before, that you are an extremely smart woman. You started working part time while studying in high school, and you were even able to get into the best university. Leo said you could easily remember everything you see for a time period after looking at it once. I knew how you were able to guess my password, because you knew me well since then.

I thought my password was hard enough, but she was still able to unlock it. I could have installed at CCTV, but I didn't. I could have changed my lock to a finger print lock, but I didn't. I really wanted to treat you like family. I didn't know why I didn't do those things to protect my own data, maybe subconsciously I was trying to test you?

You didn't love me, but Leo thought you still loved him. Seems like he was also a fool to believe that you loved him still.

He had been doing this research for a long time, even when you guys were still together, you would know. Yet, you still chose to give it to Niklaus, how cold blooded have you become, Jennie? I didn't know if I should happy, because at least now it proved that you didn't love Leo Mason anymore.

When you called out his name on bed, I knew you did it on purpose, because your lids were moving, you weren't really deep asleep. When you used to shout and cry for him long time ago, I knew it was sincere that time, I could feel how painful and hurt you were. But it all changed, I didn't know when, but I knew you didn't love him anymore.

Since when did you stop loving him? Did you really hate all of the Mason's so much? Even when we have a child, you still weren't able to

let go of the hatred?

Jennie, you've changed. I couldn't see any kindness in your eyes anymore, I couldn't find any innocence in you anymore. You were not the girl that remained kind and nice even though life gets hard anymore.

Now, you've become cruel, you're full of plots. You knew I hate it when you interact with any men, but you still flirted with Anthony. You smiled at him, laughed with him..... you were carrying Lexi in your arms that time, yet you flirted with another man, how would a child think?

She's growing up slowly, Jennie. Couldn't you be nice to me, to the family, for Lexi? Didn't they always say mothers are willing to sacrifice anything for their child? Why couldn't you?

You were always thinking of ways to make me angry, to plot against me. You didn't think about the child, the family. What would happen to a child who grows up in such a family environment? The both of us weren't able to grow up in a complete and healthy family, why couldn't you make it possible for our Lexi?

I thought with Lexi with us, you would start to settle down and be a good wife, a good mother.

I was wrong, I was so wrong. If one child wasn't enough, is 2 enough? 3 children? Would you stop all the things you're plotting against me for three children? I didn't really want a son, I just said that as an excuse. I just wanted more children so you would become more responsible as a mother. I wanted to use our children as a way to keep you by my side.

Jennie, tell me. I really don't know anymore. What should I do to keep you by my side? I can give you anything, anything in the world, but I will never let you go. I will never let you leave my side!

Jennie, could you stop? You must have wanted to stop all this punish and abusing life right? I didn't want to hurt you or threaten you anymore, but you were always trying to challenge my limits, challenge my love for you.

Jennie, please. I love you. I don't care if you trust me or not, but I love you, sincerely! But I wasn't sure if I was able to continue loving you, the you who had become cruel, full of plots and cold blooded. I didn't know if my love for this you, would be able to keep up. If one day I stopped loving you, your life would turn to hell again.....)

Hi readers, sorry for the slow update of story these few days! I have been extremely busy! I will update more tomorrow! Please stay tuned for more! Finally, Jennie's character changed from an innocent girl to a cold-blooded girl, and Lance is beginning to soften down, but there will be more change of development in characters in the future chapters! Thanks for the support. Happy Reading!

Reward

400

Comments

2

04:20 

My Paranoid Lover

83.7%



## Chapter 189

The next day when we went to work, I wore a cute revealing dress but still formal.

Lance scoffed and said, "Are you going to work? Or are you going to a club?"

I ignored him and we went back to work.

We reached the office and saw Lawrence in the lift.

He stared at our holdings hands awkwardly and pretended like he didn't know me. He only greeted Lance. "Hi, boss."

Lance nodded and smiled at him, gripping onto my hands tighter, showing Lawrence that I was now his woman.

I flash Lawrence a smile and asked, "Hey, you forgot who I am just after a few months of not seeing each other?"

Lawrence smiled awkwardly and said, "No, sorry. Of course I remember you!"

"How do I look today?" I asked flirtatiously. I could see Lance's face turning dark.

"As pretty as ever." Lawrence said. He quickly got out of the lift after that.

Lance's gripped became tighter and he pulled me into his office as soon as we reached his floor.

As soon as we entered his office, he bang the door shut and inserted his hands under my dress.

I got mad and asked, "Lance Mason! What are you doing?"

"Do you!" Lance said though his gritted teeth.

"Are you out of your goddamn mind?!"

I struggled hard under his touch. He pushed me against the wall and used his long legs to press against me, I couldn't move. He pinned my wrists on top of my head with one hand.

"What's the point of struggling, huh? You wore such revealing dress out and even flirted with another man, are you trying to seduce him? Prove it to me right now how slutty you can be!"

Lance's gentleman façade was gone, but I could actually feel him trying to control himself, because he would straight away rape me if this was a few months ago.

"Haha..... if you can't control a woman's heart, you can't control her." I said coldly.

"What do you mean?" Lance stared at me and asked.

"I mean what I just said! Do you even really plan to marry me?"

"What the hell are you talking about? Of course I want to marry you!" Lance yelled.

"Aren't you afraid that I will cheat on you?" I saw Lance's eyes turn bloody red, but he controlled himself. I couldn't believe he didn't slap me!

Instead of letting out his anger on me like he always used to, he smashed all of the stuff on his desk onto the carpeted floor. Thankfully it didn't make a lot of noise.

Then he pulled me into his private room inside his office.

I knew what he wanted to do. He wanted me rape me, yep Lance was still the same.

But what happened next shocked me.

He said, "I'm really angry right now, and I'm really jealous of the way you treated Lawrence and even Anthony. I want to make you mine, now! Can I?!" he yelled, but he was asking for my permission! Oh my god.....

I didn't struggle from his grip, I just stood there. We glared at each other, him waiting for my approval while me not saying a single word.

Then I shook my head. I thought he wouldn't care and would do me anyway but he didn't. he shrugged my hand away and sat down on his sofa. He sighed and close his eyes.

What? Just like that? Lance Mason was asking for my permission?

After a while, he fell asleep. Ha, what a boy. Then his phone ding with a notification.

I saw an email and quickly took a look at it. My eyes widened in shock.

I knew businessmen are never clean, but what Lance did was..... very bad.

He was very dirty when it comes to business!

Hi, sorry again its me. I know I have repeated the storyline a little so now I will be changing to a better storyline, no more revenge or rape from Jennie and Lance, yay! I have seen your feedback and I will improve, thanks for all the comments!

## Chapter 190

Lance was still asleep, but I didn't know what to do after looking at his email, it was 'read' now, not 'unread'. I was so worried that I deleted this inbox email. Then I put his phone back at the same spot on the desk.

Lance tried to escape paying tax. He paid the tax for his local businesses, but for his international businesses, he had been transferring his funds and profit to different banks in all around the world, and he hired some very professional accountants to help fake some of his invoices.

But what could I do with this information? I thought I was done with plotting against him..... fine, since I couldn't really do anything anymore as I have deleted his email. maybe I would just tell Niklaus? But what could he do without evidence? Ugh.....

Lance woke up after an hour. I pretended that I also just woke up and said with a husky voice, "So tired!"

Lance scoffed. "Are you going to be this tired once you cheat on me?"

I rolled my eyes at him, "I'm not even your wife or girlfriend, is that considered cheating on you even if I do so?"

He came and patted my face with the back of his hands, "You, Jennie Gomez, are the mother of my child. This naturally makes you my wife. We just haven't really gotten married. You better stop flirting with other men, or else."

"What else do you know other than threatening me?" I said.

"You know what else I know, in bed." Lance smirked.

I rolled my eyes once again and ignored him. He suddenly came over to me and hold me in his arms.

"I'm not so angry anymore, I calmed down, don't worry." He said, lowering his head onto my neck. He took a sniff and started to give me wet kisses on my neck. "I'm just kissing you, don't get me wrong." He added.

With his other hand, he started to touch my breasts. Thankfully we were in his private office room, or else someone might see us.

Although I didn't feel turned on, but his actions were starting to make me a little wet. He had changed, he was gentler to me, softer and even more passionate. I could feel his change.

When he pinched my sensitive spot on my breasts, I gasped. My threw my head backwards, accidentally allowing him more access to my neck. I felt him sucking my neck, he must be giving me hickies.

After a short while of one-sided make out session, he stopped and adjusted both out outfits. I stood there, staring at him. Yes, Lance had definitely changed, he's different. I didn't know why I was suddenly having second thoughts of him. But I was sure he's become different.

He then asked me what I wanted to eat.

I said, "I don't want to go out. Look at the red marks on my neck! What would people think if they see it?"

Lance smirked and said, "Yeah, but don't act like you didn't enjoy it."

"I did not! At all." I blushed. What the hell? Why was I being like this? Since when did I start to blush at him?

I sat down on his seat and put both my legs onto his desk. Then I started scrolling my Instagram.

"Is that how a woman should sit?" Lance seemed displeased.

"Tsk." I clicked my tongue in annoyance and ignored him.

"Hi, I would like to order two sets of Chicken Chop plus French fries please. Please have someone deliver it to my office, thank you." I heard Lance ordering food.

"Didn't you say you wanted to eat out?" I asked, still scrolling my feed.

"Yeah, but you didn't want to! I don't want to eat alone!" he whined. Wow, Lance was whining.

The food arrived. The portion was huge so I ate only half.

I took one last bite and burped out loud. Lance glared at me with disgust and said, "Ew."

"I'll just eat yours too," He added, then he took my food and eat it.

I widened my eyes in shock! Lance Mason was eating my leftover food! I felt like my impression on him was slowly changing. I never expected him, Lance Mason, the rich and powerful man, would eat my leftover food! He would never do that if we were still in the past.

He finished my food and looked up, he gave me a confused face and asked, "Why are you staring at me like that?"

I stuttered. "Why are you eating my leftover food?"

"What's wrong with that?" he asked me back.

"You don't feel disgusting at all? Eating my saliva and all?" I was stunned, really stunned.

Lance answered me casually, "What disgusting? I'm eating my wife's leftover food and saliva. Plus I have eaten your saliva so many times already, when we kiss, remember?"

Lance looked very natural, he didn't look like he was pretending or acting when he said it. He acted as if we were an old couple, used to this.

I lowered down my head. My hands were playing with the edge of my dress. I was feeling something weird in my chest, and I kinda felt like there were some butterflies in my stomach.....

No, I didn't want him to be like this! I didn't want to be touched, I didn't want to start feeling anything for him! Why was I feeling some type of way when all he did was only eating my leftover food and my saliva?



## Chapter 191

Lance wanted to do his work and I left his office. Anthony actually asked me to meet him in the mall, but he texted me an hour ago.

I didn't know that if Anthony Smith was still in the mall or not. But I hope to see him again.

The instinct told me that Anthony Smith isn't some normal neighbour. He was Lance Mason's neighbour in Denmark. And now that we were in California, he was still his neighbour.

I knew Lance Mason will have his men guarding outside of this mall, but not inside of the mall.

So, I was not afraid that Lance Mason would know I met Anthony Smith here.

I walked around in the mall and I couldn't seem to find where Anthony Smith was.

I pulled out my phone and texted him.

I asked: Where are you? I am out here, come now.

Anthony Smith replied: I thought you said that you couldn't come out?

I replied: Just come and meet me. I don't have much time.

Lance Mason wouldn't let me out for too long. He will come and find me after two hours.

Lance Mason didn't like me being social with any other man. If he finds out that I met another man here, I wouldn't be able to sleep tonight, but then, he might ask for my permission again? Hmm.

Anthony Smith asked me to go up to the 3rd floor and meet him at a café that is near the elevator.

When I reached the café, I saw that he was already sitting inside the café.

He waved his hand at me and said, "It is difficult to meet you, you know?"

I smiled and said, "That's how my life is."

Anthony ordered me a latte when I just sat down.

"How do you know that I like latte? You know me well." I said, acting like I was being casual.

Anthony pushed his glasses up with his finger. He looked like a gentleman but I knew not all gentlemen are kind.

"You must be joking. I don't know you that well. It was because my ex-wife likes to drink latte. So, I order you a cup of latte, but if you don't like it you can change another one." He said and waved at the waiter.

I quickly waved at the waiter and told the waiter it's okay.

"I like latte too. I didn't expect that you were married. I thought you were single."

"I was married for a few years. But unfortunately, my wife died

because of illness." Anthony said and he looked upset. Looks like he loves his wife very much.

"Sorry for bringing that up." I apologized.

He shook his head and said, "It's okay. It's in the past."

We sat face to face in silence and that was very awkward.

"You didn't ask me out to just talk, right? We don't know each other, what can we talk about?"

He shook his head and said, "Of course not."

"What do you want to talk about then?"

He looked at me and said, "Do you remember someone whose name is Rupert Robinson?"

I nodded and said, "He worked with Lance Mason before. But didn't end up good. What I know is that he is in the jail now, again."

I knew by instinct that Anthony Smith wanted to talk about Lance Mason with me.

"You didn't mention that the both of you had worked together before." Anthony Smith said.

## Chapter 192

"Yes, but it didn't end up good too." I shrugged.

Anthony Smith laughed and nodded, "Expected."

"I can help you though." He said after a few seconds of pause.

"I am happy that we agree on the same thing, Mr. Smith."

"Just call me Anthony. That's how my wife used to call me."

"I am not that close to you."

He smiled at me and I was frustrated.

"What are you laughing at?"

"Have I ever told you that you look like my wife?" I was speechless.

"And?"

"I wanted to help you. I want to help you escape from Lance Mason."

Anthony Smith said he wanted to help me.

I would believe it if I was a three years old child.

"I don't believe you. Why would you help me? Is it because I look like your wife?"

He heard what I said and pulled out a file from his bag.

He handed me the file and said, "Inside is my wife's photo. You can have a look."

I opened the file and when I saw the photo, my eyes widened in shock.

The woman in the photo looks just like me.

People wouldn't be able to differentiate me and his wife.

"Is this your wife?" I asked.

I even thought that Anthony Smith was fooling me with some photoshoot pictures.

He nodded his head and said, "Yes, that's my wife."

"She looks just like me. It's impossible to look so alike when we are not blood related."

My hands were shaking, I couldn't believe that there was someone who looked like me.

"That's because you two are sisters. Sisters from a different mother." Anthony Smith said.

I was surprised by what he just said.

I had no idea that I had a sibling out there. I never thought that I would have another family member in this world.

"Why would I believe you?"

He pointed at his wife in the picture and said, "Because you look just like each other."

"Why would I believe what you said? You want to help me just because I am your wife's sister? Your wife didn't even know I exist, you don't have to help me."



We were just strangers to each other.

"My wife died because of Leukaemia. She dies in my embrace because we couldn't find a suitable marrow for her. She knew that you exist but when I finally found you, she already passed away. She told me to take care of you before she died. You have already left Lance Mason when I found you. I knew you went to Switzerland and Germany, and you were living your own life, you were happy. So, I didn't show up. But now that you are back to Lance Mason and I know you don't like it at all, I want to help you. I want to fulfil my wife's last wish. Otherwise, I won't come all the way from Singapore to here."

"You're from Singapore? Why do you look like us, not Asian?"

Anthony chuckled and said, "Because both my parents are Americans, but I was born and raised in Singapore for a few years until I was 15 and moved back here."

"Oh.....How old will she be if she is still alive?" I asked, shifting my attention back to his wife.

Reward

400

Comments

1

## Chapter 193

I wanted to know more about her.

"She would be 30 this year. She was adopted by a Singaporean. We met in Singapore, strange that she was your sister but she appeared in Singapore. After she fell sick, I have been looking for her family but your father died years ago and her mother too. So, you are her only family in this world. But she passed away right after I finally found you."

He looked like he was in pain.

"I hope that I could visit her grave if I got any chance." I said.

I caught some weird feelings for the sister I have never met.

I bet that she was a very kind woman. Otherwise she wouldn't have told Anthony to take care of me.

"Her grave is in Singapore. I can bring you there if you want. She will be very happy to see you." Anthony Smith said.

I nodded. I will go visit her one day.

"Let's not talk about this first. Tell me your situation now, let's see how I can help you. I don't know much about your relationship with him, but I heard that you weren't happy with him."

"I just want to have a better life in the future. Stop all of these and live a better life, happily."

"Do you have any plans?" Anthony asked.

"I don't have any."

"You need to be stronger, Jennie." He said.

I nodded and I was curious why Anthony Smith acted like he didn't know me when we first met.

"I remembered the first time we met, why would you act like you don't know me?"

Anthony Smith didn't give me any response, maybe he was surprised by my question.

"The first time we met? That's not the first time we meet, I have met you several times before. And to answer your question about why I acted like I don't know is to test you."

"Test what?" I asked.

"Everything." Anthony said.

There was no use asking more questions so I stopped asking.

"Are you interested in working for me?" He took a sip of his coffee and asked.

"What?" Why would I want to work for him? Lance Mason wouldn't agree too.

"Work for me and you will stand at the same height as Lance Mason." He looked very serious.

I was moved by his words, I wanted to know how it felt to be on the same height as Lance Mason.

"Are you moved?" He knew what I was thinking.

"Indeed, but....."

I didn't get to finish my sentences when Anthony asked, "But what? Are you afraid that Lance Mason won't agree?"

I nodded after I heard what he said.

"You still want to take revenge on him when he doesn't want you to, isn't it?" He said.

"Please give me some time to think about this. I need to sort something out."

He was right that I wanted to be in the same level as Lance, powerful and rich, so that he wouldn't bully me anymore. But he was wrong at one thing, I'm sick of revenge. I didn't want any revenge anymore.....

"I will give you one day to think about it. Give me your answer this time tomorrow. If you can't even make a decision on your own, I suggest you to give up to take revenge on Lance Mason."

He was right. I hadn't done anything after I was back to Lance Mason's side. I just stole some experiment data from him and it made him lose a lot of money. Other than that, I haven't done anything. But I was already satisfied with what I did, Lance lost a huge, huge amount of money. Yet he didn't punish me in anyway, wait, was I catching feelings? NO! I should not!

I nodded at him.

After Anthony left, I stood alone at the corridor in the mall looking at people walking here and there.

## Chapter 194

Lance Mason came up to me and tapped my shoulder, "What are you looking at?"

I turned around and looked at him calmly, "I was just looking at the people downstairs. You see, they have their own things to do."

"They are just here to eat and shop, what more can they do?" Lance said while looking down with me.

He didn't know what I meant.

I shook my head and said, "That's not what I meant."

"What do you want to say? Just tell me straight away." He said impatiently.

"Nothing. Let's eat some good food and buy something." I grabbed his arm.

He looked happy when I grabbed his arm.

"Didn't you say that you want to buy heels?" He asked.

"Shoes here are expensive. I want to ask your opinion before I use your money to buy it."

I said. I couldn't believe I just said that!

Shoes in this mall are really expensive. I couldn't seem to find any shoes which cost less than four digits.

"I have never scolded you for using too much money, have I?"

Lance Mason is very rich and he will give me anything that can be bought by money if I want it. But I never want his money. I was never a gold-digger.

"That's the problem with you men. You don't know that we women want to look good for you."

"You want to look good for me?" Lance Mason looked at me and looked like he didn't believe what I said.

I shrugged and said, "We are getting married soon. You are my husband and I am your wife. Is there any problem that I want to look good for my husband?"

"No problem." Lance said.

"What you said just now doesn't have a problem. It is you, who has a problem." He said after he stopped for a few seconds.

"What do you want me to do for real? You said that I am not a responsible wife and when I choose to be one, you said that I have a problem."

Lance patted my head and said, "If you really want me to be happy. Do something for me and don't speak."

There was one shortcoming of Lance Mason, he would ask for more when you started to treat him well.

"I will be good for you as long as you don't restrict my freedoms."

What I meant was that if you treat me well, I would be good for you

too.

"What do you want to say for real?" He pulled me to him.

"Nothing. I just feel bored, I want to go out and work."

I said acting like I suddenly came up with this idea.

He knitted his eyebrows when he heard what I said, "Didn't I tell you to work for me? What more do you want?"

"Staying by your side every day doesn't count as work. You had ripped my clothes off on the first day of work. That's not work." I said sarcastically.

Lance Mason placed his hands on my shoulder and said, "Don't you think you have asked too much, Jennie?"

I shook my head and said, "I don't think so. I am a human; I have the right to be independent. You said I asked too much but you are the one who restrict my every movement. I won't listen to you if you treat me like that. I don't think that this is the right way to treat me well."

Lance Mason sighed after he heard what I said, he let go of my shoulder and said, "I wanted to give you more freedom, but do you think you deserve that? You would run away from me. I am not brave enough to give you the freedom you want. I don't want you to leave me."

Reward

400

Comments

0

## Chapter 195

I needed to explain myself when it comes to the topic of running away. How on earth do people run away without a passport and money?

"Now you tell me, how can I run away without a passport? Your men would have stopped me when I hadn't even reached the airport. You just want to control me, stop finding excuses for your action." I said angrily.

He didn't give me any response and I assumed that what I said was the truth he wanted to hide from me. He just wanted to control me.

"So, you want more freedom? You want to be free?" he asked, knitting his eyebrows together.

"I just want you to stop manipulating my life. Don't let your guard follow me everywhere I go and don't stop me from doing what I want to do."

"The reason why I have guards following you is because I want to protect you. You know Tiffany Abel wants to hurt you. I just want to make sure that you are safe." Lance Mason explained.

"Really? Didn't your guard tell you where I go, what I do, who I meet every time? Aren't you watching every movement of mine?" I said fearlessly.

"If you want to think like that, go ahead then."

"I....."

"Okay, quit lying. If I am not wrong, you must have met someone just now, what did he/she tell you? You wouldn't be talking about freedom with me out of the blue. That's why I said you don't deserve to have your freedom; I should let the guard follow you everywhere you go and never leave you alone." He said impatiently.

He pulled his phone out and called someone.

"I want to check all the CCTV records of this mall from 2 to 3 pm and from the 3rd to 7th floor. I want to know what a girl who is in her twenties, wearing a black dress is doing at that time."

"You are shameless, Lance Mason!" I said angrily.

He grabbed my wrist tightly and said, "I am shameless or you are? My patience is getting thinner now."

"So what?!" I looked at him with anger raging in my eyes.

"Nothing. I am just warning you not to cross the line, Jennie Gomez."

He pulled me into the elevator.

We were alone in the elevator and he pressed me against the wall.

"What do you want to do?" I asked.

He looked just like the old him. And it scared me a lot like the old time.

"I almost forgot that you know how to be afraid, Jennie. You thought that I wouldn't do anything to you now so you keep crossing the line. Do

you think I am that stupid? I wouldn't mind being like the old Lance Mason that you are afraid of if you keep doing this."

His fingers pinched my chin tightly and said.

"If you want to be the old Lance Mason, go ahead then. I will never be the old Jennie Gomez again." He tightened his grip after he heard what I said.

"Tell me who you met and what you guys talked about and I will consider forgiving you. Otherwise, do not blame me for being hard on you." He threatened me, but he was giving me a chance to explain myself before punishing me.

"You will know everything after you check the CCTV record!"

"I want you to f\*cking tell me!" He grabbed a fist full of my hair and pulled onto it, but he wasn't hard.

Lance Mason's phone rang out of sudden. He stared at me after he let go of my hair. I didn't know who called him but he looked angrier after he hung the phone up.

Reward

400

Comments

0

## Chapter 196

I was being pulled by him into the car. He kicked the driver out and drove the car himself. He drove so fast that I thought I was going to throw up.

When we arrived at the house, he dragged me to the bedroom and threw me onto the bed. I thought he was going to have sex with me.

I gave up fighting against him because I knew there was no use.

He looked at me angrily and started to unbuckle his belt.

He pulled his belt off and swung it in the air. The sound of the belt hitting the air scared the hell out of me!

I never thought that he would do this to me ever.

"Lance Mason, you dare to....."

He didn't let me finish my sentence and hit the bed with his belt. I was so scared that I started to shiver.

"Now you tell me, why wouldn't I dare to hit you? You f\*cking cheated on me! I have warned you for so many times not to trigger me yet you choose to ignore my words! I think that I need to teach you a lesson today. I have been trying to control myself, telling me to not do anything you wouldn't like! But you f\*cking cheated on me! I CANNOT forgive this!"

He looked like he was really going to hit me to death. I would fight him as long as I am still alive! I thought we were finally going to a better place, improving our relationship and attitude, but seems like I was wrong!

It's either him or me who dies. No revenge, not anymore, but then one of us would die eventually, if we continued staying at each other's side. I would not run away again like how I used to do.

"Kill me if you dare! I wouldn't give up as long as I am still alive!"

After he heard what I said, he swung his belt up and was about to hit my face. My face would be swollen if he really hit me with his belt.

"You think that I won't do this, b\*tch?!"

I closed my eyes and got ready to be hit.

But I felt nothing after a few minutes. So, I opened my eyes and saw that Lance Mason didn't move at all, still hanging his hand in the air.

He threw his belt aside when he saw I opened my eyes. He dragged me to the washroom.

He pointed at my reflection in the mirror and said, "Have a good look at yourself! F\*cking look at yourself. You are a mother and you still want to seduce another man? Why are you so shameless?! Don't you think you have seduced enough men in your life? You have seduced me, you have seduced Leo and Javier, who do you want to seduce now, Jennie Gomez! Do you know how many times I wanted to kill you but I didn't because of Lexi?!"

(Leo Mason: It made me want to kill her and Anthony Smith when I



saw them sitting in a café and talking about something I don't know, she even laughed with him!)

Lance Mason closed the door forcefully and walked out.

I looked at my reflection in the mirror. I didn't look good at all.

I laughed like a maniac after I saw my reflection.

I slowly took off my clothes and walked in the running shower.

I stood there and let the cold water run down from my head.

Why would I become like this?

This was all because of Lance Mason.

I touched the scars on my back, I could still feel it even though it was starting to fade away.

I didn't want to be like this too, but I have no choice.

It's not fair that I have been suffering for such a long time and Lance Mason was never hurt.

Lance Mason didn't come back last night. And I had a sleepless night.

When I woke up the next morning, Lance Mason hadn't come back.

The chamberlain asked, "Mr. Mason hasn't come back after he went out yesterday. Have you called him, Mrs. Mason?"

## Chapter 197

I stopped my movement. I wouldn't mind if he has come back or not, it's his own business.

"He is busy. Don't mind him, just take care of Lexi."

The chamberlain wasn't pleased with my response. She must be thinking that I was not a responsible wife, not caring if my own husband comes back home or not.

"Have a nice breakfast, Mrs. Mason. I am going to bring Miss Lexi out for a walk."

I wiped my mouth after the chamberlain left. I didn't have an appetite.

When I walked out of the front door, one of Lance Mason's guard walked up to me and said, "Where do you want to go, Mrs. Mason? I can drive you there. Mr. Mason said he wouldn't stop you from going places anymore, but I need to be with you wherever you go."

That's great that he wouldn't stop me from going places anymore. But why did he suddenly change his mind? Did he calm down already? Seems like I was right about him becoming different.

I got into the car and asked the guard to send me to the hospital.

The guard didn't ask me anything, he just sent me to the hospital.

When we reached the hospital, the guard followed right behind me and I said, "Go tell your boss that I have lost a lot of hair and my scalp is killing me right now. I am not here to do abortion."

My hair had been falling like crazy, and sometimes I felt like I have migraines. Plus there was a few times when Lance did pull my hair, when he was angry or when we had sex.

The guard then said, "I will just follow you. I can't leave you alone here, Mrs. Mason, there are too many people here."

After I filled in some information at the front desk, I realized that I didn't have money to see a doctor.

I thought of borrowing some money from the guard, but I didn't.

I texted Leo Mason instead. He didn't reply to my first message so I sent a few more.

Leo Mason finally replied to me: Is it serious?

I replied: It's not too serious, but my scalp hurt a lot. I am at the hospital now; can you bring some money for me? I don't have money to see a doctor.

I was afraid that Leo Mason would call Lance Mason so I quickly texted him again: Don't tell your brother about this. He will get mad.

He didn't reply to me after I sent the message.

I sat on the long bench at the corridor and waited for Leo to reply to me.

Leo finally replied to me after a few minutes: I am on my way now.

When Leo came, he looked at the guard of Lance Mason, and I quickly explained, "This is the guard your brother sent to watch at me."

Leo then told the guard, "You go and wait downstairs. I will explain everything to my brother if anything happens."

But the guard didn't move, Leo knitted his eyebrows and said, "Can't you understand English?"

I then looked at the guard and said, "Just wait downstairs, I wouldn't cause you any problem, don't worry. I won't run away. Your boss would make sure I suffer if I run away."

The guard didn't look at me, he looked at Leo and said, "I will wait downstairs then, Mr. Leo. Please bring Mrs. Mason down after you are done."

And with that, the guard turned around and left.

Leo looked at me and said, "You have lost some weight, Jennie."

I smiled bitterly and said, "Really? Girls look prettier if they are slim."

Leo sighed and said, "You are already very slim, you shouldn't lose any more weight."

He pushed my hair away and looked at my scalp. I knew my scalp looked bad when he knitted his eyebrows.

He suddenly grabbed my hand and I couldn't stop myself from gasping because of pain.

"What's wrong?"

Leo Mason asked me.

"It hurts." I whispered.

## Chapter 198

He was quick to roll my sleeve up and showed the print that was caused by the belt.

"Did he do this to you?"

He asked, he couldn't believe what he just saw.

I avoid his eyes and act like I was very sad.

"He did this didn't he?" Leo Mason looked angry.

He sat down onto the long bench and covered his face with his hands, "I am sorry, Jennie."

I squatted down in front of him and I wanted to touch him but I couldn't.

"It's okay, I am used to it now. But I don't have any money now and I don't know anyone here, that's why I asked for your help. I am sorry to bother you."

He caressed my face with his thumb and said, "I remembered your face was so chubby back then, Jennie. But looked at you now....."

Tears started to form in my eyes and I placed my hand on top of his hand, "It hurt a lot, Leo..... Can you hug me?"

Leo pulled me to him and engulfed me in his arms, he placed his chin on my shoulder, "I regret it, Jennie."

Regret? What did he regret?

I wanted to ask him so bad but I didn't. I want to listen to what he wanted to say.

But he stopped talking.

He stood up from the bench and pulled me with him.

"Let's go."

He brought me to see a doctor and the doctor said that my scalp was inflamed. My doctor is a young woman, and she saw that there were wounds on my wrist and my scalp.

She must be thinking that I was being abused, sexually.

The wound on my wrist was actually caused by me. I wanted to show this to Leo.

"You can call the helpline or some agency if you are being abused."

The doctor said and she stared at Leo, "You don't look like a man who will hit a woman."

Leo Mason's facial expression didn't look very good but he didn't explain for himself.

"He is my brother, not my husband." I explained to the doctor.

Seems like she didn't believe what I just said, "You should protect your sister if she was abused by her husband."

With that, the doctor walked away.

I looked at Leo Mason and said, "The doctor doesn't know the

situation, don't mind her."

He nodded and said, "She is right, you don't deserve all of this."

I shook my head and said, "It's okay, I am used to it." My acting skills have improved. But to be honest, I just wanted to leave, I knew Lance would take good care of Lexi. I really couldn't live this life anymore!

"Can I ask you something, Jennie?" Leo stared at me.

"Sure."

Leo looked at me and asked, "Did you steal my experiment data?"

"You think that was me?" I acted calm and asked him back.

"I just want to know if you have anything to do with the incident. Just answer me." He said.

Reward

400

Comments

0

## Chapter 199

I shook my head quickly and said, "Why would I have anything to do with that? You know how your brother would act if it was really me. I will be in jail now if I really did it."

Lance Mason sent me into jail without any evidence back then and Leo Mason knew it.

"You are right." Leo said after a few minutes of silence.

I didn't know if he really trusted me or if he was acting.

After I was done seeing the doctor, Leo held my hand and said, "Come live with me, don't go back there again."

"What?" I knitted my eyebrows and asked him. I didn't expect that.

"If you don't want to be together with my brother, leave then. I have been thinking recently that you have suffered a lot because of me and brother, we owe you a lot. I want you to know that we can't be together again, you have a child with my brother. But I want to help you." He said while avoiding eye contact with me.

He finally realised.

"I never thought of being together with you again, but it will be the best if you could help me leave your brother. But you know how your brother can be, he wouldn't let me go, he will come and find me wherever I go. I am happy that you are willing to help me, thank you, Leo." We walked into the elevator together.

When the door of the elevator opened, Leo started to speak again.

"I will do it as I said this time, Jennie. I won't let you suffer again."

I walked out of the elevator and Leo followed me. He said he wouldn't let me suffer again; I wouldn't reject his help.

It would be the best if he could help me.

The guard was waiting for us downstairs.

I turned around and looked at Leo, "I have to go back now. I don't want your brother to be angry at you, thank you for thinking of helping me. I don't owe the both of you and you don't owe me. So, don't think too much."

I was caring for him.

Leo held my hand and said, "Don't go back there. Come with me, he wouldn't hurt you if you are with me."

"What are you doing, Mr. Leo?" The guard asked when he saw Leo pulled me to his car. He quickly blocked our way.

Leo looked at the guard coldly and said, "Go tell my brother, I will bring Jennie back to my place, if he wants her back, come and find me."

The guard didn't move at all.

"Mr. Leo, I have the responsibility to take care of the safety of Mrs. Mason. I won't let you bring Mrs. Mason back if Mr. Mason doesn't allow it.

The guard said, not moving at all.

What the guard just said has made Leo Mason angry.

"Get out of my way!" Leo shouted at the guard.

The guard still didn't move.

I have never seen Leo Mason get angry before. But when he did, he looked just like his brother. This was my first time seeing him like this, but why did he remind me of Lance? Why was I thinking of Lance at this time?

"It's okay, Leo. This is my fate." I said, trying my luck to trigger him.

Leo looked at me and said, "I won't let you suffer again."

He said and pulled his phone out to call someone. I guess he is calling Lance Mason.

I heard Leo shouted, "Do you know Jennie is in the hospital now?! Do you know how serious she was injured? You promised me you will treat her well! And is this what you mean to treat her well? I am so disappointed in you, brother. I will bring Jennie back with me."

## Chapter 200

I didn't know what Lance Mason said on the phone but I heard Leo shouted again, "Enough! Stop accusing her for something she didn't do! What I see right now isn't the happy Jennie she used to be, what I see now is a sad woman who is covered with wounds! She even stopped smiling!"

So, Lance Mason did accuse me in front of Leo Mason. That's why his attitude towards me changed like the speed of light.

It was because of Lance Mason.

Leo smashed his phone onto the floor out of anger and the screen was broken.

I squatted down and picked his phone up while crying.

I handed his phone back to him and said, "I'm worth it, Leo. You don't have to do this."

Leo looked at me like he was sorry and said, "If it wasn't me, you wouldn't be like this today. Come with me and I will protect you. He wouldn't dare to do anything to you."

Just when the guard was about to stop us, his phone rang.

He picked the phone up and said, "Yes, Boss." And he made way for us.

Lance Mason still cares for Leo Mason I see. What Leo Mason said still affects Lance Mason.

After I got into Leo's car, I saw Leo's strict face.

I whispered to him, "Leo, do you think he will really let me go?"

Leo Mason brought me to his house. It was an upscale apartment he lives in California.

"You will live here for now. There are two rooms here. I will take the guest room." Leo Mason said.

I shook my head and said, "I will take the guest room. I have already bothered you a lot."

Leo walked up to me and wanted to hold my hand but he didn't.

"We don't have talk like that, Jennie. Just live here and I will solve every problem for you. I will never let him bring you back and let you get hurt anymore."

Does he think that he was still the Leo Mason that I like so much back then? I thought to myself.

It was afternoon when we reached here and I asked, "Do you have anything in your fridge? I can make the both of us something to eat."

Leo Mason never know how to cook and he always has a maid to take care of his meals. Thanks to Lance Mason, obviously.

"There is nothing in the fridge, only water. What do you want to buy? There is a supermarket downstairs." Leo Mason asked.

This was a chance for me to shorten the distance between us, make



us not so awkward again.

"How about we go together since you don't know much about buying groceries? You can learn too, you shouldn't keep buying your meals from restaurants, it's not good for your health."

There is one difference between the Mason brother. Lance Mason needs tons of maids to serve him but Leo never like to have maids following him everywhere he goes.

He hasn't hired a maid yet after he moved out. So, he would eat out more, since he doesn't know how to cook.

"Okay. Let's go then." Leo grabbed his wallet off the table and walked out of his apartment with me following behind.

We kept our distance as always. I could feel that Leo purposely kept his distance away from me. Maybe he really didn't plan to let his brother come near me again but he still hated me for being his brother's mistress back then. I even gave birth to his brother's child, and I think that made him hated me more.

After we reached the supermarket, Leo got the trolley and I followed behind him.

"Let's buy some pork belly. I know you like to eat this."

I would always buy pork belly and made his favourite dish every time he visited me. He always finished it in no time. But I didn't know if he still loves to eat this or not.

"Up to you. Just buy anything you want. I don't like to eat this anymore." He said coldly.

I didn't know what happened to him, he was being cold to me out of the blue. Maybe he was comparing me with his brother and he finally realized that his brother is more important than me, so it's hard for him to be nice to me. I mentally slapped myself for thinking about his brother again. What was wrong with me?!

## Chapter 201

"People change, right? I am the only one who doesn't want to change." I said sadly.

"Do you blame me, Jennie?" Leo stopped walking and turned around to face me.

I shook my head while smiling and said, "Why would I blame you? Being able to see you one more time is the best gift that God has given me."

Leo Mason balled his hands into fists and released. Proving that he was confused.

"It's getting late, we should be fast. I'm hungry too." Leo Mason said.

I nodded.

I bought a lot of things that he liked. And he helped to carry some of these groceries upstairs.

Since he doesn't know how to cook so he told me that he will be in his study room and told me to call him when the food is ready.

After Leo walked away, I pulled my phone out from my pocket. It worried me a lot that Lance Mason hasn't called me once. Did he really let me go, finally? But why was I thinking about him calling me?

I quickly washed the vegetables and cooked it, not wanting to think too much.

After an hour, I managed to make four dishes that Leo likes to eat. I wanted to be nice to him and make him remember how close we used to be. But I didn't have the intention to make him fall for me or anything.

I walked to Leo's study room and knocked on the door, "Food is ready, Leo."

Leo Mason opened the door and he unexpectedly smiled at me, "So fast?"

"I was afraid that you are hungry so I just made something simple, I made it fast." I said.

"Great. I wouldn't mind if it is just some simple dish."

Leo Mason is easier to serve than Lance Mason. He never really cared much about the quality of life.

I placed some pork belly on his plate and said, "Eat this and tell me how it tastes. I haven't made this for so long, I don't know if it still tastes the same." I looked at him excitedly.

But Leo just looked at the pork belly and didn't move.

I smiled awkwardly and said, "I am sorry. You can throw it into the rubbish bin if you don't like it." I lowered my head and tears starting to form in my eyes.

Leo took a bite on the pork belly and said, "It still tastes the same."

I tilted my head up happily and said, "Really? I was afraid that you are not going to like it."

"Why would I? It tastes good."

"I am happy you like it." I said.

I would make dishes he likes and I would be the girl he likes. That's how my life used to be.

It was all about him. But not anymore, no matter how much I didn't want to admit, it was hard for me to fall for him again, after everything that happened.

I wasn't the one who liked to speak a lot back then when I was living in Mason's mansion, but Leo said girls should talk more and be positive. So, I tried hard to change for him.

But he didn't want me at the end.

Just when I was deep in my thoughts, the doorbell rang.

I looked at Leo and asked, "Who would come here at this time?"

"You eat first, I will go get it." Leo said.

I didn't know why my heart was beating so fast.

## Chapter 202

When I heard sounds from the front door, I knew why my heart was beating so fast.

Because Lance Mason was here.

Lance Mason walked into the dining area and looked at me, "How does it taste?"

I tilted my head up and looked at him, "I.....Lance....."

I acted like I was very afraid of him. But to be honest, part of me really was afraid.

I looked at the smirk on his face.

I know why he was smirking. He knew I was acting in front of Leo Mason.

"Don't scare her like this, Brother." Leo said coldly.

Lance pulled the chair in front of me and sat down, "Leo, I haven't eaten anything after breakfast, do you mind if I eat with the both of you?"

Leo looked at me and I lowered my head down. All I need to do now is to act like I was very scared.

I didn't protest. Of course Leo would let his brother dine with us, hearing that his dear brother didn't eat anything after breakfast.

Leo went into the kitchen and placed a plate and cutlery in front of Lance Mason, "Go back after this, Brother. I won't let you bring Jennie back. You two are not meant to be."

Lance Mason didn't responded to what his brother said, he took a bite of the pork belly and said, "This taste good. I don't remember you knowing how to cook, Leo. Who made this? Is it you, Jennie?" Lance Mason arched his eyebrow at me.

I hummed slightly and nodded.

And Lance Mason started to laugh.

"I didn't know that you know how to cook. Unfortunately, me and Lexi couldn't get to have a taste of your cooking. Her uncle is lucky enough."

I recalled that Lance Mason once asked me to cook for him, but we were having a fight back then. He did something dirty to me in that small apartment and left. I wasn't able to cook for him.

And I haven't cooked for him since then.

Now that he mentioned Lexi and I know that he was talking to me despite Leo.

Leo chose to sit on my side and not his brother's side. He chose to sit at the place of honour at the table.

He was trying to tell his brother that he didn't want to be together with me.

The reason he did what he did today was to make me feel better

and not to be held captive by his brother anymore. He never plan to be together with me. He didn't want to make his brother feel like we are together.

His brother will always be the most important one for him no matter what.

After we finished all the food, Lance wiped his mouth with tissues.

"Let's go, Jennie. I will send you back first, I have some work to do later." Lance said.

He acted like I was just visiting Leo and he was here to fetch me. He wanted to act like we were not in the middle of some fight.

"Just break up with Jennie, brother. You two are not meant to be, stop torturing each other." Leo said while he balled his hand into fist and looked at his brother.

Lance Mason looked at him and said, "We could never break up, Leo. We have a daughter to raise."

"If you don't break up with Jennie now, I really don't know what will happen to her." Leo stood up and said.

Leo grabbed my hand and was about to pull the sleeves of my sweater up. Before I could stop him from doing so, my sleeve had been rolled up. He pointed at the wound I have on my wrist and said, "What is this then? You think you can't break up with her? I think you could kill her if you don't!"

Leo said angrily and his face turned red because of anger.

Lance looked at my wrist and looked at me, "I never thought that you will do this to yourself."

Leo was very angry so he didn't know what Lance Mason meant.

"I will tell you one last time, Brother. Break up with her and let her go. I am begging you." Leo said while staring at his brother.

Lance Mason pulled me to him and his big hand held onto my wrist where there was a wound, it hurts a lot.

"Ow....." I gasped.

Leo saw that I was in pain and he couldn't contain his anger anymore, he grabbed the collar of Lance's shirt and said, "Let her go! What do you want to do? Didn't you see that she is in pain?"

"Leo, this is my woman and my business, you don't have to mind any of these." Lance Mason looked like he was holding in his anger.

"What if I said no? You promised me that you will treat her well and let her live a better life, Brother. Look at her now! You didn't keep your promise!"

Leo said and pulled out a paper from his pocket. He threw the paper onto the dining paper.

It was an injury report of my scalp. But I knew I was just stressed, of course Lance pulled my hair a few times, but the main reason was still stress.

“Look at this, brother! Look at what you have done! You hurt her so bad and now you still want her to follow you back?”

Lance Mason let go of my wrist and looked at the report. He then stared at me,

He didn't want to admit that he hurt me, he must be thinking that I hurt myself.

Indeed, he said, “You are getting better at doing things like this, Jennie Gomez. Fooling the both of us makes you happy, right?”

## Chapter 203 Finally Free

At this point, I wasn't afraid or sad anymore. I just wanted to leave Lance. I wanted to leave Leo too, I knew he didn't want to be with me anymore and I also didn't have feelings for him anymore.

"Lance, can we talk decently for once? Let's talk about us, and also about everything. No hard feelings, no hate. Just talk about anything, once and for all. Okay?" I sighed. Tears were starting to form in my eyes. I knew what I was about to tell him.

"Fine. Brother, I need some time alone with Jennie, is that okay?" Lance asked his brother.

Leo nodded and said, "I'll head out for a while."

And with that, he left the house, leaving me and Lance in his condo.

Lance pulled my hands and led me to the living hall. We sat on the sofa, facing each other. I took a deep breath and said, "Lance, before I speak, do you have anything you want to tell me?"

"Yes. Jennie, I really love you, I don't care if you trust me or not, but I do! Can you come back with me?" Lance sighed. He seemed to have calmed down, that was quick.

"Lance, you know after all the years in the Mason's family, after what you have done to me, it's hard for me to change my impression of you....."

"I know, Jennie. I know, but for the sake of Lexi, can you put it all behind?"

"No, Lance. I know, I know that you have been trying to change for me. I could feel it, but it's not this easy. You can't just expect me to suddenly fall in love with you just because you confessed your love to me, just because we have a child, just because you're trying to change for me. It's not that easy." I said calmly. "I've been hurt way too deep, by you, your brother, your family and even my own mother! There's no way that I can just suddenly let it all go and live a normal life, that would be lying to myself."

"Jennie, I....." Lance spoke up.

"No, let me speak." I cut him off. "You said you love me, but I couldn't see anything that shows that you love me. A little bit of anger management, controlling your temper around me sometimes and asked for my permission before doing anything to me doesn't mean it's love. Maybe to you, that's love. But to me, that's just how a normal human being should act like. If you really, really have feelings for me and love me with all your heart....." I stopped and took a big breathe before saying the next thing.

"Let me go, Lance Mason. Just let me go. Let me live my own life, peacefully." I said. For some reason my heart was beating fast, and I could feel bitterness spreading in me. I knew my impression on him had actually changed, but I didn't think it was for the better. Maybe I just thought he became a kinder man. I knew we couldn't continue living

together, it's a very toxic relationship we had. So toxic that both of us might get hurt.

"What about Lexi, our daughter?" Lance asked, his voice breaking.

"I know Lexi would be in good hands, you love her so much. You take care of her very well and even treat her like your princess. It would be best for her to stay with a single parent who loves her dearly, than to stay in a toxic family." I explained. "You know it too, we are very toxic in terms of our relationship and our so-called family." I added.

"What about me? Don't you care about me at all? I thought you hate me, shouldn't you be trying to stay by my side just so you can take your revenge?" Lance asked, he was desperate. So desperate that he didn't mind me plotting against him anymore as long as I stayed by his side.

"Lance, I'm sick and tired of all these. Revenge, plots and calculations..... these isn't how I imagined my life to be. I want a good husband, who loves me and shows me his love instead of just telling me. I never wanted a toxic relationship like this, full of abuse and violence. Tell me, is there any woman in the world who likes getting abused?" I stared at his handsome face and asked.

"I..... I'm sorry, Jennie. I regret it. I will change, I will not hit you anymore. I will change, for you. Please don't leave me, Jennie Gomez." Lance's voice cracked. His eyes were teary and I could see him trying not to break down in front of me.

If this was a year ago, I must be feeling so good and happy with myself, for making this man hurt, but why wasn't I feeling this way at all now? Why was I just..... sad? Was I sad that I was going to leave this place? Or was I sad for leaving this toxic man? Or was it because of Lexi.....?

"Lance, you promised not to hit me many times, you promised to treat me better. But in the end, you still weren't able to keep your promises. Don't tell me it was because I tried to provoke you. No matter what I did, it's still far less compared to what you have done to me. I'm not into revenge or anything like this anymore, I know you're a smart man, you always figured out the things that I've done. So all I'm asking, Lance Mason, is to let me go. I'll see Lexi from time to time, but please let me live my own life." I explained to the man in front of me.

Lance buried his head in his hands and I could see his shoulder shaking. Was he crying? Lance Mason was crying in front of me. This was the first time I saw him being so vulnerable in front of me, he showed me the weak side of him.

My heart skipped a beat, the bitterness in my heart was getting stronger and stronger. I knew if I leave this place, there would be no coming back, ever. I would finally be able to leave the Mason's, but this includes my own daughter.....

After a long moment of silence, Lance looked up at me. His eyes were swollen and red, he had been sobbing silently into his own hands. I didn't dare to look at his face for too long so I lowered my head.



"You really want to leave?" Lance asked with a broken voice.

I was stunned. Did that mean he was going to let me go this time?

I slowly nodded my head. "Yeah."

"I'm not going to keep you and lock you by my side anymore, Jennie. You were right, it's time for me to show my love for you. Actions speak louder than words....." and with that, Lance stood up.

## Chapter 204 Leaving for Good

I stood up too. "Wait, really?" I stopped him before he left.

"Yes, do whatever you want, go wherever you like. I'm not going to stop you, just know that you will always have a place in my heart. I love you, Jennie Gomez. Goodbye." Lance said, but he didn't move. He stared at me.

"Thank you, Lance. I know it is a hard decision but you made the right choice. I really appreciate it, I will come and visit Lexi once in a while, but that doesn't mean I'm here to see you....." I said, my eyes staring at his. I didn't want him to get the wrong idea, he should know it's not that easy to fall for a man who abused me for most of my life.

Lance nodded and reached out his hands. "Can I get one last hug from you, before you and I leave? I just want a hug."

I nodded and walked into his arms. It was only a hug, I thought. Nothing much. But when I walked right into his embrace, I could feel butterflies and bitterness in my stomach. I didn't know if I wanted to cry for happiness that I could finally leave, or sadness that I was leaving him.

(After some time, I only realized that Lexi was not the reason why I was feeling that way.....)

He hugged me tightly and sniffed me. His head was buried in my neck but he didn't kiss me. It was a long, long hug. Then he pulled me back and stared at my face. He pushed some hair out of my face and tucked it behind my ears, then he said, "Jennie, take care, wherever you are planning to go. I won't ask, but can you at least assure me you won't try to get a new man in your life?"

I lowered down my head. "Lance, you know I can't promise you that. I'm not young anymore and I don't want to be single forever, I want a nice husband, a nice family too. You can't be this selfish."

Lance put both his hands on my shoulder and asked me very gently, "Is there really no chance at all of us being together? Even if it means many, many years later? I can't imagine you being with another man, while we already have a daughter together!" Lance argued.

"I can't promise you anything. Goodbye Lance Mason. Take care of my daughter well. We don't owe each other anymore." I said and got out of his hold.

"Where are you planning to go?" he asked. I didn't tell him because I was afraid that he might come into my life again.

"I'm not sure yet. I haven't thought about it." I lied. I already planned to go to Canada. It was something that I only fantasized but never dared to think about it too much, because I never thought Lance would really let me go this easily, I thought it would be a lot harder than that. Seems like he wasn't lying when he said he has feelings for me.

I was standing in front him, not doing anything and he suddenly pulled me into his arms once again. Without any warning, he kissed me

on my lips. It was a pure, pure kiss, no tongue involved. It was a soft and gentle kiss, I could feel his unwillingness in letting me go from his kiss, but I have decided to leave, for real this time. And to be honest, I was quite happy and surprised at the same time that he actually agreed to let me off.

The door opened and Leo came in. He's back. Lance let go of me and I quickly pulled myself away from him. Leo faked a cough and said, "So, how did the talk go?"

Neither of us said a thing for a moment. Then Lance said, "Jennie will be leaving." And with that, Lance left the house.

Leo stared at me with wide eyes. Then, he smiled. "Did brother agree to let you stay with me? Don't get me wrong, I just want to make sure you're safe, you can stay here....."

"No, he agreed to let me go. I'm leaving this country." I cut him off.

Leo was shocked. "What? Seriously? No, Jennie you have a daughter here, and if you really leave, brother would really mad, you don't know how deeply he has already fallen for you....."

"If he had really fallen deeply for me, he wouldn't hurt me in the first place." I cut him off again. "He will take good care of Lexi, she's better off with him alone. She wouldn't grow up healthily in such a toxic family." I explained.

Leo didn't know how to respond.

"Where are you going then? Are you going to just leave everything behind?" Leo spoke up after a brief awkward moment of silence.

"I don't know. I just know that I'm leaving this place for good." I answered.

"Jennie, come." Leo pulled my hand and led me to the balcony. He lit his cigarette and smoked. Now I knew, he didn't smoke in front of me last time, because we were a couple. But he didn't have any feelings for me anymore now, so he didn't care anymore.

"Smoking is bad for you." I reminded him and smiled bitterly. What a life, I never expected my life to be so dramatic. But this time, I could finally live my own life, away from these people.

Leo scoffed and said, "Jennie, sorry for everything that I have done to hurt you. Sorry that I hurt you, sorry that I wronged you. I regret it."

I smiled and looked at the sky. "It's fine, I'm leaving anyways."

"I know Tiffany gave you a recording of me and Lance speaking. I know you won't believe me, but brother did that to avoid rumors about you being a mistress. He thought by blaming the rumors onto Niklaus, people wouldn't talk shit about you. But who knew it went the other way....." Leo started to explain.

"I don't want to know anymore." I sighed. I didn't want to believe that Lance did that to help me.

"Listen, Jennie. Brother didn't wed Tiffany legally because he never wanted to make you his mistress. He found a way to make deals with

Tiffany and lied to her family, she agreed. But then she was also the one who wanted to break the deal, but brother didn't let her. Brother paid hundred of millions of dollars to the Abel's family just to get rid of Tiffany from his side." Leo explained.

I didn't know why he was telling me this now. I felt like I was about to suffocate. Why was I feeling this way? One of two of Lance's good deeds cannot just cover up the rest of the things he did to me! So, why was I feeling a little upset?

I took a deep breath. "I don't care anymore, Leo." And with that, I packed my stuff and left.

## Chapter 205 One Last Time Here

I left Leo's place by calling myself a cab.

I didn't know where to go, I didn't feel like going back to Lance's mansion to pack. I didn't want to see him, or Lexi. I was afraid that Lexi might make it hard for me to leave.

"Miss, you need to tell me where you're heading." The cab driver said to me.

"Um, sorry, can you head to Pavilion Residences?" I said awkwardly.

"No problem, you must be rich to live there!" the driver said.

"No, I'm just temporarily staying with a family. I'll be leaving soon." I sighed. At this time, I didn't notice that I said 'family'.

I reached Lance's mansion and got down the cab. I paid the driver and went to his door.

I stood at the doorstep, I didn't know why I was afraid of taking a step in.

Suddenly, the door was opened. Lance stood in front of me.

"Why are you standing here? Come in." Lance said softly.

"I'm back to pack....." I said in a low voice.

"I know, I have already asked the maid to pack for you. There are 3 luggage of your stuff." Lance said. He seemed pretty excited that I was leaving. Huh, so much for loving me. He signalled for the maids to push the luggage to me.

I nodded my head and said, "I'll be leaving then, thanks."

"Don't you want to see Lexi one last time?" Lance suddenly asked, before I stepped out of the house.

I stood there, with my back facing him. I didn't know why, I wasn't able to bring myself to turn back around. Then, I heard a little girl's voice, "Mommy?"

Tears started forming in my eyes. I remained frozen on the same spot. Then I spoke, without turning back, "Baby girl, mommy is going to a new place to work. Daddy will take good care of you starting from today. Mommy loves you forever okay?" my voice broke at the end of my sentence.

I could feel my body shaking. But I still couldn't bring myself to turn around. Lance didn't say anything.

"Mo-mmy, wh.....where?" Lexi asked in her baby voice.

I couldn't take it anymore, if Lexi continued to speak to me, I would not leave.

"Annie, can you bring Lexi upstairs to rest?" I asked. "Yes, Mrs Mason." Annie answered.

I heard footsteps receding and I made sure Lexi was out of my sight, then I turned back around to face Lance.

There were tears rolling down his cheeks..... strange, why did I feel

upset? Wasn't this what I have always wanted? To leave him and this sad, sad place?

"Take care of Lexi, always tell her that her mommy loves her." I said.

"I will take good care of her, but I will not tell her that her mommy loves her, because if her mommy loves her, she wouldn't choose to abandon her." Lance said, his voice shaking.

"Goodbye, Lance Mason."

"Goodbye, stay safe, Jennie Gomez."

And with that, I walked out of the mansion and the door closed behind me.

Tears rolled down my cheeks. I didn't know I was crying for who at this point.

It was already late at night, it would be impossible for me to catch any flight to Canada now, so I decided to head back to my small rented condo.

When I arrived, I repacked all my stuff. I only needed to bring the stuff that I needed. I took out the clothes and accessories Lance bought for me and put it inside the drawer.

I didn't want to bring anything that would remind me of him with me to a new place.

I wanted a new life, alone.

Just when I was packing, I noticed an envelope in the luggage. It was from Lance. I didn't open it, I just put it in the pocket of the luggage. It could be money, I can keep it for emergency, right?

I received a text message suddenly.

It was from Anthony Smith.

(LANCE SHORT POV: I broke down the moment she stepped out of the house. She's gone from my life, forever. I cried myself to sleep that night. It was only until this point that I found out I was already madly in love, this woman is my weakness. I can't leave without her.....)

## Chapter 206 Anthony Smith

Anthony Smith texted me to meet him at the airport by 10 in the morning. I had no idea what he wanted and why he wanted to meet me, but since I was free, I went. I could always book a flight once I'm done with everything and everyone here.

I called a cab to send me to the airport. I got into the cab without looking back.

I looked out of the window in the cab. Memories started to float in my mind while I looked at all the buildings passing by. This is the city where my complicated relationship with Lance Mason started. This is the city where I first met my cute daughter that I didn't know existed, she is beautiful and smart. I couldn't believe that I created her, with Lance Mason. She got my looks and Lance's smartness, well of course Lance contributed to the good looks too.

I will never forget how she called me mommy for the first time. And that's her first word. I thought about what Lance said, about Lexi going through 5 major surgeries. I couldn't imagine her little body lying on the bed in a surgery room. It pained me so much that my baby has to suffer from all these pains. But I know she would live her life happily without me.

And I hope Lance Mason moves on and takes good care of our daughter. I knew he loves me but our relationship was toxic and that's not good for both of us and Lexi. It pained me that he had to take care of our daughter on his own again now, but I knew he would do a good job. I hope he will leave all of these hatred and toxic feelings for me behind and start a new life.

I realized all the memories I had on my mind right now was all about Lance Mason and Lexi.

I remember how he treated me, how he would pull my hair when he was angry at me and how he would look at me with hatred laced in his eyes. I remember how he would yell at me and wanted to hit me when I disobeyed him. But then I also remember when he started to change, to treat me a little bit better, day by day.....

I recalled the times when he told me he loves me. He said he loves me and I didn't believe it. But I believe it now, he does love me, but it was not the love i was looking for. Not the type of love that I wanted. His love hurts, his love was too toxic, his love was just too much for me to bear.

Everything felt like it just happened yesterday.

Lance didn't know where I was going. He said he would set me free, and I was free now. I could go everywhere I wanted to without worrying about the obsessive Lance Mason. The man who made my life a living hell back then.

I didn't hate him as much as I did anymore. I didn't want to keep living in hatred anymore, it was just a waste of time. We were still

young; it wasn't too late to start a new life. I felt thankful and blessed to be able to stop all of these when it was not too late.

I knew we would be better being apart and far away from each other. We were just not meant to be.

I wiped the tears that just rolled down from my cheek away and sniffed. This would be the last time I cry for Lance Mason again.

Then, I thought about Javier. Seems like it's time for me to contact him. I didn't want to go see him or anything like that, I just wanted to let him know that I'm fine. I took out my phone and called him straight away. He didn't pickup, so I texted him, telling him that I left Lance Mason, and that I would be fine. I hope me and him are able to stay in touch and remain as friends. I really look to him as my closest friend!

Anthony was waiting for me at the entrance of the airport when I arrived. He helped me carry my luggage and I followed behind him. I brought my luggage with me, because I wanted to fly to Canada straight away after dealing with Anthony.

We went into the VIP departure hall after he checked in for us.

"Are you nervous?" Anthony asked me after we sat down.

"You didn't even tell me why you wanted to meet me here." I said, sitting down on the sofa.

"We are going to Singapore, I shall show you more about your sister." Anthony said.

I widened my eyes. "How long are we going to be there?"

"Around a week only." Anthony said, smiling at me. "Are you scared?" he added.

"Yeah, a little bit. I really hope I will get to know my sister more, but I'm scared to find out things that are too unexpected." I answered.

"Do you want to know her name? I haven't told you her name, have I?" Anthony said after he took a sip of his coffee.

"You haven't." I chuckled.

"Hazel Weasley. That's her name." He said while looking out the window.



## Chapter 207 Hazel Weasley

I looked out too and saw an aeroplane taking off. I didn't know why but I thought of Lance Mason. I wanted to know if he was doing fine.....

Maybe I was just starting to not get used to not having Lance Mason being nosy around me. He has been in my life for so many years and now I finally got to get rid of him.

"Jennie?" Anthony called me, pulling me back to reality.

"Oh, sorry." I apologised.

"Hazel?" I repeated.

He nodded and looked at me.

"That's a nice name." I smiled while thinking of a woman who looked just like me and maybe a bit older.

It was such a sudden trip, thankfully I brought my luggage with me.

After we boarded the plane, it took off in fifteen minutes time, I looked down at the city.

Goodbye, Lance.

I slept through the flight and I felt happy because I was going to a country where my sister used to live.

After we landed at Singapore, Anthony's driver came and fetched us back to Anthony's mansion.

Singapore is an island country, and the temperature here is high. Singapore is small but its population is large. I saw a lot of people walking on the street. I felt happy to be able to visit such a beautiful country.

Anthony didn't live with his parents. He bought a mansion in this beautiful neighbourhood. Although he didn't stay in Singapore much anymore, he still didn't want to sell this house away. He kept it for whenever he came to visit, he said.

His mansion was surrounded by trees and there was a manmade lake beside his mansion.

Anthony opened the front door for me, "Welcome to my home."

I smiled at him and said, "Thank you."

I saw a man standing beside the door and greeted him. His chamberlain was a man who is in his forties.

"This is Ben." He introduced him to me.

"Nice to meet you, Miss Gomez." Ben looked at me.

"Nice to meet you too, Ben." I said.

I saw a lot of Hazel's picture hanging on the wall.

But I didn't see Anthony in any picture.

That's weird. But I didn't think much. I just thought that maybe Anthony didn't like to take photos.

.....

It had been three days since I arrived here. And Anthony hasn't brought me to Hazel's grave.

Anthony's mansion looked good from the outside but when I walked in the enormous mansion, I felt creepiness crawling on the back of my skin. The curtain was down and the only source of light was the chandelier light on the ceiling.

I didn't think too much about it, i thought maybe Anthony didn't stay here much anymore, that's why it felt a little creepy and not very home-like.

It was the third day that I dreamt of a woman who doesn't have a head standing on the third floor of this house. And her head was floating in the air right beside her body.

I screamed when I realised it was Hazel, my sister. I woke up after I saw her face and I gasped for air.

My heart was beating so fast that I thought my heart was going to pop out from my chest. I had a bad feeling about this dream, it felt so real. So real that I started to cry because I was so afraid.

Reward  
400

Comments  
0

## Chapter 208 Coffins

After I calmed down, I got out from the bed and opened my room door. I needed to ask Anthony Smith something, all of these were too weird. Just when I was about to walk out, Ben suddenly appeared in front of me. I was freaked out by Ben.

"Where are you going at this late, Miss Gomez?" Ben asked.

"Where is Anthony Smith? I need to see him." I asked.

"Mr. Smith is not in the mansion now." He answered me.

"What?"

"Please go back to sleep, Miss Gomez. Goodnight." With that he closed my door.

I haven't seen Anthony Smith for three days now. I thought that he would be in the mansion by today. I had no idea where he was.

I dialled his number, I needed to ask him.

He was quick to pick up my call, "Jennie? What's wrong?"

"Where are you? Why aren't you living in your own house? You left me here for what?" I asked.

I didn't want to be in the mansion, I didn't feel safe here.

"I will be back soon. Just go to sleep." He said impatiently and hung up.

I recalled the creepy dream. I had been here for three days now and I never went up to the third floor. Ben didn't let me. And the third floor looks creepy.

I needed to find out what was on the third floor. And I needed to know it now.

I tiptoed to the door and opened it slowly avoiding making any noise. I didn't want Ben to find out that I was going up to the third floor.

I slowly walked up the stairs to the third floor and looked behind me to see if anyone saw me. Luckily there was no one. When I finally walked up to the third floor, I saw a door that was closed so I walked up to open the door.

But the door was locked. I needed to think of another way to sneak into this room. Anthony Smith must have hidden something in this room.

I suddenly remembered that there was a big tree in his backyard and if I climbed up the tree, I could reach the window of this room. So, I quickly sneaked out to the back yard and tried my best to climb up the tree.

After many attempts, I made it to the window. I pushed open the window forcefully.

The window was covered by a velvet curtain and when I pushed the curtain aside, I saw something that I will never forget for the rest of my life.

There were pictures of Hazel all around the room, on my left-hand

side were pictures of her smiling. And when I turned around to another wall of this room, I saw pictures of Hazel crying, I looked closely at the pictures and I saw wounds covering her skin. And some of the photos even got blood stains on it. This is cruel, just looking at her wounds pained me.

There were curtains covering something at the corner of the room. I walked towards it slowly and pushed it aside. It was that moment I saw something that I will never forget for the rest of my life.

There were three coffins!

I gasped loudly and covered my mouth with my hand to prevent myself from letting out anymore noise. I couldn't believe that I found three coffins in this room. I slowly walked closer and I realized that they were refrigerator-like coffins.

I fell onto the floor and couldn't believe what I just found out. I was so stupid to believe a stranger. I believed him when he told me he wanted to help me escape from Lance.

I regret believing him so easily and I couldn't imagine Hazel's life before she died. She must have suffered a lot. My tears rolled down thinking of my poor sister whom I have never met before.

I thought my life was a living hell when I was with Lance, and now I know how lucky I am.

I didn't know what had gotten into my mind, but I wanted to know what was inside the coffins.

I walked closer to one of the coffins and I realized it was made of glass. I could see what was inside the coffins clearly.

## Chapter 209 Psycho!

I couldn't stop my tears when I walked closer. I saw the body of a woman. Her head was cut down.

I felt sorry for this woman. But I was relieved it wasn't Hazel.

I felt like I was going to throw up after I saw what was inside the coffins. But I held it in, I needed to see if Hazel was there.

After I checked all three coffins, I found out that Hazel was not there and they were just women who looked like Hazel. Not so alike but they were similar in a way.

I needed to leave here as soon as possible. Someone would find out that I sneaked into this room.

Just when I turned around wanting to leave here, the door swung open. It was Ben standing by the door with Anthony Smith standing beside him.

I stepped back wanting to find a way to escape.

"What are you doing here, Jennie?" Anthony asked while stepping closer to me.

"Don't come near me!" I shouted at him and sniffed.

"Don't test my patient now, Jennie. Why are you here?" He asked again.

I bumped onto the wall where the window was just beside me.

"Where is Hazel?" I asked.

"Hazel is not here." He said while he looked at the coffins and looked back at me.

"Who are they?" I asked.

"They are all girls like you, girls who looked like my Hazel." Anthony Smith smiled.

"What have you done to Hazel?!" I shouted at him. I couldn't believe I trusted the person who hurt my sister.

"Hazel didn't listen to me, she wanted to leave me. But, now she couldn't. She will be with me in this house forever." Anthony said before he laughed like a maniac.

"You are sick! Where is she?!"

"She is dead! You know she is dead! Why do you keep asking!" He grabbed my neck.

"I killed her because she wanted to leave me. I killed her!" He shouted at me.

I wanted to shout at him so bad but I couldn't speak because his grip on my neck was so tight. I couldn't believe he killed his own wife.

"I made everyone think that she died because of illness. But she was actually killed by me! She wanted to run away and I will never let that happen! She is mine and only mine! No one can steal her from me. I don't understand why she would want to leave me, I loved her so much!"

There is no reason for her to run away from me. I treated her like a queen."

"You.....a-abused her....." I said.

He quickly let go of my neck and laughed, "I didn't! I wouldn't abuse her, I love her!"

I gasped for air after he let go of my neck. I looked at the window beside me that was wide opened.

I quickly jumped out of the window when Anthony turned his back to me.

I jumped to the tree and quickly jumped down. The branches on the tree scratched my skin but I didn't care anymore.

I heard Anthony shouted, "Go get her!"

I quickly ran to the door in the backyard.

There were many trees around Anthony Smith's mansion and that was an advantage for me to hide from him.

I ran away from the mansion; I saw Ben and a few men chasing me. I was tired but I couldn't stop. I must not stop before I find somewhere to hide from them.

I turned around and saw that there was a distance between me and them so I quickly made a turn and hid behind the bushes.

"Where did she go?" One of the men asked.

"Don't ask me! Go find her now!" Ben shouted at them.

I covered my mouth with both my hands. I waited until they were far away from me then I pulled my phone out wanting to call for help.

I called Lance without knowing. He was the first one to come into my mind.

## Chapter 210 Help Me!

"Jennie?" He picked up.

"L-Lance? Help me....." I cried.

He stopped for a second. He must be thinking about what I was going through, what happened to me after I left him. He must be shocked to hear my tone.

"Send me your location now." He spoke again, his voice low and dark.

"But I'm in Singapore....."

I didn't know why I called him; I should have called the police but I was afraid that I couldn't wait until the police came. They could have found me by the time the police came. I didn't know why but Lance made me feel safe even though he was far away from me. Maybe it was because I knew how powerful and rich he is, I knew he could fly here with his own private plane and even control the cops.

"Just send me your location!" He sounded anxious.

I quickly hung up and sent him my location.

I tried to calm myself down. I needed to think of another way to run away if Lance couldn't help me on time. I needed to save myself. I wanted to be alive and live my life in peace.

I saw that the guard house was not far from me but if I ran there now, they would find me. I didn't want to take the risk. I needed to make the guard notice me and come to me.

Just when I was thinking of a way to make the guard notice me, I heard footsteps coming closer to me.

I held my breath and closed my eyes.

"She's not here." I heard a man said.

"But the location shows that she is here. She must be somewhere in here. We need to find her." Another man said.

What? Location?

"Mr. Mason would kill us if anything happens to her."

Mr. Mason? Lance!

"I'm here!" I whisper.

One of the men walked behind the bushes and found me.

"Miss Gomez, are you okay? Are you hurt?" The men asked me.

"Don't be afraid, we are here to help you." Another man said.

I tilted my head up and looked at the man who was talking to me.

"Mr. Mason sent us here." The man explained.

I felt relieved, I fell onto the floor. I was safe now.

"You are fast. Thank God." I sighed.

"We were just around the neighbourhood. We are Singaporeans, Mr Mason's bodyguard whenever he comes for business. We work for him."

## Chapter 210 Help Me!

For the first time in forever, I was thankful that this man was so rich to have bodyguards all around the world!

The man pulled me up and said, "We will make sure you are always safe, Miss Gomez."

Another man then said, "We have already called the police. You are safe now."

I nodded at them and said, "Thank you."

Thank you, Lance Mason.



## Chapter 211 Jail for life

Lance's men escorted me to a hotel.

"Wait." I said when they were about to leave.

"Yes, Miss?" The man said.

"Can I know why you guys were around the neighbourhood? It's not like people will go there for a walk.....I understand that you guys are Singaporean, but this neighbourhood is quite far away from the city centre." I looked at the both of them.

They looked like they didn't know what to say so I smiled and said, "It's okay, you can tell me. I won't tell Lance Mason anything."

The man sighed and said, "Mr. Mason wants us to protect you secretly."

I just needed to confirm my thought.

I nodded and said, "Thank you."

"Goodnight, Miss Gomez." And with that I was left alone in the hotel room.

I sat down on the bed and pulled my phone out. I wanted to call Lance and thank him but I didn't want to let him get the wrong idea and step back into the toxic relationship with him. So, I sighed and put my phone down.

Maybe this was the best for us. Keep contacting each other would only make it hard for both of us to move on.

I laid down on the bed and thought of what I have been through just now.

I couldn't believe that Anthony Smith killed my sister. He is a psycho. I thought Lance was bad enough, crazy enough, seems like I was wrong. Anthony was the real psycho.

I felt helpless. I was in a country where I don't know anyone and I don't have much money. I didn't know what to do. I just couldn't have a normal life.

I cried myself to sleep feeling alone and hopeless.

I woke up to a phone call from the police station. Anthony Smith had been sent into the jail for killing people and the police wanted to talk to me about what I found out in his mansion.

I walked into the washroom and looked at my reflection in the mirror. I looked like a goddamn mess! No, I should clean up, I wanted justice for my sister. A sister that I have never even seen!

I washed my face and took a shower, preparing to go to the police station.

I tied my hair up into a ponytail and wore the clothes that Lance's man had bought for me. They said it was his order.

I have no choice but to wear it since all my things were left in Anthony's mansion.

After I reached the police station, one of the police officers came and greeted me. I told them all I witnessed and they said that Anthony will be sentenced to jail for the rest of his life for murdering four innocent people. He admitted that he had killed Hazel and the three women I found in his house.

I asked the officer if I could see him and he led me to the visitor's room.

I waited in the room for a while and they finally brought him out. He looked at me and lowered his head.

"Why did you kill Hazel?" I asked.

## Chapter 212 I love her!

He looked at me for a while and started to talk, "You know, the both of you look just like each other. But she was prettier. I fell in love with her after I first saw her in university. I still remember how thrilled I was when she said she would marry me. I was so happy that we got to live the rest of our lives together. But after we got married, I couldn't contain my anger whenever we fought. So, I hit her. I hit her and hoped that she would stop shouting at me when we fought. After I hit her for the first time, she stopped loving me and I noticed that. She can't stop loving me! And all of these went on and on. Until one day when I came back home, I saw that she was packing her stuff and was planning to leave me. I couldn't let that happen. So, I hit her, hard. But she still wanted to escape, so I killed her." Tears started to roll down his cheek.

"I didn't plan to kill her. I really didn't. I just wanted her to stay with me." He added, burying his head in his hands.

"What about the other three girls?" I asked.

"After Hazel died, I couldn't sleep. So, I went out and found girls who looked like my Hazel. I kidnapped them and I locked them in the mansion. But they all wanted to run away from me so I killed them too. Why did all of them want to leave me? Why....."

"That's not love, Anthony. If you really loved Hazel, you wouldn't have hurt her." I said.

"But she said that she loved me! If she loved me, she wouldn't want to leave me!" He shouted at me.

"Because your love was toxic! It was crazy! Do you know why I wanted to leave Lance Mason? Because I thought he was insane! Turns out you are the mad one, Anthony. I shouldn't have trusted you at all."

He stared at me and he started to cry again.

"But maybe Hazel did love you. You see, she had a lot of chances to call the police but she didn't. Maybe that's because she hoped that you would change, but you didn't, it must have been very disappointing to her."

I stood up and left the visitor's room.

Just when I walked out of the police station. I saw a man running towards the police station but he stopped when he saw me.

"Hazel?" He asked.

The man looked like he was in his fifties.

"Hazel?! Are you Hazel?" The man asked.

"No, Sir." I answered. He knew Hazel? He looked familiar but I am sure that I haven't met him before.

He nodded his head and continued his way. I left and went back to the hotel.

After I got my things back, I went for a walk around the hotel. Singapore is a busy country; you could see people rushing here and

there every day. I looked at the people passing by me and I thought of Lance and Lexi.

I wanted to know if they were doing well without me. Would Lexi cry for mommy after not seeing me for so long? Would Lance tell her that mommy left her alone again? Would Lance meet another woman and date her?

I laughed at myself. I have been wanting this freedom for so long and all I could think about was Lance Mason and my daughter. How pathetic was I?

Suddenly someone tapped my shoulder and I turned around.

"Please come with us, Miss Gomez. Mr. Weasley wants to meet you. He wants to talk about Miss Hazel."

I was sceptical at first but I followed him and got into his car.

I was being sent to a huge building. It looks like some big company.

"Miss Gomez." The man called and held his hand out to help me get out of the car.

I put my hand in his and got out of the car. I was escorted by him to the highest floor. Who would want to meet me?

The elevator door opened and I saw the old man I met outside the police station.

"Jennie." The old man called.

"Mr. Weasley?" I asked.

## Chapter 213 Mr Weasley

"That's me. Have a seat please." He pointed at the sofa and sat down.

"Thank you. May I know who you are?" I sat down and asked.

"I am Hazel's father, George Weasley." He answered.

I stared at him for a few seconds.

"Do you remember the first time we met?" He asked.

"Of course." I said.

He nodded and said, "You know, you look just like Hazel. So, after I met you at the police station, I tried to dig your information and your background. I found out that you are my daughter too. I never know I have another daughter."

My eyes widened in shock. What in the world just happened? My real father, was in front of me? Oh my god.....

I stared at my this man, who claimed to be my real father, not knowing what to say, "I....."

"I am sorry for not finding out who you are earlier. If I found out about you earlier you wouldn't have to suffer for so many years. You wouldn't be tortured by the Mason's. It was a one-night stand between your mother and I. I didn't know that she was pregnant, if I knew that I would have taken up the responsibility." He looked sorry.

"My mother doesn't even know who my father is, so I don't blame you." I said. "But are you sure that I really am your daughter?" I asked suspiciously. After all that has happened, I have learned to not trust easily.

"Yes, I did some digging. You are in fact, my daughter. I met your mother in a bar back in Denmark. She was a beautiful woman, I could never forget her face, but it was just a one night stand, nothing much." Mr Weasley said. "I also just found out that my daughter, Hazel, actually knew about your existence. I wonder why she didn't tell me." He added.

"She must have been afraid that it would break your relationship with your wife, Mrs Weasley." I suggested.

"Ah, yes. That might be the case. Hazel has always been a very kind soul, her mother on the other hand, is the opposite of her. If she found out that I have another daughter out there, she would make sure you and your mother wouldn't live to see the sunlight the next day. Perhaps Hazel was afraid that her mother might hurt you." Mr Weasley, or dad, sighed.

"Can I ask you something personal, Mr Weasley?" I looked down on my lap.

"Yes?"

"If your wife is so fierce, why did you even cheated on her? Why do men cheat? Why do they want to get married and still cheat on their wives?" I asked. "I don't mean anything bad, I'm still thankful you and

mom brought me to this world, but I just can't seem to understand how men think!" I added. I was nervous.

Mr Weasley is a rich and powerful man too, but of course still not on the same level as Lance, but he is still very successful in the Asian market.

"It was just a one night stand, your mother was serving me that night. I went to Denmark for a business trip. I got a little tipsy and this happened. I didn't mean to cheat on my wife, for your information, I still love her. She's become very nice after our only daughter died." Mr Wesley explained.

"I am happy that I found you. Are you planning on going back to the States? I know that you have a daughter." He added.

I shook my head, "I do have a daughter but I don't think I am going back."

"Do you want to come back home?" He asked while smiling. We share the same smile.

Home. I have never had a real home before. The word 'home' triggered something in me and my eyes started to get wet. I stared at the man in front of me. Dad, my real father!

I nodded slowly. He stood up and walked towards me. I got up from my seat and walked into his opened arms. He hugged me tightly. I'm home, with my family.

"I am so sorry for coming late, Jennie." He said.

"It's okay. I am with you now, Mr Weasley." I smiled, tears rolling down my cheeks. I never expected to know my real father in a place like this! I might have been very unlucky in Singapore, but at least I found my real family, although I am still an illegitimate child. I was happy that my real father is a responsible man, and didn't feel disgusted by the fact that I was an accident between him and mother.

He patted my back softly while I cried. "Just call me dad, alright?"

## Chapter 214 Mother

I nodded and sniffed. "I am sorry for what happened to Hazel." I said.

He shook his head and said, "I thought that it was illness that took her away from me. I never thought that Anthony would kill her. Hazel never told me that she was abused, she always said that Anthony treated her well and she loved him."

"It's okay now. Anthony Smith is getting his punishment now." I said.

"I am happy that I found another daughter after I lose one." He held my hand and said.

.....

After that, I moved into the Weasley's mansion and started to work for my father. Mrs Weasley was shock to see me when I arrived at his mansion. "HAZEL! Is that really you?" she rushed to me and held my face in both his hands, her eyes were teary.

"Mrs Wesley, nice to meet you. Um....., I'm Jennie Gomez." I tried to explain.

"Honey, this is my daughter..... it's hard to explain but I had a one night stand with her mother....." Father tried to explain.

Mrs Weasley rolled her eyes and ignored him. "I don't care anymore. I'm already in my fifties, and that happened nearly 25 years ago, don't think you could fool me. I found out a long time ago." Father stood beside her, smiling awkwardly.

"Now, now, Jennie right? Don't worry, I welcome you too! You look so much like my dear Hazel! Call me mother from today onwards, okay? You are now my daughter too!" Mrs Weasley said excitedly, her tears rolling down her cheeks.

"Mother!" I cried out softly.

I was stunned. I never thought this would happen to me. This was like a fairy-tale! I found my father, and her wife was willing to accept me as her own child! I started to cry out of happiness. Mrs Weasley pulled me into her arms and we hugged each other. Father joined us and he whispered, "Family."

He prepared everything for me, from a new and huge bedroom, to personal maids and a good position at work. I'm treated like a real princess by my father! His mansion in Singapore was huge! He arranged the second biggest room for me the space of the room took up one whole floor of the mansion! He then hired an interior designer for me but I said I wanted to design my own room, since I was an interior designer too. Father was proud of me.

"Would I ever be able to see my grand-daughter?" he asked. Mother stood beside and widened her eyes in shock. "You have a daughter? Where is she?"

I smiled awkwardly and briefly explained to them about my life with the Mason's and Lance.

Both of them looked very displeased when I finished my story. "I'm going to beat the hell out of this Lance guy!" Father said angrily.

"No, dad, it's fine. No worries, I'm free from him already. Don't create any problems. He is very powerful in the business world, we better don't provoke him." I quickly explained and tried to calm him down. My new parents nodded and hugged me again. Then they left me alone to have some personal time.

Father had also asked me if I wanted to change my name to Jennie Wesley, I said no, I wanted to keep my adopted father's name. I wanted to keep it because I still love the father who raised me up. Father is a very understanding man, he nodded and said I could do whatever I want. I was pleased.

I finally got to live a normal life. A normal life without revenge, hatred and Lance Mason. A normal life without drama.



## Chapter 215 Secret Guardian Angel

I was finally working again. I started working for my father in his company, the Weasley's Company. Father's business is under the raw material industry, like Niklaus' Family, but father targets the Asian market more than the Western and European countries, so there were not much competition going on at all.

Father arranged for me to be the manager, but I said no. Although I am an interior designing student, there wasn't any job in the company suited for me. So instead of jumping straight to manager, I wanted to prove my own capabilities. I didn't want any of the workers here to think that I could be the manager because of the relationship with my father.

I started working as a small clerk, then slowly moved up to assistant and then to secretary. The process of moving up to secretary of my father, the boss, took me nearly 2 years!

2 years might be a short time, but to me, it was a long time. My Lexi is nearly 3 years old by this time, and I hadn't seen Lance for 2 years. I didn't even heard a single thing from him, not even the news.

I didn't want to admit this, but I had been thinking about him a lot. Ever since I officially moved to Singapore, I had been trying to hear from him, from the news, tabloids or social medias, but it was as if he was gone from my life! I knew I wanted this, but why did it feel so empty?

I was getting off work when father stopped me and said, "Jennie, it's time I make sure you are the heiress of my company, I'm not young anymore. I need to make sure I have an inheritor."

"Father, but I only worked here 2 years, don't you think people might find it unsuitable for me?" I was quite nervous. I have never thought of taking over a company because I didn't feel like I could do a good job.

"I have seen the way you work, daughter. You are good, steady and very smart. I trust you can do a good job of taking over the company." Father said.

"Hm, alright father, but I might need some time to prepare and get more training....." I sighed nervously.

Father nodded and said, "No problem, I will personally teach you everything you need to know to manage my business."

Father then left and went to meet mother for dinner. I told him I wanted to go shopping alone. Just when I was about to leave the building, a delivery guy came and give me flowers, again.

This was the 700th day I received the same bouquet of flowers! I didn't know who sent me everyday, during the same time. I asked the delivery man but he said he's not supposed to tell me. Was it a creepy young man who was stalking me? Or was it Anthony Smith that psycho?

I took the flowers and smiled awkwardly at the man. I have been seeing this delivery guy for nearly 2 years! It's strange to be receiving flowers everyday from the same guy and still not know who sent it to me.

A lot of strange things had been happening to me ever since I started working here. I always thought the colleagues here might make a fuss about me being the boss's illegitimate daughter, but they didn't. They treated me very well and were kind to me. I asked father if he warned his workers to be this way but he said no.

I pulled myself back from my thoughts and headed to the mall. Since it was near, I decided to walk there. I was strolling along the streets when I saw a very familiar shadow.

Lance? Was that really him? What was he doing here?!

I walked quickly towards the person and kept on pushing onto the pedestrians. I didn't know why, but I felt like this must be my fate, all my life I have been trying to push him away, to leave him, so why was I so excited now that I saw someone like him?

"LANCE MASON! IS THAT YOU?!" I shouted across the streets. He was too far from me and I couldn't keep up! I needed to make sure it was him.

Why was I starting to miss him? Why was I starting to long for him? Why am I so damn toxic?!

The man continued walking and didn't turn back around. I started to panic, I really wanted to make sure it was him. Did he come to see me? I needed to know for sure!

"LANCE!" I yelled. But the man just didn't turn around. Tears started to form in my eyes, I started to run towards the man, but there were many cars and people around! The night was young, but why did I feel like it was a long night?

Suddenly, the man was gone. I stood there, trying to catch a breath. Then, I couldn't take it anymore and squatted down in the middle of the streets. I started to sob. It was at this time I realized that I have relied and depended on Lance Mason more than I thought, I miss him! I didn't want to admit that I love him, but I did miss him, a lot!

"Lance, please, just let me see you." I cried into my own knees. The people walking around me didn't stop, they just continued with their own businesses. I didn't know how long I was on the ground, crying, because when I finally got up, the streets were already not busy. Many people had gone home.

I didn't feel like shopping anymore, so I walked like an aimless cat in the streets, slowly back to my mansion. It was a long journey, but I didn't want to take the train or the cab. I needed some time alone, to think about myself and Lance, and my Lexi.

I still didn't understand why I would miss this man..... and my dear, dear Lexi, I missed her so damn much! I promised Lance I would go see Lexi, but I didn't. In this 2 years, I didn't see her, because I was afraid that once I see her, and him, I wouldn't want to leave anymore.

After a few hours of walking, I reached home. Father and mother came rushing to me when I reached the doorstep! "Jennie, why do you look like a mess? Have you been crying? What happened?" father asked worriedly.

"Jennie, why are you home so late? What happened, dear?" mother asked too.

I shook my head and forced out a smile, "Nothing, I just miss someone. I thought I saw that person, but I didn't."

"Oh, honey." Mother sighed and pulled me into a hug. "I thought you said you hated him, why are you missing him now?" mother knew who I was talking about.

I started to cry again. "I don't know, mother. I realized I have relied on him way too much than I have expected, and he is already in a place in my heart, I didn't even realize this until today!"

Reward

400

Comments

3

## Chapter 216 A letter from me to you

They always say, if there's hatred, there's love. Love and hate are the same feelings, one is positive while one is negative. I hated Lance so much, with all my heart, and in my hatred, I didn't realize there was likeliness. I didn't realize there was love in our hatred. Maybe I was touched by his love for me, because I never had anyone love me before?

I went back to my room and sat on the bed. I suddenly remembered the envelope Lance gave me. It was the only thing I brought with me. I took out my luggage and then pulled the envelope out from the pocket.

It was a white envelope. I recognized Lance's handwriting on top of the envelope.

'To Jennie Gomez, my love.' It wrote.

With shaking hands, I opened the envelope and took a piece of paper out. It wasn't money, all this time I thought it was just a cheque or money for me, but it was a letter from Lance. He wrote it on his own.

Dear Jennie,

Hey, I don't know why I am writing this but I want to tell you something. Actually, I don't know where to start because I feel like I have a lot of things to tell you. A lot of apologies to make.

I know all of the revenges you have taken on me are what I deserve. I always know that you are the innocent one, you are the last person who has to go through all of these nightmares. But I just couldn't stop myself from hating you, I just couldn't. And I regret it, I regret ruining your peaceful life and making you a bad person.

You were just a 5 years old girl who just lost her father when you first came into the Mason's mansion. You were abandoned by your grandparents after your father passed away so your mother had no choice but to bring you with her into the Mason's family. You once told me that your father loved you so much that you wouldn't find another man who will love you as much as your father anymore. It was then I knew your heart was broken when your father passed away.

I don't feel sorry for you because I hated you so much back then. I just wanted to see you suffer, so that I will feel better. I could have kicked you out of the Mason's mansion back then but I didn't, I wanted to keep you around and torture you slowly. Your mother has never helped you whenever I bully you, because she knew that if she helped you, she would indirectly provoke me and I might kick her out. She knew it.

You have suffered for so many years because of me and I regret it so much. I want you to know that if I could turn back time and undo everything, I would. I will treat you better than that and we wouldn't be like this today. You could have lived your life happily like other girls, yet I made that impossible for you.

I love you so much and I regret everything I have done to you. I want to use the rest of my life to make it up for you but I know you wouldn't let me. You just want to get rid of me.

I know you were suffering when you were with me but I just couldn't let you go and I know I am selfish. That's all because I was afraid to lose you.

I have been thinking what my life would be like after you left me and I couldn't seem to imagine my life without you. Because you are my happiness, my everything.

But I am your nightmare, so I am letting you go now. You must be very happy to finally get to leave me because you have tried your best to leave me for the past 20 years.

I will take care of Lexi. I will tell her that her mommy loves her so much. You will be her one and only mommy. I wouldn't let her forget you. I know deep in your heart you love her too, just as much as I do. She is the best gift you have ever given to me and I will love her with everything I have. I will never let any man break her heart like how I break yours. I will dress her like a little princess everyday just like how you wished you could dress yourself when you were a kid. I will try my best to make her happy.

You are the most beautiful woman I have ever met in my life and I am in love with everything about you. I want you to know that you look the prettiest when you smile, although you barely smile when you are with me. So, never forget how beautiful you are, Jennie. I wish I told you that. I wish I told you so many things you don't know about yourself.

Even though you don't owe me anything, I want you to promise me something.

Promise me you will try to love again. I never want you to fall in love with another man but I want you to be happy. If you ever find a man who loves you and would treat you like a queen, I hope that you will try to love again. I wish that he will take care of you, make you happy and do things that I couldn't do for you.

Promise me you will be stronger. Don't ever let someone push you down and take advantage of your kindness. Promise me you will stand up for yourself whenever there are people like me who want to hurt you. I hope that you can protect yourself. And promise me you will stay away from people like me. You will only get hurt again in the end.

I couldn't stop thinking about all those bad things I have done to you and I am so sorry for that. Seeing you in pain is the image I will never be able to forget. I don't want to see you in pain anymore.

I am letting you go, Jennie.

You are finally free from me. Now, take a deep breath and look up at the sky, forget about me. Forget about what I have done to you, forget everything about me and start a new life.

All I want for you is for you to be healthy, safe and the most important is to be happy.

Live the life you want; I won't appear in your life anymore.

If I am able to meet you in heaven, I will be so happy but I know I won't be going there. I love you, Jennie. And I will love you until the end

of time.

I want you to know that I never faked my love for you, I do love you.

So now this is goodbye. You are free for good.

Lance Mason

## Chapter 217 Coma

Tears started rolling down my cheeks like waterfall at this point. I never realized he loves me this much. I always thought he might have just liked me a little since I am a beautiful woman, but no, he truly loves me. He abused me for most of my life, yet here I was, crying my eyes out because of his letter, because I could finally feel his sincere love for me.

I sniffed and put the letter back into the envelope. Then, I put it in a drawer to keep it safely. I didn't know if I would still have the chance to see him in person again, or see my Lexi. I recalled the man in the streets earlier, was that really him or just someone who looked like him? He would never ignore me like that if I yelled at him so loudly. SO, I guessed it must be me missing him too much that I was starting to hallucinate.

Strange, I hadn't heard from him for so long, he wasn't active on social medias, he wasn't even appearing in news anymore. What happened?

I picked up my phone and started pacing around my room, thinking if I should call him to check up on him or to ignore my guts. I went onto my Facebook, Instagram and WhatsApp. No, there was nothing from him.

Did he deleted me from his contacts? Or did he blocked me? These questions kept appearing in my mind. Finally, I couldn't take it anymore and dialled his number. The ringtone rang and rang but he never picked up. After the fifth call, when I was about to give up, someone picked up the phone.

"Hello?" it was a woman's voice.

"Hi....." I didn't know what to say or feel. Why was a woman picking up his call? Was she his new girlfriend?

"Hello?" the woman asked once again.

"Um, is Lance Mason there?" I asked with shaking voice.

"May I know who this is?" the woman asked, she sounded mature.

"Um, he didn't save this contact?" I asked once again.

"He did, but under a love emoji, so I don't know if you're his family or what." The girl said, I could feel her getting annoyed.

"Oh, I'm Jennie Gomez." I said, a smile climbed it's way onto my lips, knowing that he saved me under a love emoji.

"Oh, so you're Jennie. Sorry for being rude just now, I'm his cousin sister. Lizzy Mason." The woman, whose name is Lizzy, said to me.

"Right, hi Lizzy, is Lance around?"

"Um..... he's....." Lizzy started to stutter. "He's currently in coma....." she said finally, after a long moment of pause.

"What did you just say? Lance Mason is in coma?!" I nearly yelled into the phone.

"Yea, long story short, he got into an accident and he's been unconscious ever since." Lizzy explained.

I felt like my world just collapsed. I used to wish that Lance would die, or for him to get the punishment he deserved, now he's gotten his punishment, but I was feeling in despair. I felt like my heart broke into a million pieces and they could never be healed.

I took a huge breath and calmed myself, "How did this happen? And when did this happen, Lizzy?"

"It was around a year ago..... I wanted to contact you but I didn't know how to. But don't worry, Lexi is in good hands. Leo is taking care of her now." Lizzy explained to me.

"I.....I....." I couldn't stand it any longer and started to broke down. I cried and cried. I was sad that my daughter's father was in coma, and I was also sad that I didn't realize my feelings for him sooner.

"Are you okay? Don't worry, the doctor said he will wake up someday. He just needs someone's voice that might trigger something in him.....OH Right! Where are you? Maybe you can wake him up?" Lizzy suddenly cried out.

"Me?. I'm in Singapore..... can I really?" I asked sceptically.

"I'm not sure, but the doctor said something like that. It might now happen magically though, this takes time, Jennie." Lizzy sighed.

"Are you taking care of him? How come I never heard about you when I was in the Mason's?" I asked, confused.

"Oh, I have always been in Sweden. Although we are the Mason's my family and his were never really close. I am personally close with Lance, though. So when I heard about him, I flew here to take care of him. Leo had too much on him already." Lizzy explained.

"How did the accident happen? Anything on it?" I asked, I had a bad feeling about it.

"Tiffany....." Lizzy answered. "She was too mad and jealous, and since she couldn't hurt you anymore, she went insane and targeted Lance. Crazy bitch!" Lizzy said angrily.

"I'll contact you later, I'm going to book a flight back now. You guys are in Denmark , right?" I asked.

I decided on the spot that I needed to fly back to check up on him. I needed to see him!

"No, he was actually in Denmark when it happened, since Tiffany is based on Denmark, but I transferred him to the best hospital in Cali, plus I don't want to see the rest of his family, so....." Lizzy explained.

"Alright, Cali it is. Bye, thanks for telling me, Lizzy." I sighed. Tears still rolling down. I hung up the phone and finally cried out loud. I had been holding my cries in. I cried and cried like there is no tomorrow.

Lance Mason, why is it so hard for us to be apart? Why did we have to fall for each other, even when we were so toxic? Why?

Reward

400

Comments

0



## Chapter 218 Lexi Mason

After hanging up the phone, I immediately booked the most recent flight to California. I couldn't wait to get there and find out how Tiffany Abel was able to even touch a single hair on Lance.

I went to my parents' room and knocked on their door.

"Jennie, is that you?" mother's voice sounded from the inside of the room.

"Yes, may I speak to both of you?" I asked politely.

"Of course! Come in, this is your home, you can come and go whenever you like!" father said.

I pushed opened their door and entered. Father was smoking a cigar on his huge chair by the window, while mother was reading a book on their bed.

"Dear, what's wrong?" mother asked, once she saw my solemn face.

"I will be flying to California later..... sorry for not telling you guys, but it's an emergency." I said, my voice weak.

"Lance?" father asked, raising an eyebrow at me.

"Yea, he's in a coma." I explained.

Father and mother are both very understanding people, they hated Lance for making my life a living hell, but they also started to realize that both me and Lance have feelings for each other, so they agreed to let me go.

"When will you be back?" father asked again.

"I don't know. I want to investigate this accident and make the person pay for what she did!" I said, my hands balled into fists.

Mother sighed and nodded. Father also looked worried. "Please be careful there, if you ever need any help, just call us okay? We'll put everything down and come to you. Your mother and I finally found you and have a daughter again, we don't want anything to happen to you too!"

My eyes got teary; I was touched. "Alright." I nodded, sniffing my nose.

And with that, I left their room and started packing my stuff to head to California. I asked the family driver to send me to the airport. After processing all my documents in the airport, I boarded the plane. The whole time I was in the plane, I couldn't even sit still. I kept fiddling around, looking around. I was nervous, I wanted to reach California as soon as possible.

But I didn't know how to react or what to say when I see Lance and Lexi.

After many hours, I finally reached. The moment I stepped out of the plane, I immediately dialled Lizzy's number.

"Jennie?" Lizzy picked up.

"Yes, I'm in California now, I'm heading to the hospital immediately.

Are you there now?" I asked.

"Yes, yes. You can come now. Oh right, Lexi and Leo are here too. We are in the VIP ward 1." Lizzy said, before hanging up.

I called a cab and headed straight to Lance.

When I reached, I literally ran towards the VIP ward. But I stopped when I was in front of the ward one door. I was scared. What do I say when I see them?

Just when I was about to push the door open, Leo pulled the door from inside and we came face to face.

"Jennie!" Leo called out.

"Hey, brother. How have you been?" I greeted him awkwardly.

Leo smiled and said, "Fine, have been quite busy, plus I have been taking care of Lexi. I offered to, because I know Lance would be furious if he found out nobody took care of her. He doesn't really trust the nannies too much when he's not around." Leo said.

I nodded and thanked him, "Thanks for taking care of our daughter. I'm a failed mother....."

"Please don't say that, come in." Leo said, pulling me into the room.

Lizzy and Lexi were both on the sofa. Lizzy was reading a book to Lexi.

My dear Lexi, she was around 3+ years old now, she looked even prettier! She looked up at me when I entered the room and she called out, "Mommy!"

Tears started to blur my vision the moment she called me mommy. I couldn't hold it in, I missed her so much! "Lexi! Come, let mommy take a look at you!" I said, sniffing my nose.

Lexi got up and slowly walked towards me. She was taller, and bigger. I squatted down and held her in my arms, hugging her tightly. I missed her so, so much! "Mommy, where have you been? Daddy left me alone with Leo, and you left me too." Lexi said with her baby voice.

The bitterness in my heart started to spread. This poor child must have thought that both her parents abandoned her! "No, baby. Daddy is here, he's just taking a long rest. Mommy is here too now, mommy won't leave you anymore." I said. From the corner of my eyes, I saw Leo's eyes widened when I said I won't leave again.

## Chapter 219 Wake Up

"Really, mommy? Will you not leave me anymore? I miss mommy!" Lexi started to sob.

I started to cry too, looking at my beloved daughter, crying because she missed me, because she thought I abandoned her.

"Yes, baby, I won't leave you anymore. Now, bring me to see your daddy, will you?" I asked.

Lexi nodded her head and pulled onto my finger. She pulled me to the bed of Lance.

My heart was beating very fast, I tried to calm myself. Then, Lance's face appeared in front of me. He was behind the curtains, on the bed. He looked so peaceful on the bed, his face pale and thin, but he still looked so handsome.

I sat down beside his bed, Lizzy came and carried Lexi away. Then Leo said, we'll leave you and brother along for now then."

I nodded my head. They left and went to the hospital's cafeteria.

I touched Lance's hands, and slowly caressed his hands. I could feel myself starting to cry again.

"Lance Mason, I'm here. I'm back to see you, yes you heard it right. To see you, Lance Mason. Can you open your eyes, please?" I sighed. I knew he wouldn't, the doctor already said, it depends on his will to stay alive, if he wanted to, he will be able to wake up sooner.

"Lance, I know you can hear me. I want to tell you this, before I lose my courage to say it again." I started. "I realized I have feelings for you too, but I don't know if I am just confused, or if I really do love you. I missed you when I was in Singapore." I took a breathe and calmed myself down before continuing.

"Lizzy told me you have been in come for such a long time, and I didn't know about it at all! I was always trying to see you in the news or social media, but there were no news about you being in coma, your family must have tried to cover this up. Lance Mason, stop sleeping, we have a daughter to raise, remember?"

"Lance, Lexi is already 3 years old, she's getting prettier and prettier, just like me hahaha." I chuckled, tears rolling down my cheeks at the same time.

"Didn't you say you love me? I read your letter. Your letter was the trigger in me, it triggered my realization that I love you. If you really love me, wake up!" I cried.

But he didn't move at all, he remained there, sleeping peacefully. I stood up and kissed his forehead. Then I helped him clean his face with a wet towel. I also helped him comb his hair and cut his fingernails.

By the time I was done, it was already night time. I didn't even notice. Where was Lizzy, Leo and my daughter? They couldn't have been in the cafeteria for so long, right?

I dialed Leo's number. "Hello? Jennie?" Leo picked up.

"Yeah, where are you guys? I asked.

"Oh, we went back to the mansion, we figured you must have wanted some time with Lance....." Leo explained.

"Oh, good. Thank you!" I said. "I'll be staying here in the hospital with Lance, take care of Lexi for me. tell Lizzy she can rest now; I'll take care of Lance." I explained.

"Alright, Lizzy heard you and said thank you." Leo chuckled. Then we hung up.

I went to clean up myself and got onto the bed beside Lance. It has been a long day for me, and I was tired. Just before I went to sleep, I decided to go and meet Tiffany the next day.

This bitch was going to get it from me, I won't make her live peacefully.

How could she be this ridiculous?

I couldn't take it and picked up my phone.

I dialed her number. "What's up, Ms Gomez?" she picked up on the first ring.

"Mrs Mason, you mean." I said sarcastically.

"Don't make a fool of yourself, Lance didn't even marry you." She scoffed.

"Yet." I said.

"You....." she started but I cut her off. "What the f\*ck did you do to Lance? Why is he in coma for so long?" I asked, getting angry.

"Hahaha.....oh my god, Ms Gomez, are you finally in love with this cruel man?!" Tiffany laughed out loud.

"Answer me!" I nearly shouted but I remembered this is the hospital.

"Why not we have a chat tomorrow? Hm? Let me tell you all about your dear Lance Mason! I will tell you how cruel of a man he is!" Tiffany shrieked into the phone, I could hear her voice breaking at the end. She was crying.

"Fine. I'll meet you at the mall near the hospital." I said coldly.

"Sure, let's meet in Starbucks." She said, sniffing her nose.

I hung up and sighed. I needed to find out about what really happened when I was away. Why did all hell broke loose?

Hi, dear readers, sorry for the slow update these few days, I was really busy. But the story is coming to an end VERY soon, so I hope you guys will like it and stay tuned!

## Chapter 220 Meet Up

The next morning, I woke up with a headache. I must now have gotten a good night sleep. I went to check up on Lance and then cleaned myself up.

Then, I helped clean his face again. I sat beside him on the bed and started talking to him again like yesterday. I didn't know if he could hear me or not, but I just wanted to talk to him. I knew miracles wouldn't happen, this wasn't a drama, but then I still hoped he would wake up soon.

At around noon, I texted Tiffany, telling her that I'll be heading to the mall in half an hour's time. She read my message but didn't reply me. I didn't know if she was going to turn up, but I went anyway.

When I arrived at Starbucks, she was already there. She ordered two cups of latte, one obviously for me.

"Here's your cup of coffee." She said casually. Why was she acting so casual and friendly?

I sat down and gave her a strange look. "Don't get me wrong, I have no intention of being your friend, but then like you, I'm also tired of revenge. I had been living in jealousy for too long. It's time to stop." She said.

I took a sip of my coffee. "Thanks for the coffee, I have no intention of being your friend too. So, what did you want to tell me about Lance?" I asked. "Wait, tell me how you were able to harm Lance first." I added quickly.

Tiffany looked out at the people walking by and rested her chin on one of her hands. "I was jealous, Jennie. I loved him, so much, but he only had eyes for you alone. That made me go crazy with jealousy. Do you know he was even willing to pay my family millions of dollars to get rid of me? Do you know how it felt to be rejected by the man you loved so much?"

I remained silent, and drank my coffee silently.

"Then, one day I met my relative, the Sands, Niklaus to be exact. Both our families were never close but me and Niklaus are still considered okay. I told him I wanted to harm Lance, but he didn't agree to it." She said.

I thought Niklaus would help Tiffany, but he didn't.

"I knew Niklaus wouldn't dare to hurt Lance, Lance is way more powerful than him. So I lied to Niklaus. I said Lance was hiring people to harm me, I needed the best bodyguards and men around me. Niklaus believed me and sent me his fiercest men. Then I paid those men to harm Lance." Tiffany sighed.

"How did they harm them?" I asked, my blood boiling,

"They waited until he was alone in his office and burst in. Even Lance's guards weren't able to stop my men because they are much bigger in size and height. It was one against five huge men, Lance against

my 5 men..... one of them hit the back of his head way too hard and he fainted straight away." Tiffany explained, I didn't see any guilt or remorse in her eyes.

"Why the hell would you let 5 huge men attack the man you loved so much?!" I nearly yelled.

"BECAUSE HE HURT ME! I have always been the princess in my family, men were always around me, begging for my attention, but why did Lance never even give me an eye? He hurt me, used money to get rid of me and even threaten to make my family go bankrupt if I ever harm you again. Do you know how much it hurts to hear this from the man you love?!" Tiffany yelled.

The people around us were starting to stare. But we didn't care.

"So you decided to hurt him instead of hurting me, right? Since he threatened to make you go bankrupt if you harm me, you then turned to him?" I asked, shaking my head in disbelief.

"YES! I want him to pay for what he did to me." Tiffany said, tears forming in her eyes.

"Tiffany, do you realize that I have been through worse than you? You were just threatened by him, and humiliated by money, do you have any idea what I have been through?" I asked.

Tiffany is a powerful family's daughter, of course she wouldn't be able to take it if anybody treated her this way, but it was nothing compared to what I have experienced!

"What could you possibly have been through that is worse than me?!" Tiffany asked, tears rolling down her cheeks.

No matter what, we were both women who's gotten hurt by the man we used to love. Her, by Lance and me, by Leo.

"Do you know Lance Mason raped me? He abused me physically, mentally and verbally. He called me a whore, a slut, a bastard, a bitch and a trash." I said, softly. I saw Tiffany's eyes widening in shock.

"Impossible."

"I'm speaking the truth. But that was when we still hated each other. And yet, he fell for me, no matter how much he hated me, and I was able to turn my hatred for him into something good. You see, I was once like you, I tried to take my revenge on him, but I failed." I said.

"But he loved you so much, how could he have possibly abused you?" Tiffany asked in shock.

"Because I know he couldn't manage his anger well. To me, I personally think he really needs to see a therapy for anger management. But you see, I have obviously been through so much than you! To be honest, maybe you didn't know about this, the reason why he hated me so much was because my mother was his father's mistress, which makes me the step-sister of Leo and Lance Mason." I explained, shaking my head.

"I know, I found out long ago." Tiffany admitted.

"So how could you harm him like that, knowing that what he did to you is actually the least he could do already?" I asked, raising my voice.

"I don't know, I was too jealous and hurt. But I still don't regret doing it. I never want to see his face ever again." Tiffany said and stood up, about to leave.

I pulled her wrists and told her to sit down. I wasn't finished. "Are you going to plead guilty for attempted murder?"

"Are you out of your f\*cking mind? No!" Tiffany scoffed.

"Then you leave me no choice!" I said, glaring at her.

"What are you going to do? Sue me? With what? Don't you know how rich and powerful my family is? Do you think you can sue me successfully?" Tiffany rolled her eyes.

I sighed and finished my coffee. I knew even if I don't do a thing, when Lance wake up, he would take action himself. So I said, "Fine, goodbye Tiffany. Don't let me see your face ever again."

Tiffany scoffed and smirked. "What makes you think I want to see your face?" and with that, she left the mall.

I sighed once again and stood up. Then I left and went back to the hospital. I sat beside Lance again, staring at him, talking to him as if he could hear me.

In the following one month, I lost a lot of weight, I didn't have appetite for food. All I did everyday was to talk to Lance, clean him up and cry beside, hoping he would wake up. Leo and Lizzy would take turns visiting also, even Lexi.

I even met Mrs Mason and Uncle Mason once when they came to see him, they didn't talk anything bad to me, just nodded and smiled politely..... I guess they must have moved on and get over their hatred for me too.

## Chapter 221 Lance?

I had been here for 2 months now and Lance hasn't woken up.

I was very worried about him. What if he never wakes up? What would happen to me and our daughter if he never wakes up?

I couldn't even imagine raising Lexi on my own. I wouldn't be able to take care of her on my own. And I praise Lance for doing it alone since she was born.

It pained me to see all the machines around him that were trying to keep him alive and him lying on the bed not moving at all.

It pained me to see the Lance Mason that used to be so obsessive and strong lying on the bed looking vulnerable.

All I wanted now was for him to wake up soon. I have so many things to tell him.

I have been thinking what I would say after he wakes up. I wanted to tell him that I love him too and I never want to leave him again. I know I said that already, but I wanted him to really hear me. However, it doesn't seem like he will wake up anytime soon.

I was taking a nap beside the bed after Lexi just went back home.

Lexi always sobbed quietly while sitting on my lap looking at Lance. She just wants a complete and happy family and everyone was making it hard for her, including me. I just wanted Lance to wake up now so we can be a happy family.

I was in the middle of my nap when I felt someone caressing my hair in my sleep. I thought it must be Lizzy or Leo, so I said in a sleepy and lazy voice, "Stop.....let me sleep in peace for a while....." but the hand on my head didn't stop, and I didn't hear any response from either of them either.

I opened my eyes slowly and tilted my head up. A pair of deep blue eyes were staring back at me. I thought I was dreaming so I pinched my face, and it hurt! The man in front of me started at me with a slight smile and tears in his eyes.

I could not believe my own eyes, Lance woke up! He finally woke up! But he looked really weak, laying against the pillow, watching me.

"You.....I.....you're awake!" I cried out softly. Tears were beginning to flood my eyes.

He nodded and one single tear rolled down his left cheeks. He opened his arms and I softly crashed into his chest. I hugged him tightly and cried out, "You're finally awake, you're here, I'm not dreaming!"

"Yes, you don't know how happy I am to see your face the moment I opened my eyes." Lance said with hoarse voice.

I then quickly pulled away from him and said, "Wait here, I need to call the doctor."

With that, I rushed out the room and called the doctor.

The doctor came and did a check-up for him. He has been staring at



me since he woke up, he must have been afraid that I would leave him again.

After the doctor left, I stood beside the bed looking at him and he stared back at me.

This was so awkward.

I have been thinking what to say when he wakes up but when he was awake, I couldn't say a single word. He looked at me and lowered his head.

"If you want to leave, you can leave now. You don't have to stay here if you don't want to."

"It's not like that." I quickly rushed to him and tilted his head up.

Tears were forming in his eyes and I was surprised to see him cry.

"Don't cry....." I stroked his face.

He grabbed my hand and kissed my hand, "I miss you so much, Jennie."

"I miss you too, Lance." I said.

He looked up at me with widened eyes and said, "Really?"

I nodded and sat down on the bed, "I won't leave again. I will stay here with you and Lexi."

He was extremely shock, "What?!"

"I will stay with you and Lexi from this moment onwards. I won't leave the both of you again." I held his big hand and said.

"Why?" He asked.

I looked at him and smiled, "Because I love the both of you."

## Chapter 222 Yes I Do!

I stopped for a few seconds and started to speak again, "After I went to Singapore, I realised that I couldn't stop thinking about you, everything I do, I think of you. I couldn't get you out of my mind after you set me free, and I didn't know why. I thought that I was just not used to not having you around me. But it was when the letter you wrote for me that made me cry like a baby made me realize, I love you too. I love you, Lance Mason. Even though you have done a lot of terrible things to me, even though you treated me badly, even though I hated you, I still love you."

I wiped away my tears and started again, "I didn't know why I called you when Anthony wanted to hurt me, but I feel safe whenever I hear your voice. I know you wouldn't let anyone hurt me. And you proved it. I am sorry for taking revenge on you again and again, I regret it. And I never want to hurt your feelings again. I'm sorry."

He looked surprised to hear what I just said.

He looked at me and said, "Come here."

He pulled me lying beside him and hugged me, "I am the one who should be saying sorry. Your life was miserable because of me. I am happy to know that you love me too, and I don't think I can ever express how happy I am right now with words. How were you in Singapore?"

"I was.....fine I guess? I found my real father, and his wife accepted me too. So I have a family back in Singapore." I explained to him.

"Oh, I know about that. After the time you called for my help, I started to ask my men in Singapore to check up on you in secret regularly and make sure you're okay. They later reported to me you were staying in George Weasley's mansion. I was confused so I did some digging, although I promised to not do that, but I was really curious. Then I found out. I'm really happy for you." He said, smiling at me like I'm his queen.

He played with my fingers when we spoke.

"Oh, so do you know who did this to you?" I asked, although I already knew.

"I don't know, but the men looked familiar. I think I have seen one of them around Niklaus. But why would Niklaus do this to me? He already earned so much from MY data....." he mumbled.

I looked down embarrassingly, I still remember when I stole his data for Nik.

"It was Tiffany Abel." I said shortly.

"What? She wouldn't, I think she is in love with me. Plus, why would she have such big men around her?" he asked, confused.

I teased him in a joking way and said, "What, are you defending your ex wife? Seems like you do have feelings for her too!" and I smirked.

Lance's face turned ugly and he immediately pulled me into his arms, "don't speak nonsense. I only have feeling for you and only you!

Your life had been miserable because of me. I am happy to know that you love me too, and I don't think I can ever express how happy I am right now with words. I want to make it up for you for the rest of my life, will you give me the chance?

I sat up from the bed when I heard what he said.

He sat up too and asked, "Will you marry me, Jennie Gomez?"

I was stunned. He really just proposed to me on the hospital bed. Tears of happiness formed in my eyes and I nodded. "Yes, YES!" I answered him, nodding my head like crazy.

Leo and Lexi entered the room suddenly. "Brother!" "Daddy!" both of them called out at the same time.

"Come here, my baby!" Lance called out to Lexi, and Lexi ran towards us. Leo carried her up and put her in Lance's arm.

Lexi hugged Lance tightly and Lance hugged her back.

"Brother, why didn't you call me when you wake up!" Leo asked, happy that his brother was finally awake.

"I was busy proposing." Lance answered.

Leo's eyes widened in shock. "You proposed? Here? In a hospital ward?"

"Yes, brother." Lance chuckled.

Lizzy came in suddenly and she was happy to see Lance awake too. "Cousin! You're up!"

"Yes, thank you for taking care of me all these time. I'll go see aunty and uncle soon when I recover completely." Lance said.

"It's fine, I know you are not close with them, don't force yourself." Lizzy waved her hands and said.

Lance smiled at her and turned back to Leo, his face becoming serious. "Jennie said it was Tiffany who did this to me, I want you to check it out for me."

"You're so slow brother, I already did. Yes, it was Tiffany." Leo explained. "I saw her meeting up with Jennie that day in a mall, I was just passing by. But she left earlier than Jennie. I stopped her before she got into her car and drove her to my place. Then I forced her to tell me everything. She admitted everything." Leo added.

Lance's face become deadly and he said in a cold voice, "Make sure she stays in jail for the rest of her life."

Reward

400

Comments

7

## Chapter 223 Make Love

"No, no wait." I stopped them before either of them called the cops. "She admitted to me, but she did this out of jealousy. And to be honest, I think a few years in jail would scare her enough, the people that should be in jail are the ones who hit you, the 5 men." I said.

"Since when did you become so kind and innocent again?" Lance teased.

I rolled my eyes and said, "I know what a woman can do when she's hurt or jealous, so I kind of understand her. I know she's evil and cruel, but I also hope one day she would find a man who loves her back and treats her well. Every girl deserves a chance to be happy." I said, staring right into Lance's eyes.

He sighed and nodded. "Alright, brother, can you handle this for me? I don't want to handle any of this, I just want to marry Jennie Gomez as soon as possible!"

I blushed and looked down, and I saw Lizzy smirking beside me. She then touched my shoulder and I looked up.

"Since he's awake now, I'll be heading back to Sweden tomorrow. I have a lot of my hands to take care of. Thanks for coming, Jennie. Thank you for waking him up, talking to him everyday." Lizzy said.

I nodded and smiled at her. "No problem. Have a safe flight tomorrow!"

"I'll see you guys soon again for the wedding! I'll be heading back to pack my stuff now! Bye, guys!" she waved her hands at us. Before she left, she gave Lexi a small peck on her cheeks and bid her farewell.

Lance knitted his eyebrows together and said, "Your saliva will dirty her cheeks."

Everyone rolled their eyes and laughed. Seems like Lance Mason was still Lance Mason after all, but he is now my Lance Mason. The Lance Mason that changed for the better.

We got out of the hospital and moved back to the mansion once he recovered fully. The doctors made sure his body was normal and strong before letting him discharge.

When we reached the mansion, Lance called out to the nannies, "Nannies! Bring Lexi to the playroom." Once she was out of sight, he carried me bridal style into his bedroom.

He put me on the bed slowly and came on top of me in a matter of seconds. His shirt was already off. I was impressed by his speed.

I chuckled and teased him, "Can't wait?"

"No, not a second." And with that he ripped my top apart, revealing my very proud breasts.

His hands covered my breasts and he buried his head in between them, "I didn't realize you weren't wearing a bra." I blushed at his words.

He suddenly looked up and I could see concern in his eyes,

"Can.....Can I?"

I nodded my head, happy he asked.

Without further wasting time, he took off our remaining clothes. This time, he was slow and gentle to me. He didn't shove himself into me immediately. He teased me again and again, and made sure I was ready.

He inserted his fingers into me slowly at first. I moaned out in pleasure. "Faster....."

He slowly picked up the speed and kept thrusting more fingers into me, he also circled my clit with his thumb. While doing that, I was slowly stroking his d\*ck. I heard him moaned in pleasure too.

Then, he took out his fingers and licked them. I blushed furiously and he smirked. He kissed me passionately after that, with one of his hands fondling my breasts. Then he slowly moved down to my neck and to my nipples. With one nipple in his mouth, he pinched my other nipple with his fingers. I arched my back up in pleasure and moaned again.

"Lance..... put it in me....."

I was embarrassed at myself for saying such a thing. Lance stared at me from my breasts, still sucking my nipples. "Say it again, louder." He commanded.

I blushed and didn't want to say it. So I used my hands and guided his d\*ck to my entrance. He lifted his body away from me and smirked down at me. "Say it one more time, or else I will tease the hell out of you."

He was rubbing the tip of his d\*ck against my entrance, making me shiver in pleasure.

"I want you inside of me, now!" I moaned out, closing my eyes and arching my back further.

And with that, he pushed himself inside of me. We have had sex so many times, but this time felt different. We were not having sex, we were making love. This time, it was filled with love, my consent and his willingness.

He thrust into me deeper and deeper. "Lance! Ah..... faster!" I moaned out.

He groaned out in pleasure and said, "Don't regret what you say."

And with that, he started pounding me faster and faster, harder and harder. The noise our bodies made and our breaths filled the room. I could feel myself reaching the climax. Suddenly, Lance stopped moving and pulled himself out of me.

I groaned in frustration.

He didn't say a word and turned my body around, making me on all fours. He then came in from behind me. He pulled my hair from the back but softly, and pounded me like an sex god. My eyes rolled back in pleasure and after a few more powerful thrust, my body started to shake.

"Lance! I'm coming, I'm coming! Ah....." I moaned out loudly. And with that, my body shiver like hell and I came. It was the best feeling ever. I could feel Lance also releasing his seeds into me. Then, he pulled himself out and laid down beside me.

We both sighed out in pleasure. He turned to me and smiled at me. "How was it?"

"It was.....amazing, Literally breath-taking. " I laughed.

-----The story of this novel is coming to an end. Before the end, I recommend to you another equally wonderful novel called Midnight Lover. Please search for 3797 in this Hey Novel App to read.

## Chapter 224 Happily Ever After

He smirked and said, "It will be our daily routine starting from tomorrow. Today is just warm up for you, warning you about what you just got yourself into."

I rolled my eyes and asked, "Tomorrow?"

"Yes, we are getting married tomorrow morning." He said without warning.

"What?! You didn't tell me! I haven't even prepared anything." I yelled in shock.

"No worries, I wanted a small wedding with only close friends and family. Lizzy will be flying back again, and Leo already helped me prepare a venue and sent out the invitations." He said. "And as for you wedding dress, I custom made one for you. It's in the closet next room." He added.

I immediately put a robe around me and hopped to the room. He followed behind.

When I opened the closet, I shook to my core. It was the most beautiful wedding dress I've ever seen! "Lance! It's beautiful! But are these real diamonds and gold silk?!" I gasped.

He nodded and said, "Yes, this costs me around 10 millions dollars but I don't care. As long as you love it!"

"Oh my god....." I didn't know what to say.

I turned around and gave him a passionate kiss. "Thank you, Lance, but you didn't have to spend SO much, I'll marry you even without a wedding dress!"

Lance smiled and hugged me in his arms. "Jennie, I love you. So, so much." He whispered into my ears.

"I love you too, Lance Mason, maybe not as much as how much you love me yet, but I do. And I will love you more and more as days goes by." I said, laying my head on his chest.

He led me out of the room and we went to the playroom to see Lexi. Lance asked the nannies to leave us.

"Lexi, your mommy and daddy are here. Miss us?" Lance asked, chuckling.

"Mommy! Daddy! Come play with me!" Lexi said. Lance picked her up and we sat together on the carpeted floor.

I smiled, thinking how happy I finally was. I finally try to love again, to love my husband and my daughter, my father and to love a woman who accepted me as her daughter.

I recalled the day when Lance proposed, I told my parents about it. They were supportive, they said as long as I think I made the right choice, I should go for it. Father said him and mom would come visit me in California from time to time. I even texted Javier, he was happy for me, and wished me all the best. He said he would come to my wedding too!

And this is how my life turns out to be. This, is my life. There were ups and downs, love and hatred, evil and kindness, but we are all able to change for the better for each other.

Then I turned to Lexi, "Baby, mommy and daddy will always be by your side! We love you!"

Lexi chuckled happily and said, "Happy Family!" tears formed in my eyes and I nodded, "Yes, happy family!"

(EXTRA: 3 months later after our wedding, I started to feel a little discomfort in my abdomen. Lance brought me to the hospital and we found that I was pregnant! Lance was excited and asked the doctor if the child is a boy or girl. Turns out, my baby is a boy! Lexi is going to have a brother soon!

Lance kissed my cheeks happily and he said, "I'm going to make sure he never hurts or break a woman's heart when he grows up."

I rolled my eyes and said, "Of course, if he turns out like the old you, I'm going to puke blood." )

And this, is the story of my life.

The End